

WR – Chapter 309-311: Crossing over myths

TLN: This is no joke! Thanks for the support! 😊

Sponsored Chapters

I -Kuromiya Haine-and the group are still in the middle of saving Mother Earth Mantle.

Or more like, it was supposed to be a simple mission where once we manage to do it once, it will be over, but because that once doesn't happen at all, we are facing a long trek.

“...”

“.....”

“.....”

Yorishiro and Shiva, who are together with me in this mission, were silent.

This situation where, no matter how many times we try, there's no progress. Even our hearts were exhausted.

This place is the danger zone that no one steps into, the Nameless Desert.

Inside the black hole that has been placed at the depths of this desert, Mantle is sealed, or so we think. In terms of probability, it could be that even her soul has been crushed by the gravity of the black hole, or maybe she was thrown into a different world from the warped space created there. Those possibilities are present as well.

We are betting on the possibility that Mantle can return to this world.

And so, by using the only element that can go against the dark element, we are trying to shoot through the core of the Black Hole, but...how many times has it been already?

A hundred? A thousand?

Yorishiro was shooting the light divine power and Shiva and I were doing the support to make it so that it hits the target, but it isn't going well at all.

In the first place, the more compressed the core is, the higher the gravity, is how the Black Hole works. That's why the size of the core is one hundredth the size of a grain of sand.

Just that one point makes it close to impossible to shoot at it, and yet, because the surroundings of the Black Hole don't even allow the reflection of light, we don't know exactly where the core is.

Even with the accuracy of Shiva who has mastered the wind gun technique, we can't do anything.

"Ah geez, another failure." (Yorishiro)

After thousands of test fires turning out in fruitless effort, Yorishiro lets out a sigh as if she was already tired of this.

"My whole body is sticky with sweat and sand... Hey, how about we move to the oasis and have a break? I want to dip in water and get refreshed-desu wa." (Yorishiro)

"Again?! Didn't we have a break just a few moments ago?!" (Shiva)

Due to piling failure after failure, everyone's heart was in shambles and were irritable.

The normally bad relationship of Shiva and Yorishiro was even worse right now.

"The body of a woman is delicate. We are in such a harsh environment, and that's exactly why there's the need to take the proper care! Ah geez! Who was the one that left the Black Hole in such a damn hot desert?!" (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro is snapping in a way different from usual?!

This is proof that she is being quite mentally cornered.

"In the first place, Shiva! If you weren't here, Haine-san and I would be all alone and we would be able to bathe in the water and go kyakyafufu! But thanks

to you, it has been divided into male and female! You are in the way! Why are you here?!" (Yorishiro)

"You people told me to come together! I as well don't want to see your naked body anyways! If it is mixed bathing, I would prefer doing it with Juo!!" (Shiva)

No good! Because of the heat, the two are getting irritated?!

We didn't want to make our time here pointless, so we have endured until now, but we have to put an end to this soon!

The rescue of Mantle is impossible, we should give up.

The problem of the Demon Lords can't be put aside, so we can't waste anymore time.

It would be best to return as soon as possible and prepare to go against the Demon Lords.

Was our choice of saving Mantle mistaken from the very beginning?

(Hmph, those are bad faces you got there, you people.)

"Everyone is doing their best in trying to save Mantle, so it can't be helped that they are tired."

Huh?!

In this Nameless Desert where there shouldn't be anyone but us, we heard voices.

We turned around to see what it was, and there, two monsters were lined up.

"Phalaris! And also...!" (Haine)

I think I have seen him before. That humanoid water living being kind of impression this monster gives off...Water Demon, Mephistopheles.

Isn't that the body Coacervate used in the surface world?!

Then the reason it is here now must mean...!

"Coacervate and Nova huh!" (Haine)

Within the six Gods of Creation, they were the central figures against the humans. Why are they here?!

“...Then, I will be having you see your last moments here.” (Coacervate)

(Gaaah!! Unhand me, unhand mee!!)

Inside the hand of Mephistopheles, there’s a single lizard struggling.

The soul voice coming from that lizard is without doubt that of Coacervate.

There’s two Coacervates?

What is the meaning of this?!

“The polluted me, that abyss that is spreading in front of us is the most fitting as your grave.” (Coacervatwo)

(D-Don’t tell me, you bastard...! Stop it! Why are you doing such a horrible thing?! I am you, you know?!) (Coacervate)

“You who refused your bond with humans are already not a God. And so, you don’t share the same title as Water God. Evil spirits are supposed to be exorcised.” (Coacervatwo)

(STOOOOP!!) (Coacervate)

Without caring about the lizard’s desperate struggle, Mephistopheles positioned in pitching form and threw the lizard...directly at the Black Hole that absorbs everything.

(Ugyaaaaa!!!)

“Now, Inflation! Quasar! At the place where my polluted self is being crushed, there’s the core of the Black Hole!!” (Coacervatwo)

Ah! I see!!

A Black Hole doesn’t allow light to reflect, but a soul is different. If it is to follow its destination, even we can follow it outside the Black Hole.

The only way to investigate the inside of the Black Hole!

“Shiva! Take position! There’s only one chance!!” (Haine)

“Kugh, what’s with this development!!” (Shiva)

Shiva is confused, but I am as well, you know.

But there’s no way I can let this chance slip by, so we both line up the wind

and gravity lenses.

(The polluted Coacervate has divided recently, so he is weakened! He doesn't have the strength to cling onto the Schwarzschild radius! In other words, his soul will surely be crushed by the center of the Black Hole!) (Nova)

Even Nova gave out advise!

What in the world is happening?!

"Aim for that moment and... [Holy Light Line]!!" (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro shoots a light beam.

This passed through the lens of Shiva and I, and with the angling of Shiva, it flies at the place where lizard Coacervate's soul was crushed.

It entered the Black Hole and...

.....

GWOOOOON!

"Kyaaaaaa!!" (Yorishiro)

"Did we do it?!" (Shiva)

The Black Hole was destroyed.

The core has been erased by the light divine power and all the light caught in the Schwarzschild radius was released all at once, dispersing everywhere.

It was an overwhelming explosion.

If this wasn't the Nameless Desert where there's nothing, this could have destroyed a town.

By releasing all our God power, we were able to protect our body, but the gathered air from the gravity expanded heavily and created a big blast of wind.

At that moment...

"...Ouch!"

A big somewhat fluorescent woman came flying together with the blast. Her butt falls grandly onto the sand.

“Isn’t that Mantle’s fairy?!” (Haine)

The temporary body of Mantle that she created to act in the surface world.

She has returned!

“Ouch ouch ouch... Eh? Why is everyone all gathered here?” (Mantle)

“““““Huh?““““

Being told this, we noticed once again the six gathered here.

Dark God Entropy, Light Goddess Inflation, Wind God Quasar, Fire God Nova, Water God Coacervate, and the Mother Earth Mantle that came flying just now.

This is something that I didn’t expect at all but, could this be...the first time after 1,600 years that all six Gods of Creation have gathered?!

- 310: Six Gods reunite

To think something like this would happen.

The six Gods that created this world have reunited at one place.

This is the Nameless Desert. Unless you are feeling suicidal, no one would step into it. That’s why this meeting of Gods had no fear of having interlopers.

“.....First of all, everyone, it has been a while.” (Haine)

Not knowing what to say, I did my best to give an opening greeting.

“You say that, but I have been meeting Haine-san frequently though.”
(Yorishiro)

“In the sense that these members are reunited. This is the first time since the Genesis Era.” (Shiva)

(That’s because a goody-two-shoes God has been sealed for 1,600 years!)
(Nova)

“But now Entropy-san has come back and the friendship of the six Gods has also been revived. Isn’t that a great thing?” (Coacervate)

“Uhm, about that... Why is everyone gathered?” (Mantle)

.....

Every single one of them were speaking their minds out. I honestly don't think I will be able to put these people in order.

In the first place, these Gods -including me-were the ones who created this world.

Creating space and time, in order to fill that space, air, water, and earth were created, and with fire, everything was melded together.

The ones who did this were us Gods.

Right after, because of a difference in opinions, we were divided in two sides and fought each other. One side was me Entropy, and all the others were on the other side.

I was defeated in the battle of Gods and the winners sealed me.

And so, after 1,600 years passed, the seal was broken and I incarnated as the human Kuromiya Haine.

Now, we are here.

The other five Gods were apparently doing whatever they pleased in my absence.

Once I returned, as chances came by, I got to know of their deeds from hearsay, and there were times when I would be angry or impressed by them.

But to think that there would be a time when we would all gather.

Even if we had moments where we would see each other, the Gods don't get along by nature, so I thought it would be completely impossible for everyone to gather when called...

"Uhm...by the way, what did you guys come here to do?" (Haine)

I didn't know what to talk about, so I move the conversation to the cow and fishman that suddenly appeared.

It would be inconvenient not to have a body when acting in the surface world, so we Gods prepared a body when we descended.

I -Entropy-, Inflation, and Quasar had incarnated as normal humans. We are acting in the world of humans with the standing of humans.

But these other two Gods are different.

Nova incarnated into the Fire Cow Phalaris; Water God Coacervate into the Water Demon Mephistopheles; both monster bodies.

That's why their looks are different from the rest and, even if we were to go back to why they incarnated as monsters, their way of thinking is simply too different from mine.

We are in such an antagonistic relationship, and yet...

(What we came here to do, you say?! ...Hmph, that goes the same for you people. What are you playing around here for?!) (Nova)

Is what the cow Nova says as he bursts right at the beginning of our discussion.

(The goody-two-shoes that claimed about protecting the humans were you people in the first place!! And yet, you don't do as you say, and are spacing out at such a remote place. In the time you weren't present, do you not know how much distress the cities of the humans faced?!) (Nova)

Eh?

"Now now, don't be so angry. Entropy-san and the others were also doing their best." (Coacervate)

And the fishman tries to calm down the cow.

"No, maybe I should call you Haine-san right now. At any rate, in order to gather the God Heroes to go against the Demon Lords, they were challenging the harsh enterprise of bringing back Mantle-san that had disappeared into the depths of the Black Hole. I, Coacervate, am aware of their hard work."

(Coacervate)

.....Or more like...

"...Uhm, Coacervate-san?" (Haine)

"Indeed, it is I Coacervate. I have not met Haine-san since our quarrel at the Water capital." (Coacervate)

I unintentionally asked in a questioning tone at the end but, is it really

Coacervate?

The Coacervate I know is a vacillating and underhanded guy that loves doing things people hate; that kind of terrible guy though?

It has been a while since we have met, and even when his incarnated body is that of a monster, it somehow gives out a divine feeling...

“Uhm...that body, if I remember correctly, that’s the one I destroyed before...” (Haine)

“Yes. This body was destroyed by Haine-san and I remade it, Mephistopheles MkII. But there have been a change of ways, and now, rather than Water Demon, it is Water Saint.” (Coacervate)

“W-Water Saint?!” (Haine)

“No, please don’t misunderstand. It is not as if I am calling myself a saint out of conceit.” (Coacervate)

The fishman began to justify.

“It is actually the contrary. In the past, I called myself a God, and yet, because of the underhanded ways I employed that were far from this title, I have caused trouble to the people. Thinking of redeeming myself and to separate from my past self, I had this body shoulder the title of ‘Saint’. The title of Water Saint has the objective of becoming what’s close to what humans think of as Saint, and to actually become one!!” (Coacervate)

The fishman seems to be getting heated up as he speaks.

I was actually surprised by the honesty I could feel from that speech.

What’s with this Water God? He has changed way too much from the last time I met him. What happened in the time I haven’t seen him?!

“Oi, could this possible be...!” (Shiva)

And Shiva who was watching this seems to have an idea of this.

(Yeah, in the past when we beat this guy up, something similar to this happened.) (Nova)

It looks like Nova also knows something.

Or more like, this guy appeared together with Coacervate, so there's no doubt he knows the answer itself.

And so, from then on, we were told by the Fire and Water Gods about what happened while we were saving Mantle.

- 311: God's Conference – Complete version

"Distillation." (Haine)

Something like that can happen?

In other words, the Water God, when heated to a certain extent, he evaporates and becomes steam.

By doing this, the many contaminated parts get separated?

"Coacervate is the God that is the most easily affected by the dirt of the humans and world." (Yorishiro)

Inflation speaks.

"It is because water washes away all filth that the impurities stay inside of it. Those impurities warp the personality and cause tons of pain to their surroundings. When creating the world, quite the amount of impurities were born, and he swallowed them all after all. He had been quite contaminated from the beginning." (Yorishiro)

That's why it would have been impossible for me to know of the clean part of him since I was sealed right after the Creation huh.

No matter what it is, everything creates filth when they are born or die.

"But Coacervate being in an evaporated state is quite rare. Isn't this the second time this has happened since the 1,600 years after the Genesis era?" (Yorishiro)

What? Only two?

In that case, Coacervate has only been in this state once in the time I was sealed?

(That was something that happened not long after our Churches were made.)

(Nova)

And the cow speaks.

In other words, it was at the time when human civilization was beginning.

(At that time, we were stealing away our believers and fighting each other. At that time, my Fire Church and Quasar's Wind Church were having an all-out battle.) (Nova)

"And in all that, Coacervate had sent an oracle to the Water Church. They made a surprise attack to the Fire and Wind Church while we were in a battle. The surprise attack worked and my Wind army was practically wiped out."

(Shiva)

Quasar grinds his teeth in anguish as he remembered those times.

Truly a Coacervate-like way of doing things.

"At that time, I had incarnated as the Wind Founder, but since I was taking command of the army, I died along with many of my troops. Being liberated from my flesh, I returned to being Quasar. Pissed off, I challenged Coacervate to battle." (Quasar)

(I was also pissed off, so I cooperated. With the wind increasing the strength of my flames, we boiled him continuously. He was evaporated, and this guy was came out.) (Nova)

"I am truly in debt for that time." (Coacervate)

Coacervate lowers his head.

"Now that I think about it, this served as a trigger for a big leap in the human civilization." (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro points out.

"The distilled Coacervate did his very best to become a guardian working for the sake of humans and the Water Church developed heavily. The reason why the Water Church has a relatively free way of thinking that is not caught in the doctrine of the Church is most likely because of this." (Yorishiro)

"But well, after a hundred years, I was contaminated again and absorbed into

the polluted Coacervate though." (Coacervate)

(True.) (Nova)

The Gods were talking about the past with nostalgia.

Hearing this story, I closed my eyes for a moment and decided.

"Let's burn this guy again after a hundred years!!" (Haine)

No, really.

The Coacervate that plays around with humans is a big problem for the world.

If we can deal with that at a regular basis, there's no reason not to.

"True. In time, I will once again be contaminated and will cause trouble to my beloved humans and my brethren Gods. If it is in order to avoid this, I am more than willing to burn in the flames of hell. Actually, that's what I want!!"
(Coacervate)

The fresh water God that had been separated from his filth was speaking in an admirable manner and made me surprised.

"No, about that...!" (Shiva)

"It is easier said than done!" (Yorishiro)

Shiva and Yorishiro warn.

I thought it was a great proposal though?

"...Originally, when my body is evaporated, it will normally return to my God core. That's why, no matter how much I get evaporated, if it returns to a contaminated core, I will simply return to being the polluted Coacervate."
(Coacervate)

"Eh? Then why were you able to split into filth and distilled this time and in the past?" (Haine)

(Because he had a place that could become his new core.) (Nova)

"A place that could become his new core?" (Haine)

(The human prayers.) (Nova)

The cow is dragging the explanation.

(Humans pray to their God. Within those prayers, in order to direct their prayers to a God they have not seen, they create a figure of their own. The figure that is shaped within the hearts of humans, when the steam converges into it, the distilled Coacervate is born.) (Nova)

“That means the prayers towards Gods possesses quite the power if they are able to do a feat like that. Several hundreds of years ago, at the time when the Churches were just being made, the prayers were abundant to the point that it could serve as the core to his body.” (Shiva)

“And this time around, my hero Celestis didn’t lose to the doubts and despair, and continued loving me as her God, so that love had gathered my vaporized self. I am truly fortunate to have a hero like that.” (Coacervate)

Everyone was shocked.

But I see. Simply burning Coacervate and having him evaporate is not enough huh.

It is not only the Gods that affect humans, humans also affect Gods. I feel like this is a good example of that.

“Whether it was a coincidence or an inevitability, I was able to separate from my polluted self and become distilled. Now that I am here, I will fulfill my original duty as a God and will cooperate with everyone to protect the humans and the world.” (Coacervate)

“O-Okay.” (Shiva)

(Ah, yes.) (Nova)

“Well, isn’t it fine?” (Haine)

“It is disgusting-desu wa.” (Yorishiro)

Only Yorishiro didn’t hide her opinion.

But the most difficult one to convince, Coacervate, has joined forces with us. This is good news.

...No, we did nothing to contribute to this. Karen-san, Celestis-san, and the others were the ones that did their best in order to create this situation where Coacervate has been reformed.

As I thought, humans are not solely being protected by Gods, they protect themselves and make the world better.

I help those girls out as the Dark God Entropy, and as Kuromiya Haine, I will struggle together with them.

The explanation for why Coacervate ended up this way had become an explanation of what happened outside, and we have now confirmed that Mirack and Celestis have successfully become God Heroes.

With the transformation of the two that we thought would be the hardest to make reality, having all five elemental heroes into God Heroes is looking more possible now!

“Karen-san has already become a God Hero, so there’s only two left.” (Haine)

Leaving aside the Wind that is trustworthy, the only one left would be...

The gaze of the five Gods were directed at the remaining God.

“Hiiih! What is it?!” (Mantle)

Directed at Mantle who was cowering at the side.

WR – Chapter 312-313: Return of Mother Earth

Sponsored Chapters

- 312: Return of Mother Earth

“This girl...she hasn’t been speaking for a while now.” (Coacervate)

(I was about to forget she was even here.) (Nova)

“This is her we are talking about. She was probably going to say ‘I think so as well!’ after we have arrived at a decision.” (Yorishiro)

“Truly an easily pressured woman!” (Shiva)

The one they were speaking about in whatever way they pleased was Mother Earth Mantle, one of the four Base Element Gods.

In the first place, the very reason why we are in the middle of the desert is because of this person.

We went through a lot of trouble bringing her back from the Black Hole.

This might have been the most trouble I have had since incarnating as Kuromiya Haine. Leaving aside the irony that the most trouble I have had was to undo my own ability.

At any rate, it seems like Mantle was really caught in the Schwarzschild radius. I am glad.

She was released at the same time as the Black Hole was destroyed.

‘Welcome back, Mantle’, is it okay for me to say that?

In the first place, I was the one who threw her into the Black Hole. If I were to

welcome her with a smile, just how would she feel?

Now that she has returned, will we get a repeat of what happened before?

“Oi, what’s the matter Haine? Get to business quickly.” (Shiva)

Shiva hurried me, but my legs were heavy.

“When actually facing her, I remembered a lot of things of the past. So I was wondering what I should say to her first...” (Haine)

(What are you pulling out after so late in the game?! Every single one of us here are filled with past grudges!) (Nova)

“It is truly a state where we would want to have the head of the other.”
(Shiva)

“If it is okay, I can talk things out with Mantle-san.” (Coacervate)

“““Not now.”””

If Coacervate, the very definition of radical change, were to be the first to speak, it would simply confuse Mantle who had just returned to this world.

We should be a bit more careful here and check for her reaction!

Deciding this, I resolve myself when...

“...”

Yorishiro silently approached Mantle.

Of course, her past with Mantle is not shallow either.

Mantle is currently in the temporary body of a Fairy, and she was facing Yorishiro with that body withholding the silence.

“...Ah, could you be Inflation?” (Mantle)

As expected of a God, Mantle noticed the identity of the God soul that was deep inside Yorishiro.

As if answering this, Yorishiro stretches out her hand and...slaps Mantle.

“““(GYAAAAAA!!)”””

Even us as spectators were letting out big screams.

Moreover, Yorishiro didn't stop at one time, she went for two, three, and more as she hits the head of Mantle's fairy.

"[Holy Light Slap] [Holy Light Slap] [Holy Light Slap] [Holy Light Slap]!"
(Yorishiro)

"Hyaaa~, it hurts. Please stop it, Inflation-san!" (Mantle)

Gyaaaa!!

What are you doing?! What are you doing, Yorishiro-san?!

Even going as far as putting light divine power on your palms, isn't that to certainly provide damage to Mantle?!

I hurriedly hold Yorishiro to stop her.

Shiva grabs the hand that was about to be brought down, Coacervate goes in between the both of them to cover for Mantle, and Nova was flustered and moving around aimlessly in his cow body.

"What are you doing?! What are you doing, Yorishiro-san?! Mantle finally returned, and we were thinking about getting along from now on, and yet, this treatment is way too much!" (Haine)

"It is the contrary, Haine-san. This is the proper education for Mantle."
(Yorishiro)

Education?

"You should know as well. This Mantle may look like a light woman that gets pressured easily, but deep down, she is extremely dangerous." (Yorishiro)

"Easily pressured Mantle. Yes-woman Mantle. Yes-woMantle!" (Coacervate)
(You, shut up for a moment.) (Nova)

We ignore Coacervate who had a radical change in character.

The danger deep inside of Mantle huh.

It is true. Leaving aside Coacervate and Nova who had clear animosity towards humans, the reason why it reached a catastrophe like having only Mantle be erased by the Black Hole was because of this.

Within the four Base Elements, she was one that thought decently of humans.

For the sake of humans, for the sake of their happiness; aiming for these, the conclusion she reached was to capture the humans in trees and turn them practically into plants, estranged from any distress or pain.

...

This was not something done out of malice, but from pure good will.

I couldn't reach a compromise with Mantle, and in the end, could only erase her into the Black Hole.

That has connected to the pretty precipitous situation of now.

"It looks like everyone is misunderstanding here. From within the four Base Elements, Mantle is the scariest one. It is not on the realm of power, specialty, or anything like that. It is her very way of thinking." (Yorishiro)

Yes, that's exactly right.

"That's why I was the most cautious about her from all the four Base Elements. I observed whether she would pull something, and if she were to, I would hit her. Because that's the best way to stop her from going wild after all!" (Yorishiro)

"Fueeee?! I am sorryyyy!" (Mantle)

Due to Yorishiro's thrashing, Mantle was completely meek now.

Could it be...the reason why Mantle is easily pressured is because Inflation had disciplined her in this way?

Because if Mantle were to move on her own will, it would definitely surpass boundaries and cause trouble, so the Light Goddess disciplined her and made it so that she would only act on the will of others?

"I took 1,600 years keeping Mantle in check, and yet, with Haine-san getting involved once, that lid was taken off and that big calamity occurred. You spoil her too much!" (Yorishiro)

"S-Sorryyyy!!" (Haine)

(What's with this scene as if a couple were fighting over the education of their

child?) (Nova)

The others didn't participate and were simply watching over this.

If they were to join in thoughtlessly, sparks might fly their way after all.

"At any rate, if you are going to be involved with this girl, you will need to tread with utmost care. If you are to mess up even for a bit, keep in mind that I will be sending you to the other side of the frontier." (Yorishiro)

Lower your guard a bit and it will cost you your life?!

Maybe it would have been better not to bring her back?!

"Uhm, uhm, in the end, why was I brought here?" (Mantle)

While we were flustered, Mantle herself was unable to keep up with what was going on.

- 313: The God that protects the world

But it can't be helped now that she has returned.

We will have Mantle turn Sasae-chan into the Earth God Hero!!

"I see... Demon Lord-sans and God Hero-sans huh." (Mantle)

We first tell her the many things that happened while she was inside the Black Hole.

The monsters that Mantle and the other four Base Elements created, those monsters have surpassed the will of Gods and have obtained their own will, and have begun to act on their own accord.

Even Mantle would be shocked by this.

"Things have turned problematic, it seems." (Mantle)

Or not.

Now that I think about it, it even looks like she forgot about the fact that she had fought me due to the matter with Grandma Wood. Are even Demon Lords a trivial matter when you are a God?

"So, in order to defeat those Demon Lord-sans, you want to grant power to

the hero-sans, right?” (Mantle)

“That’s right! That’s right! I am glad to see that you understand fast!” (Haine)

Because of previous events, providing information to Mantle feels like treading on thin ice.

If the information is not enough, it won’t get through properly, but if we were to give too much, it might create misunderstandings and she might get out of control again.

Today we have Yorishiro with her eyes shining, so it makes me even more nervous.

“Fight-o! Haine-san!” (Coacervate)

And the cheers of Coacervate are annoying!

When he was polluted he was obviously annoying, but his distilled self is annoying as well!

“Understood! I will cooperate as well!” (Mantle)

Mantle announced loudly.

“Quasar-san, Nova-san, and Coacervate-san are also cooperating, so I will be cooperating as well!!” (Mantle)

This woman bended to group pressure.

“She just went with the flow.” (She went with the flow.) “Indeed she did.”

Everyone’s opinion were the same.

“It is fine this way.” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro says calmly.

“When this girl moves on her own will, it definitely brings catastrophe. That’s why her being servile is good enough. It is the best way to reduce the damage.” (Yorishiro)

“No! That’s not true!” (Mantle)

Mantle responds innocently without a moment’s delay.

“This time for sure I will become a God that is of use to the human-sans! I

understood! Even I can guide the human-sans to happiness if I try! I understood after being praised by Entropy-san!" (Mantle)

“““(...)”””

Strategy meeting!

I have Yorishiro look after Mantle and gathered everyone else.

“Oi! I thought she had completely forgotten about the incident before, but she is still dragging it in a strange way!” (Haine)

(Moreover, it is serving as motivation! What do we do?! Excessive motivation will definitely lead to getting out of control!” (Nova)

“There’s already past record of this after all. Expecting different results with the same circumstances and method would be the epitome of stupidity.” (Shiva)

Every single one of them were giving out opinions that brought anxiety.

“Oi, Coacervate! You used Mantle before to keep me under surveillance, right?! Can’t you control her with that experience?!” (Haine)

“That was the act of my past self. Holding the hearts of others and controlling them is an unforgivable act that goes against my standards.” (Coacervate)

(And this guy has turned into a saint in such a convenient timing!) (Nova)

This is not good.

We can’t find any effective methods as uneasiness keeps rising!

“Isn’t that fine?” (Yorishiro)

At that moment, Yorishiro says this as she pats the head of Mantle.

“No matter the form, she is trying to help out someone else in such a spontaneous manner. This is something that hasn’t happened before —from what I know, at least.” (Yorishiro)

“Aw aw~” (Mantle)

The patting on her head soon became stroking.

“It is not only Mantle. Quasar, Nova, and Coacervate; by the time we noticed,

their positions have changed quite a lot from the past. I wonder whose influence it was. Was it Haine-san, or maybe the living beings called humans.” (Yorishiro)

(Y-Y-You idiot!!) (Nova)

Nova is the one to react instantly.

(I ain’t taking the influence of no one! The strongest existence that are Gods take influence from no one! Can’t say the same for the all-looks Quasar and the Coacervate that comes with a purification feature though!) (Nova)

Yorishiro was still stroking the head of Mantle.

“Just like how they were, Mantle might have some sort of change showing in her as well. In order to confirm this, Haine-san, I will be asking you to be the overseer of this.” (Yorishiro)

“Huh?!” (Haine)

Why me?!

“Because your words gave this decisiveness to Mantle after all. I will have you take responsibility. No matter the case, there’s no way we can leave a dangerous girl like her going around freely without surveillance.” (Yorishiro)

“Wouldn’t more eyes be better?!” (Haine)

I tried to at least make it so I am not the only one pushed this.

“You do have a point, but we have stayed too long in the Nameless Desert in order to bring her back. I have to return to Apollon City soon. I feel like my work has accumulate quite a bit.” (Yorishiro)

A valid excuse!

“Right. I also have a previous appointment with Juo of checking out the marriage ceremony hall after all.” (Shiva)

(There’s apparently watermelon for tomorrow!) (Nova)

“I have to work as soon as possible in helping for the sake of humanity!” (Coacervate)

You people are enjoying the world to your fullest it seems!

What were we fighting about in the Genesis era?!

“And so, I will be leaving the care of Mantle to Haine-san who seems to be the freest one-desu wa. Please see that this girl will properly make the earth hero-san into a God Hero.” (Yorishiro)

“I can finally return to the Wind capital huh.” (I will return to the Fire capital too.) “I will go around the world and bring smiles to the unfortunate ones!”

Is what they said as they began to leave.

Leaving only me and Mantle’s Fairy.

“Watch me, Entropy-san! This time for sure, I will make all the people happy!”
(Mantle)

Meeting them all in one place after 1,600 years, I once again felt it.

As I thought, I hate these guys!!

WR – Chapter 314-316: Disappearance of blessing

Right before we separated at the Nameless Desert, there was a meaningful conversation.

“There’s something I would like to entrust you with.” (Yorishiro)

“Huh?” (Haine)

Yorishiro who was riding on the back of Phalaris and was about to fly away seems to have remembered something and returned to where we were.

“Coacervate told me an unexpected problem regarding God Heroes. It may be improvised, but I thought of a plan to better it.” (Yorishiro)

Is what she said as she presents me something from her palm.

It was a sparkling gem.

“Wow, it looks as if it would sell highly!” (Haine)

“I wonder if it is okay for a God to have an evaluation like that when looking at gems at a glance though... It is a diamond. When you have the chance to meet with Karen-san, can you please give it to her?” (Yorishiro)

Saying this, she gives me the transparent shining gem.

(I will also be giving it to you, a ruby.) (Nova)

“And from me, an aquamarine.” (Coacervate)

I receive them from Nova and Coacervate as well, and then, they left.

Yorishiro flew away on Phalaris’ back. Mephistopheles probably has that kind of ability too, by the time I noticed, he had already disappeared.

The ones remaining were me and the Fairy of Mantle.

“They really pushed it all to me!” (Haine)

It is true that I am affiliated to the Light Church and I don’t have a concrete post, but to think that this would make me look like I have nothing to do...

Doesn’t that in turn mean that they see me as a convenient guy that would do anything?!

This is a bad turn of events.

When I return to the Light capital, I must find a better post.

But before that...

I have to face the big problem in front of me.

“Yes? What is it?” (Mantle)

The big woman that surpasses me in height by a lot, in other words, Mantle.

Can’t stay spaced out all the time, so I decided on leaving the Nameless Desert as well.

“Now then, where should I go?” (Haine)

It would normally be the Light capital, but I currently have a problematic companion —Mother Earth, Mantle.

Thinking about the reason we brought her back, it would probably be better to go directly there in order to fulfill it.

Ishtar Blaze.

In order to make the earth hero, Gonbee Sasae-chan, there into an Earth God Hero.

And so, I have arrived at the Earth capital, Ishtar Blaze.

Since it was quite close to the Nameless Desert, we could easily come here. This is my second time here.

When I came here before and now, it had quite the different impression.

The biggest reason is because the giant tree at the center of the city, Grandma Wood, is gone now.

The giant trunk that felt as if it were supporting the heavens and the branches that covered the sky are now gone, and this made the sky look bigger than normal.

“We still haven’t gotten used to it and are still confused, you know.”

A member affiliated to the Earth Church met me at the outside of Ishtar Blaze and was guiding me.

Due to my achievements at the previous incident, I have already become a known face and my treatment is good.

“After the hero-samas defeated Great Pillar-sama, the stump was left for a while. But that suddenly disappeared one day, you see. So we all thought this: ‘Great Pillar-sama is completely gone now huh.’”

Great Pillar-sama refers to the Earth Mother Monster, Grandma Wood.

It gave birth to the earth element monsters, Golems, from its giant body, and were unusual monsters that followed the orders of humans.

Golems surpassed humans by a lot in frame and power, so they were priceless treasures in manual labour. In the past, a world where monsters and humans coexisted was made a reality in Ishtar Blaze.

No, that still continues on even today.

Grandma Wood is gone now, but the Golems that have already been born still have several remaining.

Since the source has been cut off now, they are destined to slowly wittle in numbers and fade away, but even so, the remaining Golems are still working for a variety of things under the orders of the humans.

I was able to look at all this while the staff member-san guided me by my side.

This picture that will someday disappear, it felt as if it was more fulfilling than the times when Grandma Wood still existed.

“...So, what happened after Grandm— I mean, Great Pillar-sama

disappeared?" (Haine)

"A big hole was left. Great Pillar-sama was big, so the roots holding it together were also gigantic. We were worrying that this might cause a ground sinking, but nothing happened."

When Grandma Wood disappeared, the Earth Demon Lord was probably born.

In a sense, isn't that incredibly good luck?

The Demon Lord that is supposed to eradicate all humans had been born in the middle of a big city, and yet, it left without doing any destruction.

Uriel is a lot more whimsical than the other Demon Lords, so who knows what he was thinking when he didn't put a hand on the humans though.

At any rate, I felt relieved after this late about the safety of Ishtar Blaze.

"Now then, we will soon be there."

The staff member-san said.

"The earth hero, Sasae-sama, is currently in the Earth Church's training grounds devoting herself to training. When she learns that you have come, she will most likely be quite overjoyed."

That's right, the reason I came here was to meet Sasae-chan.

Just as the guide said, as we proceeded in this field, I could see a giant female-shaped Golem that was as big as the towering walls and roof.

There's no doubt that's the new technique Sasae-chan used at the heroes match.

That's the handmade Golem of Sasae-chan that was made solely from the divine power of Sasae-chan.

The Goddess Golem —had been cut down to pieces in an instant.

Even from afar, I could confirm that.

Cut to pieces by the scythe of lemon Yoneko-san.

“Gyoeeeeee!! Dasu!!”

When I arrived at the training grounds of the Earth Church, Sasae-chan was blown away along with the cut to pieces Golem.

And then, she fell to the ground and bounced twice.

Seeing this, a big sigh was let out somewhere.

“Sasae, if Yoneko hadn’t given up at the Wind capital, ya would have lost.”
(Oba-san)

Is what the Earth Founder-san said. She is also the blood-related grandma of Sasae-chan.

With her overseeing the battle of the current and previous heroes, Sasae-chan was in the middle of training with her senior Yoneko-san.

Well, even if I were to call it training, it is totally just real combat though.

“Not yet-dasu! Yoneko-oneechan! I request one more match-dasu!!” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan stabbed her personal divine tool Sita to the ground and pours divine power.

She is trying to make another Goddess Golem but...

“Not only are ye slow, yer full of openings~.” (Yoneko)

Yoneko-san closes in on her prey with the speed of a cat and was immediately at Sasae-chan’s vicinity.

“Awawawawa?!”

Sasae-chan was unable to stop pouring divine power to the ground and tried to defend with her big scythe, but due to the small size of Yoneko-san’s divine tool being far superior in maneuverability, in the end, after three exchanges, Sasae-chan was unable to cope with her anymore and ended up with her having the scythe of Yoneko-san placed on her neck.

“Sasae-chan, ya really should take a break.” (Yoneko)

Yoneko-san said in a tired tone.

“Ain’t ya head stuffed up because of yer exhaustion? That be why ya do such

mess ups like trying ta do a wide open attack like Golem tempering right in front of yer opponent.” (Yoneko)

“It is just as Yoneko says-sa ne. Rest for a bit and cool down yer head. Also, eat lunch.” (Oba-san)

I can’t tell if these elderly are strict or kind.

“I thoroughly refuse-dasu!” (Sasae)

But Sasae-chan was stubborn.

Well, Sasae-chan being stubborn is an usual thing though.

“Quickening the refining speed of Golem creation be one of the tasks ta be done-dasu! If I be prompted by Yoneko-oneechan’s dangerous look, mah sense of danger might increase-dasu! Please, one more round!” (Sasae)

“...Sasae-chan, ya thinking of me as some kind of ogre?” (Yoneko)

Just as Yoneko-san says this...

“...Oya, ain’t that Haine-niichan?” (Oba-san)

It looks like they finally noticed me spectating.

“Ah, true-dasu! Haine-niichan be visiting us-dasu!” (Sasae)

“Ara, he has seen an unsightly part of us~.” (Yoneko)

And it looks like Sasae-chan and Yoneko-san as well.

The divine power running through the divine tools was stopped, and they release their fighting stance.

“It been a while-dasu! Why ya visiting us today-dasu?! A souvenir-dasu ka?!” (Sasae)

Is what Sasae-chan says while she runs to me.

This girl that is the youngest within the heroes, at times like this, she shows the cuteness that fits her age and I can understand how Mirack would show a criminal-like face every now and then because of this.

Well, about my business... I can’t just speak out the truth without applying any filters, so I lie a bit.

“...I missed the big breasts of Yoneko-san?” (Haine)

“Ara, it be the natural course that if you put yer hands on the wife of another, ya will get pummeled by the husband, ya know~?” (Yoneko)

The husband of Yoneko-san is as big as a bear after all.

I am not good at this making up lies on the spot.

“...I missed the small breasts of Sasae-chan?” (Haine)

“Hello, this be the Scorched Earth Annihilation corps-dasu ka? There be a criminal here-dasu!” (Sasae)

Not this one either!

In the end, I ended up going with the ‘I came here just to check on the state of things’ which didn’t have any fun in it. Looks like ad-libbing jokes will be a difficult trek for me.

“Checkin’ the state of things huh. Well, we be in this current situation after all. It ain’t bad to keep the communications tight-sa ne.” (Oba-san)

“There’s things that be hard to communicate through wireless communication after all~. I am beginning to crave seeing the face of Kyouka-san, Sarasa-san, and Juo-san directly~.” (Yoneko)

Is what the two elderly said in understanding.

But within those, only Sasae-chan was making a grave expression.

“...From the wireless communications, it be said that there already be the appearance of Demon Lords at the places of Mirack-oneechan and Celestis-oneechan-dasu. There be no way of telling when our place will be falling into chaos-dasu. The one ta take arms first at that time be me Gonbee Sasae-dasu!” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan increased the strength in her arms holding the earth scythe.

“In order ta protect the city, I gotta get stronger than how I be now-dasu! Haine-onii-chan, ya being here might be destiny! Good time ta come, I want Oniichan to train me as well-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“Huh?” (Haine)

What's with this overflowing determination of Sasae-chan?

It was the same when she was in the middle of training but isn't she a bit too pumped up?

"That Sasae, she been like this all the time lately-sa ne. Being all gung-ho even though it ain't like her." (Oba-san)

The Founder Oba-san was worried about the state of the granddaughter.

"As I thought, meeting the Demon Lords at the Wind capital must have gotten to her. Their strength was not normal after all. Thinking how we be clashing blades with 'em one of these days, even I get weak-kneed~." (Yoneko)

True.

Even Karen-san, right after returning from the heroes match, had been on high-alert for a good while because she faced the pressure of the Demon Lords.

Sasae-chan who is the youngest one of the heroes, moreover, having the self-deprecating view of being lacking behind from the others, must be on even higher stress than them.

"Now then, Haine-oniichan! Let's quickly begin battle-dasu! I request enough drive that ya would accidentally cut me in two on the spur of the moment-dasu!" (Sasae)

Sasae-chan's breathing is rough.

Can't be helped.

In order to reduce the stress on her shoulders, I decided on keeping her company.

- 316: Unskilled task

"[Dark Matter, Set]" (Haine)

Damage +999,999,999,999,999,999,999.

Sasae-chan's Golem has been destroyed.

"Hogeeeeeh! Dasu?!" (Sasae)

Sasae-chan was once again blown away.

This was clearly going overboard.

“Oh my. I heard about it, but Onii-san is truly strong~.” (Yoneko)

“Blowing up Great Pillar-sama be practically Niichan’s sole achievement after all. I wouldn’t mind ya dealing with Sasae-chan while doing a handstand-sa.” (Oba-san)

“Wouldn’t mind it~!”

“Neechan, weak~~!”

At the sides of the Oba-san and Yoneko-san, the children of Yoneko-san had appeared.

They were using the defeat of Sasae-chan as side-dish while munching on a rice ball.

“Disgrace-dasu! My own weakness be heartbreaking-dasu!!” (Sasae)

She punched the ground with her fist and appeals her regret.

“Do yer best, Neechan.”

“If ya give up, that’s when it-be-over Neechan.”

The children cheer her up.

From the eyes of Sasae-chan, they are the children of her cousin Yoneko-san, so...what are they called again?

“But if there be a person so strong already, ain’t it okay to just leave him to defeat all the Demon Lords? I also want this situation to calm down and get a fourth child~.” (Yoneko)

“Weakling-dasu!! Yoneko-oneechan!!” (Sasae)

“Guhoo?!” (Yoneko)

Sasae-chan’s elbow attack hit cleanly onto the stomach of Yoneko-san?!

When you do things, you overdo it, Sasae-chan!!

“Why a hero be saying such weakling things like that?! Ain’t ya supposed to protect the world-dasu?! The ones ta protect the Earth Church and the Earth capital be the earth heroes-dasu! I ain’t letting anyone take that job away from

me-dasu yo!!" (Sasae)

"So cool, Neechan~."

"Don't lose, cool Nee~."

You are so heated up there, Sasae-chan.

I feel like doing something for the hard-working her.

Since I am having practice matches with her, let's give her some advices.

"Uhm, watching the fights of Sasae-chan, I have thought this. Could it be that even though you are a Golem user, you are trying to fight yourself as well?" (Haine)

"Dasu?" (Sasae)

Since the heroes match, Sasae-chan's battle style has changed completely.

Sasae-chan had been taught by that crafty Yorishiro about how to create Golems with her own divine power, and is now able to make Golems without the need of a Life Block.

A normal Golem requires a Life Block that the Earth Mother Monster created, but Sasae-chan who has mastered the earth divine power can create a humanoid lump of earth through alchemy.

In this situation where Grandma Wood is gone and the Life Blocks can't be replenished, it is still possible to use Golems for battle if you don't care for their destruction though...

"But that would create quite the burden for Sasae-chan, right?" (Haine)

To create a big Golem, there's the need for divine power comparable to that of its size. Also, in order to make it move like a human, there's the need for detailed controlling.

Just with that, the creation and use of Golems in battle should be incredibly exhausting mentally and physically, no doubt about it.

"On top of that, Sasae-chan is not only concentrating on controlling the Golem, but you yourself are also trying to fight." (Haine)

For example, showing as if the Golem is going to be punching from above but

instead it is Sasae-chan charging from below; or Sasae-chan and the Golem doing a pincer attack type of team attack.

“That’s right~!” (Yoneko)

Yoneko-san who was groaning in agony a moment ago from the surprise attack had recovered already.

“The Golem user heroes normally leave all the fighting to the Golems. Even the normal Golems that have Life Blocks required swift detailed instructions in order to use them in battle which needs quite the amount of concentration.” (Yoneko)

Even the Golem-hating Yoneko-san that is specialized in close combat is knowledgeable about the circumstances. As expected of a hero.

“That’s why Sasae-chan should concentrate on controlling the Golem only~. And yet, she tries to fight as well, so it becomes entangled between herself or the Golem, which slows the movement of one side. Because of those openings it creates, she has been losing all the time to me~.” (Yoneko)

The first time I saw it in the heroes match, I thought that a new ultimate technique was born. That means the Goddess Golem is far from being perfected yet huh.

If they were to fight, Yoneko-san with a lot more experience is better than Sasae-chan.

If she hadn’t given up on her own in the heroes match, Sasae-chan’s weaknesses would have been accurately exploited and she would have lost.

...That’s definitely not the wrong evaluation.

“Not bending my beliefs is mah hero way-dasu!!” (Sasae)

But Sasae-chan was stubborn.

“I pledged this-dasu! That I wouldn’t be using the Golems, I would become a hero that fights together with Golems! I want to become a hero that not only protects the people of the Earth Church, but also the Earth Golems-dasu!” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan...so that’s how you thought.

“Also, the Demon Lords that we be fighting now on are abnormal-dasu. If I leave it all to the Golems, I will never be able to defeat ‘em-dasu! For that sake, I and the Golems have to move like seasoned warriors! I have to do the best of what I can do-dasu!!” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan was thinking so far when she was pushing herself in her training...

I thought that she was a stupid girl that didn’t think much, but as expected, Sasae-chan is a hero!!

“She just be stubborn-sa ne.” (Oba-san)

Is what the Founder Oba-san said calmly.

“Being stubborn be like a trait of us Earth people-sa ne. That be because we been clinging onto the earth and been living by depending on what’s born from it. We have ta belief that the seeds we have buried will bear fruit no matter what. We can’t live in any other way.” (Oba-san)

Waiting for several days without any results, the intelligent ones would say ‘give up’, but they would stubbornly cover their ears and would wait for things that they themselves have no way on influencing completely.

They believe completely that it will bear fruit, so they continue to wait.

That’s how the people of Ishtar Blaze have lived for 1,600 years.

“Sasae probably inherited those traits of the Earth deeply into her. That may be why she be most fitting as the earth hero-sa ne.” (Oba-san)

I thought that she was going to say something harsh, but when I listen to the end, I could only hear it as a relative seeing Sasae-chan dearly.

I have been thinking about this for a while now but, isn’t this Oba-san really soft on her grandchild Sasae-chan?

WR – Chapter 317-318: Earth God Hero

- 317: Earth God Hero

“Now then, training resumes-dasu! Yoneko-nee-chan, in order to take the crown of strongest, please give me the chance to fight ya!!” (Sasae)

“Can’t be helped~. Now that it has come to this, I will have ya become the strongest as soon as possible, so we can defeat the Demon Lord and have my next child~.” (Yoneko)

The sharp noises of metal clashing once again reverberate in this battle of current and previous earth heroes.

But Sasae-chan couldn’t endure the fierce attacks of Yoneko-san even once.

All the fights ended in around fifty exchanges.

“Gyeeee! Dasu!!”

“Gyaaaaa!! Dasu!!”

“Once more! ...Ata! Dasu!”

That was simply her bullying herself. I don’t think this will grant her any progress.

But charging forward mindlessly might be the essence of the Earth people—their stubbornness.

“Hoeeeh, she is really doing her best, isn’t she!”

From the pocket of my clothes, a stretched out voice resounded.

That’s right. You might already know with the flow of things but, the one who spoke was Mantle who we saved at the Nameless Desert.

In the first place, she is indispensable for my objective here, so thinking of her going out of control at any moment, I would need to have her in my sight at all

times.

And yet, since coming to Ishtar Blaze, I thought that Mantle was not making her presence known at all, but now...

"Hngh, I can't see. Entropy-san, can I bring my face out a little more?"
(Mantle)

"Make sure not to be caught. Also, call me Haine now." (Haine)

Mantle was currently inside my pocket.

She has a small body; small enough to enter the pocket of a human.

Her outer appearance of being a naked beauty shining light pink still doesn't change, but her size has changed from the giant woman you would have to lift your head to see, into a palm-sized one.

This is a trait of the temporary bodies Mantle uses in the surface world.

Different from Yorishiro, Shiva, and I who incarnated to humans, and also from Nova and Coacervate in monster bodies.

Mantle's body is not that of a human or a monster. With her authority as an Earth Goddess, she can cut off a part of the lifeforce of the plants that are close to her ruling area and change it into a temporary body; that's a fairy.

Mantle once created a fairy from Grandma Wood. But now that Grandma Wood is gone, it was apparently hard to maintain that fairy for long. And so, she has created a new fairy which is her current body.

"...That body, if I remember correctly, it is proportionate to the plant that you use, right?" (Haine)

Mantle's new fairy was made from a completely normal tree.

The reason why Mantle's body was abnormally big in the past was because the source it came from was also the abnormally big Grandma Wood. When a normal tree is used as the source, it ends up as a cute little girl —a pocket-sized one.

Well, a fairy is a unique kind of body, so it helps since this is easy to hide from the people.

“My hero-san is truly a hardworking one, isn’t she!” (Mantle)

Mantle says in a pleased tone.

“Ah, there’s also the previous hero-san! Uuuh, I am scared of that person and am slightly no good with her! The current one is small and cute. She is great!” (Mantle)

A hero that scares the God...

“More importantly, the objective we came here for, please fulfill it properly.” (Haine)

I whisper to her in a voice that can’t be picked up by the surroundings.

With this, the several days we spend will finally bear fruit.

“Totally understood! This time for sure I will make the human-sans happy!!” (Mantle)

You don’t have to get so hyped up.

“Also, I like that little hero-san. She is small, cute, and on top of that, hardworking; not entering the eye of anyone aside from the ones watching directly. I feel like her and I share a lot of things! I sympathize!” (Mantle)

Really, tone it down a little please.

“I should just give that girl power, right?! That way, she can become a God Hero, right?! ...I can tell. That girl has received the teachings of Inflation-san and the preparations to receive a God have already been done! Then, there’s only the need to create a link from there! Easy-peasy!” (Mantle)

The fairy of Mantle jumps out from my pocket and flies directly towards Sasae-chan.

I decide on watching on this process of God Hero transformation with my own eyes.

Sasae-chan was concentrating in her training, so it was impossible for her to notice the fairy that was closing in on her from behind.

“Here we go, FUUUUSION!!” (Mantle)

Eh?!

At that moment, an overwhelming torrent of divine power was created with Sasae-chan in the middle.

“W-What be going on-sa ne?!” (Oba-san)

“Sasae-chan, what be the matter~?!” (Yoneko)

“Neechan?!”

“Neechan be evolving?!”

The relatives in the surroundings obviously noticed this abnormality and were flustered.

I also covered my face reflexively from the pressure of the divine power dispersing in every direction resembling a wind blast, but it calmed down in time and, when we look at what's basically the point of explosion, I was shocked.

At that place, there was a peerless beauty standing there.

Her age was probably around 20 years. Her glossy long hair was fluttering in the air. Her breasts might even be bigger than those of Yoneko-san, and her waist was shaped like a well-shaped gourd. The muscles in her butt were firm and, even when her other parts were bountiful, it was slender; a beauty filled with contradictions.

That beauty that you would even feel suspicious about was standing at the place where Sasae-chan was before!

“No wait! Could that possibly be...!” (Haine)

Sasae-chan?!

No way! Sasae-chan is only a 12 years old lovely little girl who only had her potential standing tall!

And yet, why is a girl around her twenties -no matter how you see it-standing there?!

But the big scythe in her hands is without doubt the Earth Scythe Sita that is of exclusive use for Sasae-chan.

Then, is it that? The only thing I can think of that could prompt such change

right now would only be one.

Because Mantle had connected with Sasae-chan and became a God Hero?!

The Earth God Hero, Sasae-chan!

An appearance that surpasses imagination by leaps and bounds has descended here?!

- 318: Ideal Statue

After becoming a God Hero, Sasae-chan became an adult?

No, in God Hero form, Sasae-chan turns adult?

Whichever the case, the youngest one within the heroes that had a small petite body is not here anymore. The one there now is a bountiful beauty that felt like a flower had bloomed there.

“How long are ya gonna be stunned there fer-sa ne?!” (Oba-san)

“Ouch!” (Haine)

I got poked in the eyes by the Founder Oba-san.

“My eyes! MY EYES!!” (Haine)

Why were my eyes poked? The reason was none other than the God Hero Sasae-chan. Due to her sudden growth, her clothes were ripped here and there.

In other words, the adult Sasae-chan with big boobs and butt was naked right now.

“Ah, no well...what in the world happened here-dasu ka?” (Sasae)

Is what Sasae-chan mutters.

If we had to put a voice tune to it, I would say it went from a soprano to a mezzo soprano, but her way of speaking was still that of Sasae-chan.

“No, Sasae-chan! That be something I would like to ask mahself~!!” (Yoneko)

“Neechan has transformed!”

“Neechan has transformed!”

Yoneko-san and her children could only be surprised at the suddenness of

this.

In the meantime, I was still wriggling in agony.

“My eyes! MY EYES!!” (Haine)

“At any rate, Sasae-chan, first of all, put on some clothes! A girl walking around naked outside before being married be unsightly~!” (Yoneko)

“That so? I never be told that before-dasu. I was not told anything even when I was swimming butt-naked at the river-dasu yo?” (Sasae)

“Just hide that uselessly ripe body of yours already, ya shameless woman!!” (Oba-san)

Looks like Sasae-chan finally put on some clothes after being reprimanded by the Oba-san —not like I can see anything though!

“Can’t be helped-dasu na.” (Sasae)

Finally healing from the damage of being poked in the eyes, I regained my sight, and what I saw was...the naked adult Sasae-chan. The ground at her feet was slowly rising up. The earth was thinly covering the body of Sasae-chan.

That earth was covering her whole body without leaving a single opening, excluding her head, and on top of that, she had changed its properties.

“[Fiber Alchemy]-dasu!” (Sasae)

As Sasae-chan said this, the earth covering her body changed into proper clothes. Moreover, you could tell at a glance that they were high-quality. It felt like silk or satin.

It hasn’t gone through the normal sewing process and it is not possible to stitch it either, so it was basically a heavenly garment. This adult Sasae-chan that’s wearing such garment looked like the very definition of heaven-descended.

“Oh my, how lovely. It looks like a princess of somewhere~.” (Yoneko)

“Moreover, ta be able ta alchemize something as detailed as cloth... Sasae, what in the world happened ta ya? Too many things have happened, I can’t keep up-sa ne.” (Oba-san)

Yoneko-san and the Oba-san were truly confused by the big abnormality that occurred, but...I feel like they should be a bit more confused and flustered than that...

At any rate, I am the only one who can answer the questions to this abnormality.

While enduring the pain in my eyes that still doesn't recede, I say in a wrung out voice...

"The Earth...God Hero...!" (Haine)

"""God Hero?"" "-Dasu?"

The Earth hero family reacts in symphony.

"Right-sa ne. They did mention something like that in the wireless communication reports. It be something that be trending in the city apparently." (Oba-san)

"The one where the God confers power ta the hero?! I thought it be a spook story from the city~." (Yoneko)

Karen-san, Mirack, and Celestis have become God Heroes, and their names have begun to spread around huh.

"Does that mean...Mother Earth Mantle-sama has...conferred me power-dasu ka?" (Sasae)

The adult-turned Sasae-chan looks down at her body as if to confirm herself —her current self that is overflowing with charm to the point of shocking.

"...For some reason, I feel like I can do anything now-dasu. Now that I think about it...!" (Sasae)

Sasae-chan pierces her Earth Scythe to the ground. At the same time as she did this, the Goddess Golem made by Sasae-chan surfaces.

"Incredible! The refining speed can't be compared ta before~!" (Yoneko)

"The pouring of divine power and the completion of the Golem be practically at the same time?! She must have poured quite the thick concentration of divine power or it wouldn't have gone that smoothly!" (Oba-san)

Sasae-chan swings her big scythe with energy.

“Let’s go-dasu yo! My other self!!” (Sasae)

The tempered Goddess Golem runs together with Sasae-chan.

Sasae-chan and the Golem; they were moving as if they were separate beings, but that wasn’t the case. Sasae-chan created it and it will stay as being a part of Sasae-chan.

It is different from the Golems made out of Life Blocks that move semi-automatically.

It won’t move without being given every single instruction from Sasae-chan.

Even if a human were to have four arms, I wonder if they would be able to move them freely in whichever way they want. Even two arms are a lot, and you would have to choose which one is your dominant arm.

It is the same with this. For Sasae-chan who has created a Golem with her own divine power, it is as if she had grown an extra body.

Controlling it together with her own body is practically impossible, that’s why she has been unable to move it properly until now and has lost all this time against Yoneko-san.

But right now it is different.

Now that Sasae-chan has become a God Hero, she can control both her and the Golem, and they were showing movements as if they were having a dance.

“It be as if mah own body ain’t mah own-dasu!!” (Sasae)

Not only her divine power output increased when she became a God Hero, her control, and even her processing ability had received an incredible power-up that can’t be compared to before.

The big scythe that didn’t fit her small size before has now completely fitted her adult body and it doesn’t feel precarious to have it in her hands anymore.

All points were perfect, and Sasae-chan who only shone in her raw talent has suddenly reached the point of perfection!

“Earth God Hero, Sasae! Has descended here-dasu!! With this power, I will cut

all 'em Demon Lords to pieces-dasu yo!!!” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan shouts enthusiastically.

However, I can only feel uneasiness from this...

WR – Chapter 319-321: Water Sisters

Hello there, it is the Light hero, Kourin Karen.

After finishing the harsh battle at Hydra Ville, we were actually still at the Water capital.

The people that were turned into a strange liquid called Undiluted Lifeforce were actually the whole of Hydra Ville, moreover, since Hydra Ville is a sightseeing city, the tourists there also fell victim to it. In other words, a lot of people were turned.

Helping those people out and returning them to their places will take quite a lot of effort, so Mirack-chan and I happily accepted to help out.

When in trouble, we help each other out. That's how the relationship between the five Churches is now.

And with that, time continued flowing.

In this way, we finished the rescue activities to a certain extent and, in the time when it was the calmest...

“Hnfufu~ Oneesama~!” (Celestis)

“Yes yes.” (Sarasa)

“Oneesama, Oneesama~~!!” (Celestis)

“Yes yes... Wait, what in the world is going on?!” (Sarasa)

Being hugged by Celestis-chan, Sarasa-san was the very definition of confused.

Well, that's a given though.

Within the current and previous heroes, Celestis-chan and Sarasa-san are the

ones that have the least respect for each other.

Compared to Mirack-chan and Kyouka-san, who were disciples under the same master; Sasae-chan and Yoneko-san, who are cousins; and there's also Hyue-chan and Juo-san who are bitter enemies with Shiva-sama in between.

These two have an unusual senior and junior relationship that doesn't share a connection.

Celestis-chan herself had not showed any sort of interest towards her senior Sarasa-san until now, and yet...

“Oneesama, I love you~. Fufufufu...” (Celestis)

Being suddenly called Oneesama and her over-familiar act of burying her face into the boobs of Sarasa-san, for the people that know these two, they would go ‘What in the hell happened?!’ no doubt.

But I know the reason...

“Uhm...Sarasa-san, didn't you do quite a lot in the battle with Gabriel?”
(Karen)

I tried to explain the situation.

“Did quite a lot? That's not true. My best technique did not work at all after all.” (Sarasa)

That's right. In the time when Celestis-chan was absent, Sarasa-san was the one who protected the Water capital. While she was away, the Demon Lord Gabriel appeared and, even when the difference in strength was overwhelming, Sarasa-san stepped ground until Celestis-chan arrived.

This gained the respect of her junior Celestis-chan. On top of that, the technique that she showed at the end was sealed at the heroes match she had with Celestis-chan because it was too powerful, which also resonated within Celestis-chan.

Sarasa-san was turned into undiluted lifeforce after and has safely returned, but Celestis-chan has been sticking to her since then.

“I see Sarasa-oneesama in a new light!” (Celestis)

Celestis-chan had her eyes sparkling.

“That strength of heart of not giving up in an incredibly disadvantageous situation! The amazingness of the last attack! Sarasa-oneesama is cool, I admire you!!” (Celestis)

And so, in this way, Celestis-chan was respecting her like crazy.

“Well...I am happy that you respect me, but I am your senior here, so I would be glad if you had that respect from the very beginning though!” (Sarasa)

Completely true.

“Well, Celestis-chan can’t hate the people that do good for the Water nation after all...” (Karen)

She also has the trait that unless she doesn’t find anything of value, she doesn’t even try to act as if she respects you though.

“And when she judges you as someone good, she doesn’t show any restrain in her show of affection. Truly someone that doesn’t have openings!” (Mirack)

Mirack-chan, who was by my side, was half in admiration and half tired by this.

Celestis-chan then once again buries deeper into Sarasa-san’s bosom and says with a low but clear voice.

“Really, thank you, Sarasa-oneesama. For protecting my beloved city. The people that I love. If you hadn’t been there, if you hadn’t done your all to protect them until I arrived, by now, they would have all been...” (Celestis)

“Celestis-san...” (Sarasa)

“Ah! I thought of something nice! When I graduate from being a hero, can I join Sarasa-sama’s family?!” (Celestis)

“?!”

“In that way, I can truly become Sarasa-oneesama’s sister after all!” (Celestis)

An outrageous proposal fitting of Celestis-chan.

“Gyaaa!! Don’t! Don’t! If you were to join my family, after retiring from your title as hero, you will have the position of being the daughter of the current

Founder. I will be the one who will be losing my position in the family!!”
(Sarasa)

For Sarasa-san, the current Celestis-chan was actually even more of a threat than the past one.

“Oh well, it is good that they get along with each other...” (Mirack)

And seeing this, Mirack-chan immediately gave up on thinking anymore.

I also did the same.

“But isn’t this the very view of culture?!”

“?”

There was one other person watching the bantering of the water heroes along with Mirack-chan and I. That person is...uhm, the Demon Lord.

“I have learned one other thing about culture. With this battle, I have learned that the source of culture is, in other words, love!” (Gabriel)

“I see...” (Karen)

“Loving others and holding the will of making others love you; in order to express this, you bring out a variety of knowledge and put it into action. That itself is culture! In order to get culture into my hands, I should learn about love first and master it!!” (Gabriel)

...Is what the Water Demon Lord is saying.

Even though the battle is already over, this Demon Lord still hasn’t left.

“Oh! You said some nice things there, Demon Lord!! In that case, to learn about love, you have to act first!!” (Celestis)

And Celestis-chan speaks to the Demon Lord as if nothing had happened.

It was as if she had already let it be water under the bridge. In a sense, you could call that the respect Celestis-chan had for words of the Water God she loves.

“Right, there’s the need to act or nothing can be obtained! In order to obtain love, what should you do?!” (Gabriel)

“Of course, to declare your love to the one you love! That act is the most simple of cultures! You try shouting it as well, Sarasa-oneesama, I love you!” (Celestis)

“Sarasa-oneesama, I love you!!” (Gabriel)

“Eeeeeh?!” (Sarasa)

Sarasa-san herself was the most shocked one.

My condolences.

“Next is a hug! It is fine. Sarasa-oneesama is benevolent, so she will even accept a Demon Lord!!” (Celestis)

“Sarasa-oneesama, I love you~!” (Gabriel)

Gabriel approaches with both arms open and, obviously, Sarasa-san’s red alert was sounding.

At this point, I can’t tell if Celestis-chan is being serious here or this is just plain bullying.

“Wa-Wait! Wait for a bit! ...No, if I run away here, it would be a disgrace! Let it be my junior or a Demon Lord, I will accept them both! Come at meeeee!!” (Sarasa)

Ah, she accepted it.

In this case, I think that Sarasa-san’s benevolence like that of the mother ocean has only worsened the situation.

...Well, it is good that they are getting along.

Let’s give up thinking.

- 320: Fire’s sworn friend

“Gugagagaga! Wait, as I thought, the Demon Lord’s strength is totally different from humans. The bones in my whole body will break! Can you please hold back a little?! My insides will come out!!” (Sarasa)

Let’s leave aside Sarasa-san who is supposed to be in cloud nine for being hugged by her little sisters.

My attention switched to the other one, the giant that towered on us.

“Michael...” (Karen)

The four Demon Lords that...are supposed to threaten this world. The one that stands as their leader.

Michael was standing there with arms crossed and showing a complicated expression. He had both eyes closed as if in silent prayer.

It was as if he were sleeping, but at the same time, it looked like he was a philosopher contemplating.

“...You are not returning either?” (Mirack)

The one who brought the topic was Mirack-chan who exchanged fists with Michael before.

The Fire Demon Lord slowly opens his eyes.

“With Gabriel in that state... She said she won’t be returning until she obtains the human’s culture...” (Michael)

At the other side, there’s Gabriel and Celestis-chan hugging the passed out Sarasa-san.

“I as well, even if it was in order to save a comrade, I ended up joining forces with the humans that I am originally meant to eradicate. Thinking about what Uriel and Raphael will say to that, it makes it harder to return.” (Gabriel)

“There’s also things the Demon Lords can get awkward about?” (Mirack)

Mirack-chan said it as if she was joking, but Michael is always super serious.

“That can be considered to be the heart in a way. What we monsters have recently obtained. But....it is not as if we have truly obtained it yet.” (Michael)

Michael flaps his fire wings slightly.

One of the ashes that fell visibly turned bigger and changes into a wolf with fire fur.

The most orthodox of the fire monsters, Hell Hound.

Three fire wolves appeared at once and it caught the eye of us who were right

at the vicinity.

They were growling 'Grrrr!' and, with those instincts pushing them, it felt as if they would attack us at any moment.

But when Michael raised his hand to gesture them to stop, the fire wolves obey like obedient dogs.

"As expected of a Demon Lord. You can even control the instincts of monsters to attack humans and have them obey huh." (Mirack)

"That's right, monsters attack humans. They attack and try to kill. That is the nature that's been edged in all monsters. There's no other way to call it but an instinct." (Michael)

Michael says this as he looks at the kinfolks he himself created.

"No, it can't even be called an instinct. It is a function. Monsters don't attack humans out of hatred or sense of duty, it is not because of the vulgar excitement that comes from destruction either, neither is it because of the survival instincts that kick in when animals attack other animals... Monsters simply have the function of attacking humans." (Michael)

His explanation felt as if it carried pain.

"You could say we Demon Lords have escaped from that root and have obtained a heart. I won't let anyone deny that. Like hell I would let anyone..... But all monsters aside from us are still moving under that function that fakes their state as lifeforms." (Michael)

"Michael..." (Mirack)

"Katack Mirack, what you said in the past about 'Monsters not having emotions', I still haven't been able to turn it around. As long as that isn't done, monsters not only won't be able to stand as the summit of all races, we won't even be able to stand as a lifeform at all." (Michael)

Michael bends his knees and strokes the head of the fire wolf he had created.

If this were a normal dog, it would be waving his tail and might even return the act by licking the hand of the person.

But the fire wolves didn't react even when being petted.

“...In the end, Gabriel and I have the same opinion. In order for monsters to obtain their position as a new lifeform, we need to mix with humans, and learn from them. That’s the surest way to reach that goal. By doing that, these guys might one day be able to feel happy at their comrades increasing in numbers.” (Michael)

“That’s...that’s nice!” (Karen)

I unconsciously raised my voice.

Michael and Mirack-chan turned their gaze towards me at the same time.

“If we humans and monsters stop fighting and get along, we can learn the good things about each other and be able to grow together! It is definitely a LOT better than fighting until one side perishes!” (Karen)

“That’s not possible.” (Michael)

Michael immediately denies that possibility.

“We monsters and humans have to fight in order to decide who is the most fitting ruler in this world. Until either side falls.” (Michael)

“That’s not true! Who decided something like that?!” (Karen)

“The Great Demon Lord, Lucifer-sama.” (Michael)

Those words were proclaimed from the mouth of Michael. An impressive-sounding name like that. A name I have heard before.

“The Demon Lord that rules over us Demon Lords, the Demon Lord of Demon Lords; the one who is the ruler of all monsters in the true meaning, the Light Demon Lord.” (Michael)

“The Light...Demon Lord?!” (Karen)

There’s a light element Demon Lord?

And that Demon Lord is the boss of all of them?!

“That Light Demon Lord you speak about, you are saying he is the very culprit scheming the eradication of humans?” (Mirack)

“What. So in the end, the most evil one of them all was the one related to Karen-chi?!” (Celestis)

Being tired of musing Sarasa-san, Celestis-chan joins in on our conversation.

Or more like, I don't know about this, you know?! Being the same element doesn't mean we are related, okay?!

"When we were still inside our mothers, Lucifer-sama spoke to us." (Gabriel)

Gabriel was carrying the foaming Sarasa-san as she came towards us.

"Eradicate the humans, the rulers of the world are us monsters'. Obeying those words, we four Demon Lords gathered and decided on fighting the humans." (Gabriel)

"Lucifer-sama hasn't reached perfect shape yet and is currently in sleep. Once Lucifer-sama is born, it will be the true end of humanity." (Michael)

I felt a chill run down my spine.

Even though we have grown close enough with the Demon Lords to speak with them in this way, you are telling me the direction to destruction has not been averted at all?

"But now, I can't help but have doubts to Lucifer-sama. I understood for the first time after fighting. Humans are living beings that surpassed my expectations by a lot. It is not solely from strength. The humans definitely hold an unknown power that is hard to even describe in words." (Michael)

"You must be talking about culture and love!" (Gabriel)

"And those might actually be only a part of what tremendous thing the humans hold. For monsters, even if humans are enemies, they hold something that we require. I have to face Lucifer-sama. I have to ask him something." (Michael)

Hearing what the Demon Lords had to say, we thought that they were incredible.

They are desperately thinking about their way of living. I even ended up thinking that passing our days carefreely is embarrassing.

"Whichever the case, nothing will begin unless Lucifer-sama wakes up though." (Gabriel)

Michael nods at the words of Gabriel.

“That’s right. Right now we simply wait for the right time.” (Michael)

Meaning that peace will continue until that Lucifer-san awakens? Or more like, the true hell will begin once he awakens...

“Uhm...how about we all attack that Lucifer guy while he is still sleeping?” (Celestis)

“You, read the mood a bit.” (Mirack)

It looks like even Celestis-chan didn’t think that was a really decent proposition. She soon closed her mouth when Mirack-chan scolded her.

“Celestis-sama! Also, the heroes from the other churches!”

A member of the Water Church calls us at that moment. This is Hydra Ville after all.

But why did he call us in such a hurried voice?

“There’s a report from the Stream Marine corps. There is an unknown something heading towards the city!”

Unknown something?

What?

“Wait. This Hydra Ville has just overcome a conflict not that long ago, you know? It is troubling to be constantly shot in such a brief period of time, geez!” (Celestis)

“But there’s the need to deal with the thing that is coming. Since we are here, let’s help out as well. Let’s finish this quickly.” (Mirack)

I was also completely in agreement to Mirack-chan’s words.

Let’s have the knocked out Sarasa-san rest for now, and so...the other one...

“What about Doraha?” (Mirack)

Being asked by Mirack-chan, I silently shook my head to the sides.

Doraha-san fought together with us against Gabriel, and she hasn’t healed completely from the damage she took and is still bedridden.

The wounds themselves have been treated with water techniques though. However, maybe because she used power that surpassed her limits, she is still sleeping like a log.

She is not in a state where she can participate in battle.

“Understood. Whichever the case, she has done plenty work already. Let her rest.” (Mirack)

“If she weren’t there at that time, the Water Church would have been done for after all. We have to at least gift her a good sleep!!” (Celestis)

And so, Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, and I will be dealing with this unknown situation.

“.....”

“.....?”

On the other hand, the two Demon Lords heard the report and raised their senses as if checking for the presence, and they both turned their head and the same direction at the same time.

“...This divine power...” (Michael)

“Uriel? Why is that guy coming here?” (Gabriel)

- 321: The fear of the Demon Lord

According to the lookouts of Hydra Ville, an unknown ‘something’ was letting out an overwhelming amount of divine power as it headed straight towards them.

Predicting the course it will take, we wait for the arrival of that ‘something’ at the easiest place to fight off someone; at the plains.

It is pretty faraway from the city, so there’s no worries even if we were to rampage quite a bit.

But what worried me more was...

“.....”

“.....Uhm...” (Karen)

Michael and Gabriel came along with us as well.

These two, along with Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, and I.

It is an abnormal grouping.

“This is quite the bizarre group of people.” (Celestis)

I understand why Celestis-chan is making a bitter smile.

“If I stay with you people, I can meet more new culture! I -Gabriel-am the type that doesn’t let go of a learning experience!” (Gabriel)

“...The one heading here is probably a guest of ours. Then, it is manners for us to be the ones meeting him.” (Michael)

Gabriel says with half amusement, while Michael seems to have felt something.

What is coming here anyways?

We could confirm that something was making a dust cloud as it headed to where we were. It is on a level where you would think a stampede is heading our way. Moreover, that dust cloud is still quite far away from us, and yet, we could feel a presence even from where we were.

How to say it, it felt as if it were hurried, or desperate?

I could feel that from the something that is making that dust cloud.

“This is obvious but, it is steadily coming here.” (Celestis)

“Looks like we will soon be able to confirm with our eyes. Just who is it that is making that dust cloud?” (Mirack)

When we strain our eyes, we were finally able to pick up who the one making that dust cloud was.

““““Uriel?!”””

One of the four Demon Lords threatening the world, Earth Demon Lord, Uriel!

That figure of his, that is like a tree taking the form of a human, there’s no way of mistaking it. There’s branches drawing the silhouette of wings spreading from his back which is a trait of that Demon Lord.

Gabriel, Michael, and now there's Uriel; are you telling me three of the four Demon Lords will be grouping in this Hydra Ville?!

"As expected of my sightseeing city. Even Demon Lords want to check it out at least once." (Celestis)

"This is no time to be throwing jokes, Celestis-chan!!" (Karen)

Leaving aside the two here, the other Demon Lords are still hostile towards humans.

If Uriel arrives here, at worst, it might become a battle with Hydra Ville's safety at stake!

"He won't trouble the humans." (Michael)

Michael says softly but with a clear tone.

"It looks like he has business with me." (Michael)

"Michael~~!! Michael Michael Michael Michael Michael Michael Michael!!!" (Uriel)

The Earth Demon Lord repeatedly calls the name of his comrade Michael.

And then, he arrived here. With the speed he used to create that dust cloud, he charges at Michael.

"Michael~~~~!!" (Uriel)

"Eh?"

And then, he clings onto the legs of Michael.

"Michael!! Save me, Michael! Save me, save me, save me, save me, save me, save me!!" (Uriel)

"O-Oi, what's the matter, Uriel? Why is a Demon Lord like you making such an unsightly scene like this?!" (Michael)

Even Michael was unable to hide his confusion and was looking at his comrade that had fallen into panic.

"Save me, save me, save me! Save m—cough cough *cough! At any rate, save me!" (Uriel)

Why is this Demon Lord-san so scared?

When talking about Demon Lords, aren't their existences the very definition of fearsome?

"If we don't hurry, that person will come! That person is...!" (Uriel)

"That person?" (Michael)

Uriel's ominous words made us move our gazes towards the route he came from before, and there was someone there already.

A peerless beauty shouldering a big scythe.

""""Who is that?""""

I...think this is the first time I have seen this person.

Because if I saw her once, I would definitely not forget about her. That's the kind of beauty level she had.

In terms of age, I would say she is slightly above us, around 18 years old, maybe?

Even so, she had a liveliness similar to that of a child, and was accompanied with the contradictory feeling of composure of that of an adult.

Her boobs are also incredibly big.

Even as a person of the same gender, her beauty made me let out a gasp.

Just who in the world is she?

"Gyaaaaaa!! She is hereeeee!!" (Uriel)

And Uriel let out a scream at that beauty.

"What are you saying about that human woman?! Ah?!" (Michael)

The moment Michael let out that question, the beauty had already closed in on him.

When did she manage to do that?!

That speed of hers, not even I...no, not even we all here were able to catch it.

"You bastard!" (Michael)

“Michael?!” (Gabriel)

Michael and Gabriel barely managed to react to it and attack the mysterious beauty.

Michael with a punch clad in fire, Gabriel with a high pressure water bullet; they are both divine power attacks that surpass the level of humans by a whole lot, but the mysterious beauty didn’t flinch at either.

“Wa?!”

She deflected the water bullet, and then, the swung big scythe cuts off the right arm of Michael?!

What in the world! She was able to deal with two Demon Lords at once so easily?!

“Are you okay, Michael?!” (Gabriel)

“You bastard!” (Michael)

Michael quickly falls back and sticks his arm back in place.

Being able to bring it back to normal after such a big wound is proof of the fearsomeness of a Demon Lord, but the mystery woman-san is actually scarier right now!

“Hiih! Not even Michael is any good. What in the world should we do?!”
(Uriel)

“What is the meaning of this, Uriel?! What in the world is that human?!”
(Michael)

Now that it has come to this, there’s no room for doubt. The one who has made Uriel lose all his pride as a Demon Lord was that mysterious beauty.

“Oi, this situation... What should we do?” (Mirack)

“In the first place, who is that beautiful lady?! Human? Monster? I can’t even tell that!” (Celestis)

Mirack-chan and Celestis-chan were flustered completely.

No, that lady is most likely a human, but that strength makes it questionable whether she actually is a human!

“Hah...Hah...! I finally caught up!!”

That voice...Haine-san?!

The third intruder from the route where Uriel and the mysterious beauty came from. It is Haine-san who had been missing these last few days!

“Haine-san! Where were you until now?! Or more like, what’s with this situation?!” (Karen)

Haine-san was most likely desperately chasing after Uriel and the mysterious beauty. His flying machine was overheated and smoke was coming out from it here and there.

“T-T-That’s Sasae-chan...!” (Haine)

“Eh?”

“Sasae-chan turned into a God Hero. Mantle...overdid it...!” (Haine)

No no, what are you saying, Haine-san?

The Sasae-chan that should be in Ishtar Blaze, there’s no way she would be here!

In the first place, there’s nothing resembling Sasae-chan with this person here!

....

.....Could it be...that familiar big scythe that looks as if it would hunt down lives that this beauty is holding...the Earth Scythe, Sita.

“That incredible beauty is the God Hero Sasae-chan?!” (Karen)

WR – Chapter 322-324: The successor of ‘By the roots’

- 322: The successor of ‘By the roots’

We are going slightly back in time.

Accurately speaking, to the time after I -Kuromiya Haine-had witnessed Sasae-chan turning into a God Hero.

Such a meta way of explaining things in terms of story is not really that desirable, but in order to make it easier to understand, I think it is better this way.

“Well well, she really has grown well.”

This was after the surprise of Sasae-chan becoming a God Hero and turning into an adult.

Finished confirming the power up of the God Hero form, Sasae-chan herself and her relatives were in the middle of giving a review at Sasae-chan’s sudden growth.

“Truly well grown. Sasae-chan, haven’t ya gotten bigger than me?” (Yoneko)

The one saying this was her cousin Yoneko-san.

She was holding the well-ripped bust of adult Sasae-chan as she fondles it.

“Yeah, I don’t really understand well-dasu. It be a truly unknown feeling-dasu yo.” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan gave that impression towards the feeling of having her own breasts fondled.

It can't be helped. That incredibly flat plain had suddenly become two big mountains after all. It is as if your body had suddenly been placed something on it, so the feeling of incongruity that comes from it is certainly something that would perplex someone.

Even though Yoneko-san is by far the one with the biggest breasts from the current and previous heroes, Sasae-chan surpassed even that.

"Breasts bigger than mine; I have never seen that before, so it be natural that I be interested in it~. In my family they all be big, but adult Sasae-chan be a cut above the rest~." (Yoneko)

"Mom, I also wanna fondle~!"

"Me too~!"

Yoneko-san's children were also interested.

Sasae-chan suddenly grew after being given a part of Mantle.

This growth is not a natural one but a temporary one. However, if given time to grow normally, I wonder if she will end up having this figure?

If that's the case...Sasae-chan has incredible potential as a woman as well.

"Ara...now that I think about it..." (Yoneko)

Yoneko-san stopped fondling Sasae-chan's breast and had moved her attention to Sasae-chan's beauty.

"W-What it be this time-dasu ka?" (Sasae)

"I felt like I saw the adult face of Sasae-chan before, but I remember now~." (Yoneko)

Yoneko-san says.

"This Sasae-chan looks exactly like when Grandmother be young~." (Yoneko)

""""Eh?""""

The one who reacted the most at this was the very person, the Earth Founder Oba-san.

She is the grandma of both Sasae-chan and Yoneko-san.

“Don’t say stupid things, Yoneko! There not be a single time in my life I have had a spaced-out face like this-sa ne!” (Oba-san)

“Aw aw aw....!” (Sasae)

The Oba-san objected more than expected, and the adult Sasae-chan got scared by the pressure of this.

“That ain’t true~. Well, I myself haven’t seen Sobo-chan in her active days, but I seen it once a long time ago. A portrait of when Sobo-chan was young.” (Yoneko)

“Wa?!”

“It be one that was decorating the art museum of Ishtar Blaze, but fer some mysterious reason, the next times I went there, I couldn’t find it anywhere. But I really remember it vividly. That’s why I can say fer sure that Sasae-chan resembles ya~.” (Yoneko)

“Ya, ya saw that?! Even though I immediately bursted into the place after I heard that they had brought it out!!” (Oba-san)

You did something like that, Oba-san?

On top of that, the Founder Oba-san makes a difficult expression as she faces me, and then gestures me to come.

“Hm? What is it?” (Haine)

She grabbed my collar and whispers to me.

“Keep it between us. It be true that this Sasae does resemble mah young self.” (Oba-san)

“Seriously?” (Haine)

“Seriously-sa ne. When I saw that first for the first time, I felt like I be looking at a mirror..... No, I been thinking that way since long before. I have 10 daughters and 84 granddaughters, but...” (Oba-san)

There’s so many?

Is this the breeding power of Ishtar Blaze?!

“The one who resembles me the most be Sasae-sa ne.” (Oba-san)

Hearing this from the person herself, I for some reason had shivers run down my spine.

The Oba-san was known in the past as the earth hero, 'Taker by the roots'. She is the hero seven generations ago and the accomplishments she has gotten are the very definition of legendary.

The number of monsters she has cut down in her active days were the highest and her military records were also the highest of any. Even within the conflicts between humans, she would rampage without showing any mercy, and I heard that she has made the blood of the heroes of other churches in her generation rain.

She was the one who had been the longest time active from the heroes. Normally, a hero retires around the age of 20, and yet, she continued being a hero even when she was 20, and even when she had married and was pregnant, she continued being a hero, and then, she finally retired after her daughter had grown to the point where she could succeed her as a hero.

After that, all the earth heroes have been her daughters or granddaughters.

The legend among legends within the earth heroes among that had overwhelming influence even in posterity -that is 'Taker by the roots'.

"You are saying Sasae-chan resembles you?" (Haine)

"Yeah. Now that I think about it, I was also absent-minded when I be young. People normally made fun of me. But when I think about it now, it be exactly because I be absent-minded that I didn't have anything obstructing my sight and was able to persistently chase after what I could see. I think I was that kind of child." (Oba-san)

That's exactly how the current Sasae-chan is.

Are you saying that the Oba-san overcame this and became a hero that cuts down everything?

"That be why I thought this when I saw Sasae: 'This one has talent'. That there be no doubt she would become as strong as me when I be on my peak. But I thought that would be a lot further in the future. And yet, she suddenly grew into such a beauty!" (Oba-san)

Moreover, when she was in her active days, she had created a grand legend for herself with her big scythe. And yet, Sasae-chan not only has a scythe but also her Golem. She has trained to utilize both the Golem and the scythe freely.

She possesses talent rivalling that of the previous legend and has been loved by Golems since she was born.

If that disposition has bloomed at once thanks to becoming a God Hero...!

“Mugh?!” (Yoneko)

The abnormality had already started.

Hearing something that sounded like a scream from Yoneko-san, the Oba-san and I stopped our conversation and hurriedly turn around.

There, we saw a scene we couldn't understand.

Sasae-chan had stolen a kiss of Yoneko-san?!

“What are you doing?!”

It must have been by force.

Yoneko-san was hugged tightly and their lips were pressed together; it looked like a snake that had coiled around its prey and was about to swallow it.

But after Sasae-chan thoroughly licked the tongue and lips of Yoneko-san, she threw her away as if she had grown tired of eating her.

“To think I would allow my lips to be stolen by someone other than my husband...” (Yoneko)

“Mom~!”

“Get a hold of yerself, Mom~!”

Yoneko-san was collapsed and the children run to her.

“What are ye doing Sasae?! Are you shameless?!” (Oba-san)

The Oba-san was also incredibly confused.

But there was further confusion coming.

“I-I don't understand either-dasu... But...but...!!” (Sasae)

The adult Sasae-chan looks at her own hand clenching her scythe.

That fist was trembling as if she couldn't hold back her overflowing strength.

"This strength, this divine power, I can't hold it back-dasu! If I don't release it soon, I feel like I might go crazy-dasu~~!!" (Sasae)

"Sasae?!" (Oba-san)

The divine power Sasae-chan was releasing was similar to a gale.

Then, she turned her head at a certain direction.

"I can feel it-dasu. Our enemy be at that direction-dasu... I will go out for a bit, cut 'em to small pieces, and spread 'em into the fields-dasu!" (Sasae)

Is the gibberish she said as she ran off!!

What in the world was that?!

"Nii-chan, please go after her!" (Oba-san)

This is the first time I have heard such a desperate voice from her.

"I have ta look after the collapsed Yoneko! I leave Sasae-chan to ya!!" (Oba-san)

"Ah geez, got it! I will go!! [Dark Matter, Set]" (Haine)

I release dark matter from my legs and, with the repulsion effect, I fly high and chase after Sasae-chan.

Why do the earth element people go towards directions that you don't plan them to!

- 323: Ballad

And so, I chase after Sasae-chan but...

"I have already lost sight of her!" (Haine)

Sasae-chan was running so fast, just a single mistake allowed her to disappear as if she were mist.

Earth divine power doesn't have anything flashy to boost their moving speed like the fire and wind, so is this pure leg strength here?

Did her muscle strength get boosted to abnormal levels after becoming a God Hero?

This is the first time I see a God Hero myself, so I don't have anyone to compare it to but, isn't the power-up way too overblown?

I am steadily getting more worried.

The grouping was that Mantle and Sasae-chan after all.

That's why losing sight of her hurts and I have to find her as soon as possible, but the place I arrived at after chasing after her is a forest that's pretty far away from Ishtar Blaze. The field of vision is bad and that makes it even harder to find.

I was about to give up when...I felt a different presence from deep in the forest.

“?!”

Moreover, it is quite the sinister presence.

Since it would be difficult to find Sasae-chan in these circumstances, I decided on giving up on it for now and check for what the presence is about.

“Uriel?!”

And so, when I follow the presence, the one I encountered was the tree human. One of the very problems that humans are facing.

Why is he here?

“Oh? I finally began acting and the first one I encounter is you. I really have no luck. Or maybe this is a trial?” (Uriel)

The Demon Lord, whose whole body was deep black like an old tree, showed caution as he clearly showed his pride.

“In order for us monsters to rule this world, you are a trial we have to overcome.” (Uriel)

“You...why are you here?” (Haine)

A Demon Lord is not the kind of monster you coincidentally encounter on a walk.

In that case, there's no doubt this guy is here for some reason.

"...Kuromiya Haine. The bark you forced me to tear off had finally regenerated, you see. How is it, this nice black. Looks like a tree that has surpassed the thousand years, right? It was pretty difficult to get this quality, you know. I ended up taking a decent amount of time." (Uriel)

Is what Uriel says as he shows off his bark as if he were bragging about his fashion.

I don't really understand this attachment he has.

"My new attire has been finished and I had finally decided on acting to eradicate the humans. I was thinking about destroying the city that's not far from here." (Uriel)

?!
Is he talking about Ishtar Blaze?!

"Michael went to the Fire capital and Gabriel went to the Water capital, so I thought I should also attack a place related to earth... Michael and Gabriel were influenced by mere humans and have been contaminated. In order to mend that shame, I must fulfill my duty as a Demon Lord." (Uriel)

The fruit-like eyes of Uriel had inhuman light shining in them.

"The Demon Lords were contaminated? What do you mean by that?" (Haine)

"It means that they have gotten all friendly with them. Hmph, how disgusting. Raphael is already a mess, so the only decent Demon Lord left is I, Uriel. The important task that the Great Demon Lord Lucifer-sama has left us, I will be accomplishing it on my own." (Uriel)

Whichever the case, it means that he is burning with hostility.

No matter if he is an invincible Demon Lord, they can't match the incarnation of the Dark God. That's something they should know already after the battle in Rudras Metropolis.

“You already know you can’t defeat me, and yet, you show no hesitation. Is that conceitedness? Or is your pride supporting you here?” (Haine)

“Pride? I see, right! In order to continue being the Lord of monsters, I can’t allow myself to turn tail from the same enemy twice! I will defeat you on the name of this Earth Demon Lord, Uriel!” (Uriel)

And of course, I can’t allow Uriel to pass me and have him arrive at Ishtar Blaze.

In order to not let a single human be hurt, I have to destroy Uriel right here!

“Now!” (Uriel)

“Begin!!” (Haine)

Right in the moment Uriel’s earth power and my dark power were about to clash...

*Swish

The sound of something being severed was heard.

“Hm?” “Eh?”

The both of us let out a dumbfounded voice.

And then, something unbelievable happened at our surroundings.

We were currently inside a thick forest. That’s why there’s several tens of trees at our close vicinity, but those trees were cut down all at once.

““Eeeeeh?!””

What in the world?!

The trees fall and make a thunderous sound, moreover, several of them fell at the same time, so it increased the intensity even more.

Because the trees were now gone, the field of vision was cleared up at once.

“W-What?! This grove of trees were cut down by a single swing?!” (Uriel)

“Uriel! Uriel!! You are also cut!! Like, really cleanly!!” (Haine)

“Eh? —Ah! You are right!!” (Uriel)

Uriel was also a victim of the tree cutting. He had been cut from around his waist.

“...Hm?”

Now that I look properly, my clothes were cut around the stomach?!

Uo! That was close! This was definitely the work of what cut down the trees and Uriel!

This slash that had a scary range had severed several trees along with Uriel, and even I was caught extremely close to that range.

“Uo! Dangerous!” (Haine)

If I had been one step closer, I would have been one of the victims as well and my innards would be spilling out. It would have turned into gore!

“What?! What happened?!” (Uriel)

Several branch-like things grew out from the cut and he soon reconnected the cut area.

It was as if nothing happened. I see, so this is a trait of the Demon Lords huh.

“Leaving that aside...” (Haine)

Uriel was completely cut in half and I was cut slightly in my stomach.

When seeing it from this point of view, it should have been an attack from behind Uriel.

“Kukukuku... Finally found ya-dasu yo.”

A terrifying laugh resounded. The one who appeared was...

“To think I ended up passing mah target from excess of momentum-dasu. Because of that, it took unnecessary amount of time to return-dasu.”

A fascinating princess in swung stance with a scythe.

Earth God Hero, Sasae-chan!!

- 324: Charm of severing

Demon Lord and God Hero; the two that should meet in battle have gathered

in one place.

Now that I think about it, Sasae-chan did say ‘there’s an enemy’ when she left.

In other words, she had caught the presence of someone this faraway even when she was in the earth capital?

It is hard to believe, but that’s exactly why she is here.

Sasae-chan had appeared at the back of Uriel, so he turned around.

“Attacking me from the back. What a low move... But a strong divine power enough to cut me in tw—?!” (Uriel)

It seems Uriel noticed something, he cut his words.

“I see. It is the so called God Hero, right? I know that this had given a lot of trouble to Michael. Meaning, those fangs have appeared in the Earth domain as well huh.” (Uriel)

“...”

Sasae-chan didn’t answer.

She simply repositioned with her earth scythe and showed that she had fighting spirit.

“Fine! I will first finish you off in front of Kuromiya Haine! No matter what kind of method you employ, I will teach you that there are boundaries between humans and demons you can’t overcome!” (Uriel)

As he informs his will to fight, Uriel raises his finger and says.

“Rot and return to the earth!” (Uriel)

And then, he turns to where I am and looks at me with a cocky face.

Eh? What?

“In order to show my strength as a Demon Lord, I heard that there’s the need for a ‘catch phrase’, you see. And so, I have thought about it! How is it? Isn’t it cool?” (Uriel)

Ah...

He is the Earth Demon Lord, so 'Return to the earth' huh.

...I would say decent.

"Now then, since we are done with the introduction, let's finish the opening performance and then have the main battle with Kuromiya Hain—Uhya?!"
(Uriel)

Sasae-chan had attacked him as if he were doing nothing, and Uriel's body was once again cut in two.

If it weren't for the fact that he is a Demon Lord that can recover any damage in a moment, those attacks would have ended the battle instantly.

"This woman! Did you not hear my catch phrase?!" (Uriel)

Obviously, Uriel had already recovered from the cut.

"Fine. People that don't answer etiquette, I will crush them immediately!!"
(Uriel)

Uriel acknowledges Sasae-chan as an enemy and holds up both hands, and from the surface of those bark arms, a liquid of high viscosity came out.

I thought it was some sort of lacquer, but when it fell to the ground and became a lump, I remembered where I saw it!

"That's a slime!" (Haine)

The earth element monster that intruded in the heroes match!

"Analyzing your attacks, I judge that your specialty is cutting down with that scythe of yours! It doesn't matter how many times you try to cut it, there's no point! Moreover, this guy can melt anything it touches!!" (Uriel)

It is true that this could be considered the natural enemy of the slashing attacks of Sasae-chan.

The menace of the slime was something that we had experienced plenty in the heroes match. The size itself is a lot smaller than that time, but it is still big enough to swallow the adult Sasae-chan whole.

"Now then, melt into nothingness!" (Uriel)

I wonder if I should participate in this as well.

From how things flowed, it is a one on one between Sasae-chan and Uriel, but I should crush the Demon Lords for the sake of humanity.

But I am scared that Sasae-chan unknowingly touches that liquid.

I decided on watching for a timing to enter while using Uriel as a sacrifice to see what the God Hero Sasae-chan can do!

The slime tried to swallow Sasae-chan, but...

*Hyun *Hyun

The earth scythe was swung, creating heavy and sharp sounds.

“Wa?” “Huh?”

Uriel and I could only let out our surprise.

In the blink of an eye, she must have cut several hundreds of times. The slime had turned into small pieces and sprayed to the ground.

Even if it is a liquid slime, there's no way it can return to normal.

It had been cut into such small pieces that it was dispersed by the wind of the forest and didn't return anymore.

“Wa...! What? What?!” (Uriel)

Even Uriel was confused by this and unconsciously retreated a step back.

The Demon Lord that could stun the heroes with a single glare was being overwhelmed by the hero now!

“...Not enough-dasu.” (Sasae)

“Eh?”

“I haven't cut enough. It didn't provide much resistance-dasu. Bring something that gives a better response when being cut. I want to cut a lot-dasuuu!!” (Sasae)

When she finished speaking, she was already in close range to Uriel.

Uriel and I were unable to catch the moment she moved her feet.

*Slash

The body of Uriel had once again been severed.

“Fool! No matter how many times you cut, my body will regenera—!” (Uriel)

*Slash Slash Slash Slash *Slash*

Even when spoke to, Sasae-chan’s arms didn’t stop.

The body of a Demon Lord must be hard. It didn’t go like the time with the slime, but even so, the scythe had sliced through the body of Uriel several tens of times.

“Eh? Wait, wait!!” (Uriel)

“Cut-dasu. Cut-dasu. Cut-dasu. Cut-dasu!!” (Sasae)

What is Sasae-chan thinking when cutting? In defeating the Demon Lord and protecting the peace of the world? I feel like that’s not the case.

Sasae-chan is currently cutting for the sole purpose of cutting.

Is she feeling pleasure from cutting?

“Cut-dasu. Cut-dasu. Cut-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“No, no~~!!” (Uriel)

No matter how many times he was cut into pieces, the regeneration of the Demon Lord surpassed it.

But for the God Hero Sasae-chan, this is most likely something she desired. A toy that no matter how many times you cut, it won’t get broken is right in front of her after all.

“This woman...is not looking at me as an enemy. No, she isn’t even looking at me as a living being!” (Uriel)

Uriel, even when being continuously cut, he looked at the eyes of his opponent and noticed.

What those eyes were reflecting were simply the cut down fragments.

“She is only looking at me as something to cut!” (Uriel)

“Cut-dasu. Cut-dasu. Cut-dasu. Cut-dasu. Cut-dasu. Cut-dasu!”
(Sasae)

“Uwa! Uwa hyaaaaa!!” (Uriel)

The Demon Lord let out a scream.

It was truly a scream of fear.

Something he can’t understand, something that threatens him, something that rejects his very being; people hold fear to those kind of things, and Sasae-chan was currently the very personification of all that in Uriel’s eyes.

“Waaaa!!” (Uriel)

Uriel uses the most earth divine power he could bring out to push Sasae-chan away.

The moment he created distance in that way, he began running at the opposite direction of his opponent.

He ran away.

The Demon Lord Uriel is running away from Sasae-chan.

“Ah, wait-dasu!” (Sasae)

As if she wouldn’t let her long-desired toy escape, she jumped after him and swings her scythe.

This cuts the knees of Uriel, but Uriel didn’t care and continued escaping.

He left the part that would return to normal if he were to stick it together.

“No! Save me! Save me~~~!!” (Uriel)

“Wait-dasu! Let me cut ya more-dasu~~~!!” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan chases after the escaping Uriel.

And so, just like that, the two had gone far away to the point that they had become specks.

“...”

Wait, this isn't the time to be spacing out!

I have to chase after them. I can't let that Sasae-chan alone.

I return to Ishtar Blaze once and ride my flying machine, and immediately fly to the direction the two ran to.

Things have turned south.

A God Hero is a power-up after receiving a part of a God.

But this abnormal strengthening of Sasae-chan, there's no way Sasae-chan would be this maddened even if she were to receive a part of a God.

All of it.

Mantle had poured everything of her into Sasae-chan!

Damn it, that Mother Earth, can't she learn moderation?!

WR – Chapter 325-326: Progress

And so, back to the present.

The running Uriel, the chasing Sasae-chan, and me chasing after them; I didn't think we would go all the way from Ishtar Blaze to Hydra Ville like that!!

“Something like that happened?!” (Karen)

“The small and cute Sasae has become so voluptuous?!” (Mirack)

“What crazy boob size! This is not on the level of being bigger than yourself! It surpasses imagination itself!!” (Celestis)

Karen-san, Mirack, and Celestis who had been listening to the events that led to this were unable to hide their agitation, but what agitated them the most was apparently the boobs of Sasae-chan that had grown far from expectations.

It is to the point that, if those were watermelons, being this big would be excessive moisture and it wouldn't be suitable for sale.

“Damn it! The sparks have swallowed us as well!” (Michael)

“Uriel! Don't get scared over there and help us out! This is a calamity you brought yourself, right?!” (Gabriel)

“Save me! Save me~~!!” (Uriel)

On the other hand, even though the Demon Lords have increased to three, Sasae-chan still acted as if nothing.

Swinging her giant scythe as if it were a meteor shower, she overwhelms the three Demon Lords.

“She is not being pushed back even when she is going against three Demon Lords?! Even if she has become a God Hero, is that even possible?!” (Mirack)

“Or more like, isn't Sasae-chan the one pushing them back?! Michael and the

others can't keep up with the speed of Sasae-chi!!" (Celestis)

"This is not good!" (Karen)

Karen-san panics.

"Let's participate! Let's save the Demon Lords!" (Karen)

Eh?

"Gotcha. Sasae obviously looks like she is not her normal self, and this can't be wrapped up without a fight!" (Mirack)

"But the current Sasae-chi is definitely not normal. Can we come out of this unscathed?" (Celestis)

No no no no!

Am I the weird one for thinking that what Karen-san and the others are saying is strange?

"Uhm, Karen?" (Haine)

"What is it, Haine-san?! I will be asking where you were with Yorishiro-sama after we stop Sasae-chan, okay?!" (Karen)

"That in itself is scary, but...! More importantly, I want to confirm this but, are you really going to stop Sasae-chan in order to save the Demon Lords?!" (Haine)

Am I the one in the wrong to think that it should normally be the other way around?

Because you know, we went through hell in order to bring back Mantle so we could defeat the Demon Lords, you know?

"...Haine-san, I understand what you are trying to say." (Karen)

Karen-san says heavily.

"But in the time Haine-san was absent, the situation changed. We can arrive to an understanding; we can finish this without having the monsters and humans fighting; those possibilities have appeared." (Karen)

"That's how it is, Haine-chi. Even for me, Gabriel is a character I wouldn't like dying here." (Celestis)

“I also wish for a conclusion that Michael can be okay with. For that sake, it would trouble me if he were to die here!!” (Mirack)

What a turn...

To think that even Mirack and Celestis also agreed with this. This isn’t a situation that can be summarized as having a personal difference in opinions.

...Humans and monsters reaching an understanding, she says.

I did hear about the events that transpired at Muspelheim and Hydra Ville from Nova, but until I actually experienced it now, I couldn’t have even imagined it.

To think humans would be able to interact with monsters in a way Gods had no idea was possible; humans are truly amazing.

“And that’s how it is. Let’s go! Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan!” (Karen)

“Got it. All three...!” (Mirack)

“God Hero Mode, activate!!!” (Celestis)

...

Silence.

Obviously, nothing happened.

“Oh no~! The same mistake!” (Karen)

“We can’t become God Heroes without the Gods in the vicinity! This time, not even that cow is here! What should we do?!” (Mirack)

“Jumping into that blade hell in normal mode would be suicidal! Coacervate-sama, come back!!” (Celestis)

Is what Karen-san’s group wails about.

Right, the God Hero mode cannot be activated unless they link with their respective God.

But the Light Goddess Inflation and the Fire God Nova have returned to their own capital, moreover, the unmanageable Water God Coacervate has become a mass of goodwill due to being distilled and, with that overflowing goodwill he

has, he flew out and there's no clue as to where he is.

With this, the three won't be able to become God Heroes and can't help in this crucial moment.

So the God Heroes had such an issue!

“...Issue?” (Haine)

I feel like I heard that word not that long ago...

When I search my memories, I check my own pocket. And then, I take out three gems that look as if they would fetch quite the sum of money if they were to be sold.

“...Uhm, Karen-san.” (Haine)

“Aaah... Could it be that I will end up being a side-character again?! Wait, what is it, Haine-san?” (Karen)

“This...” (Haine)

I place the transparent gem that Yorishiro gave me on Karen-san's palm.

“Wa?! What is this expensive looking thing?! A gem?! Could it be a wedding ring?!” (Karen)

Karen-san, that's just pushing it.

In the first place, it is a gem in the raw. There's nowhere to put your finger in.

“Mirack is a ruby and Celestis is an aquamarine.” (Haine)

“Oh, oh~?” (Mirack)

“Uwa~! Looks expensive! It is hard to find jewelry with such big gems, you know!” (Celestis)

Don't say it as if it were a big potato you found in your stew.

At any rate, a while after the gems of the Gods touched their respective heroes...a bright light was released from the gems.

“Kya?!” “Oh?!” “What in the world is...!”

White light from the diamond; red light from the ruby; blue light from the aquamarine; with these lights radiating from them, the gems were absorbed by

the holy sword, the fire knuckles, and the robe of the heroes and disappear.

It was as if they had fused with their divine tools.

“What what? What in the world happened?” (Celestis)

Everyone was surprised by this and, finally, the result was shown.

A fierce amount of divine power was released from the bodies of Karen-san, Mirack, and Celestis-san as they all turned into God Heroes!

Karen-san released dazzling light from her whole body, Mirack had fire cladding her body, and Celestis had become transparent like water.

“What is the meaning of this? We turned into God Heroes without the permission of the Gods?!” (Mirack)

This is the meaning of those gems.

In order to solve the inconvenience of not being able to turn into God Hero mode unless you have the God by your side, they create a path between the God and the hero.

So those gems were for the sake of creating that path in the divine tools huh.

“I don’t really get it, but this is incredible...!” (Karen)

The shining Karen-san mutters.

“With this, the time for the God Heroes to join forces has come! Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan! Let’s go!” (Karen)

“Yeah! Or more like, this is the first time we see the God Hero figure of Karen!” (Mirack)

“For a moment, I thought you were lying to not be left behind! With this, all three of us God Heroes are on stage!!” (Celestis)

The three God Heroes charge to battle.

The God Hero mode that was thought of in order to defeat the Demon Lords is now being activated in order to save them.

Should I call it irony? ...No, this is definitely what is called as ‘progress’.

Something unbelievable was occurring in front of me.

“No way!!”

The battle should be in our overwhelming favour.

Michael, Gabriel, Uriel; three Demon Lords; Karen-san, Mirack, and Celestis; three God Heroes; with a total of six of the strongest in the world, they are still unable to defeat the God Hero Sasae-chan?!

“[Phoenix Hammer]!!” (Michael)

“[Pleiades Burst]!!” (Mirack)

A simultaneous attack of the Fire Demon Lord and God Hero was well done to the point of being called teamwork, and yet, this wasn’t a threat at all for Sasae-chan.

The fire attacks have high firepower, but are slightly slower, so with Sasae-chan’s speed and body technique, she easily evaded it.

“Not a single attack is hitting! We have no choice but to attack from close range!” (Karen)

“Don’t, Karen-chi! There’s nothing the current Sasae-chi can’t cut with that Earth Scythe! The moment you enter her range, you will be cut in 17 pieces at the very least!” (Celestis)

“The elemental affinities still apply between Demon Lords and God Heroes. We as water element users can’t deal with her earth element!!!” (Gabriel)

“Save me, save me~~!!” (Uriel)

Even if Celestis and Gabriel are afflicted by the disadvantage of element, there’s still six there, and yet, even with that, they can’t do anything. That’s just weird.

As I thought, Sasae-chan is at a place that surpasses that of a God Hero.

Mantle didn’t just give a part of herself, she has poured her everything into Sasae-chan.

The current Sasae-chan is completely fused with a God?!

“Damn it! Let’s also tackle with elemental affinity! If we talk about earth

element, it is wind! Is there no reports of Hyue-chi becoming a God Hero yet?!” (Celestis)

“Raphael! Where did Raphael go?! Uriel, do you know? You get along with that guy, don’t you!” (Gabriel)

“I don’t know! He is also in the middle of planning his attack to the humans!!” (Uriel)

Unable to find an effective way to break through this situation, the new alliance of Demon Lords and heroes that are supposed to be the strongest were panicking.

...Now that it has come to this, it can’t be helped.

“[Dark Matter, Set]!!” (Haine)

I also step into the battlefield where blades were dancing wildly.

The shield I made out of dark matter stopped the Earth Scythe that supposedly can cut anything.

“No way! Haine-chi stopped that scythe?!” (Celestis)

“As I thought, that man alone, I can’t gauge him. As long as Kuromiya Haine exists, the victory of us monsters won’t be possible.” (Michael)

The scythe of Sasae-chan can cut anything because the earth divine power affects the solids and is providing ultimate toughness and sharpness.

That’s why there’s no way the all-erasing dark matter shield wouldn’t be able to stop it.

On top of that, with the second property of the dark matter, gravity manipulation, I repel the scythe that rained upon me.

...The attacks of Sasae-chan were at a level where I have to use both properties of the dark matter in order to block it!

“Stop it already, Sasae-chan!!” (Haine)

I was about to spread the dark matter and cover her in order to capture her, but Sasae-chan retreated speedily before that happened and escapes from the grasp of the dark matter.

She read what I was going to do?!

You are incredibly troublesome to deal with, Sasae-chan!!

“At any rate, this is as far as you go! Stop the fight! It looks like the situation has changed so, in order to properly grasp the current state of things, you have to undo your God Hero mode!!” (Haine)

“Why?!”

?!
That way of speaking!

What came out from the mouth of Sasae-chan were words that were clearly not of Sasae-chan.

This way of speaking...Mantle!

Could it be that by completely fusing with Sasae-chan, she has taken over her body?!

“The Gods have decided it, right? In order to protect the human-sans, we have to eradicate the Demon Lord-sans. That’s the reason why we are giving the hero-sans the power of Gods. That is a God Hero.” (Mantle)

“...”

“The Demon Lords will be defeated by a God Hero. What is the wrong about this? It is good timing that there are three Demon Lords here. Isn’t this the time to defeat them all at once?” (Mantle)

What Mantle was saying with the mouth of Sasae-chan was correct.

It is in her nature to go in a straight line the moment she is determined to do something.

“What’s that?! Is that really Sasae?” (Mirack)

“It’s as if a completely different person is inside her and speaking! I can’t feel a single bit of Sasae-like talk of it!” (Karen)

“Her outer appearance is also like a completely different person. Isn’t this just a completely different person from the very beginning? Did Haine-chi just make a mistake?” (Celestis)

Karen-san and the others began to notice the abnormality and were confused.

Mantle had poured all of her instead of just a part of it, and because of that, the very conscious of Sasae-chan had been pushed away somewhere and the control of the body had been changed!

“...Light, Fire, and Water hero-sans, I am Mantle -Mother Earth God, Mantle.”
(Mantle)

“““?!”””

Mantle spoke directly to Karen-san and the others?!

“I have heard about your achievements from Nova-san and Coacervate-san. You are doing your best for the sake of the people. That’s worthy of praise.”
(Mantle)

“Ah, thank you?” (Karen)

And they weren’t able to keep pace of the conversation due to the characteristic atmosphere of Mantle.

“I will also learn from you people and be of use to the human-sans this time for sure. I will do my best to eradicate the Demon Lord-sans so, can you please not get in the way?” (Mantle)

“No no no no!!” (Karen)

As expected, they couldn’t just let that slip by.

“Please wait! It is true that the Demon Lords and humans were antagonistic at first, but it has changed! A new possibility has appeared, a path where there’s no fighting!” (Karen)

“In order to cross that path, I want you to please stop the battle right now! Oh God, we ask of you!” (Mirack)

“Or more like, the Mother Earth God is talking from the mouth of Sasae-chi. Doesn’t that mean her body has been taken over?! Isn’t that the same as what the dirty Coacervate did to Gabriel?!” (Celestis)

As expected of Celestis, she noticed that part.

Mantle places a finger on Sasae-chan's cheek and says.

"Is there any good for the human-sans in walking that different path?"
(Mantle)

"""Eh?"""

It was difficult to answer immediately at this question.

"When asked suddenly about that...I don't know what to answer!" (Karen)

"Humans and monsters coexisting, right? What kind of effect this will bring... I haven't really thought that far yet." (Mirack).

"It would become a complex problem in terms of society. Philosophically as well. What is life? What are the standards that separate a living being from one that is not? What about the cycle of hate that has transpired until now? The more I think, the more convoluted it becomes!!" (Celestis)

Karen-san and the others were thrown into a labyrinth of thoughts!

On the other hand, the line of action of Mantle was incredibly clear.

"The Demon Lord-sans are really dangerous existences planning to destroy the human-sans. That's why I will eliminate them. If I save the human-sans from danger, I will be of use to the human-sans this time for sure!" (Mantle)

Now that I think about it, in the incident with Grandma Wood, the actions of Mantle were simplistic to a fault.

In order to live, humans work, fight, and shoulder pain. 'If I take away that pain from them, they can become happy', that logic of hers was incredibly simple. However, humans can't be defined only as simple. Living has suffering in it, but there's also happiness and joy.

She compiled them all into suffering and thought about taking it all away. That's way too rash.

That's why Mantle and I were unable to reach an understanding and I had to erase her into the Black Hole.

Her simple-mindedness was so strong that anything complicated couldn't enter her head.

Are we going to be at odds again because of her simple-mindedness and end up having no choice but to continue the path where humans and monsters have to fight until one side perishes?

WR – Chapter 327-328: Denying a God

- 327: Denying a God

“God! God of the earth!!”

A different voice enters the discussion of the God and heroes.

The serious voice of the Demon Lord Michael that sounded as if he was shouldering the world.

“Are you saying the Gods don’t forgive the existence of Demon Lords? Are you saying monsters are living beings that shouldn’t hold hearts?” (Michael)

“No. Monsters are not even living beings. They are tools.” (Mantle)

The so clear response of Mantle made Michael gulp his breath audibly.

“Tools created by the Gods for the sake of the Gods. The Gods that were flustered by how the humans stopped praying after civilization developed created monsters so that they would pray again. If monsters threaten the humans, they would look for help by praying.” (Mantle)

“Oi, wasn’t an unbelievable reality revealed just now?” (Mirack)

“Meaning that they were pumps the Gods set up? The Gods are unexpectedly sly.” (Celestis)

The humans were showing agitation at one of the world’s secrets that was revealed by Mantle as if it were a passing thought.

“You are the tools used in order for humans to pray, so there’s no need for tools to have hearts. That’s why we created monsters out of pure divine power and didn’t place a soul in them. It isn’t possible for things like that to have a heart.” (Mantle)

“...Kugh!” (Michael)

Michael silently tightened his fists.

"You monsters have deviated from the duty that us Gods have set for you. That's why you must be destroyed. Monsters were created for the sake of humans, and yet, if those monsters were to destroy those humans, it would go against their purpose." (Mantle)

Everything about Mantle is simple and straight, and that made it hard to refute.

And yet, this feeling of wanting to refute it with all they had...everyone in this place felt that way.

An argument that has no place where to hit -this might be what you would call the weight of a God's words.

"I also ask! Earth God!" (Uriel)

Uriel speaks now.

He was utterly in fear due to the blade hell of Sasae-chan but, right now, his body was overflowing with strength.

His cut off leg had already been regenerated, even if it was a hasty job.

"I...was born from the earth mother that you had created." (Uriel)

Earth Mother Monster, Grandma Wood.

"Those memories may be hazy, but I have inherited them. You say that monsters were originally made to do evil to the humans that had forgotten their prayers, but I think that only us earth monsters are different." (Uriel)

It is exactly right.

The only type of monster that Grandma Wood gave birth to were Golems. Different from the other monsters, they obeyed the orders of humans and lived together with humans.

That's why the people of Ishtar Blaze that worship Mantle had grown fond of the Golems and respected Grandma Wood as they called it 'Great Pillar-sama'.

Until the great fall that Mantle created, that is.

"I was against the other Gods. Even if humans didn't pray to me, I wanted to

be of use to them. That's why I created monsters that would help humans rather than ones that attacked them." (Mantle)

"The birth of Golems had that kind of reason behind it..." (Karen)

"But Earth Demon Lord-san, I didn't think that an existence like you would be born under this feeling of 'wanting to help humans' that I placed when creating Golems. Same as the other Demon Lord-sans, to try and destroy the human-sans... It is completely contrary to the wishes of your creator. Truly bad kids." (Mantle)

Mantle announces.

"I will be destroying you for the sake of the human-sans." (Mantle)

"Don't joke around!" (Uriel)

Uriel's voice was filled with anger.

What was overflowing from his body was resentment.

"We were born for the sake of humans...for the sake of Gods? Where is our own reason for living?! Are you saying that it is wrong to live for our own sake?!" (Uriel)

"It is exactly as Uriel-san says!" (Karen)

Karen-san agrees to the words of the demon.

"No matter the living being, even if it doesn't have a soul, it should still have the right to live for their own sake! No one can deny that!!" (Karen)

"No matter if you are a God, there's no way it is okay for you to arbitrarily decide the fate of the ones living on the surface world! Humans might end up getting that treatment as well, so I can't say that this is someone else's problem!" (Celestis)

"As I thought, we will be completely in opposition to this! Also, return Sasae's body! Her body is not something that a God can do whatever they want with it!" (Mirack)

The human team was obviously against the words of Mantle.

"It goes without saying that we will also be fighting." (Michael)

“The Water God has already given us his blessing, so I will be going against it with confidence.” (Gabriel)

Michael and Gabriel were obviously in fighting stance.

There was not a single one in favor of Mantle.

“Eh? Eh? Uhm...uhm...!” (Mantle)

Seeing this situation, the usual habit of hers appears.

“But...I am doing this for the sake of the human-sans. I was thinking of being useful to the human-sans!” (Mantle)

“And we are saying that’s unneeded consideration! We humans don’t need your help!!” (Celestis)

Celestis gave the final blow with her sharp tongue.

“Mantle.” (Haine)

I couldn’t just stay silent either.

Bringing her back might have really been a mistake.

Her way too simplistic way of acting, no matter how much you think for the sake of humans, it doesn’t end up being good for the humans.

Before an irreversible catastrophe occurs, I might have to erase her once again into the deep depths of the Black Hole.

“In the end, it looks like no matter what we say, we won’t reach an understanding.” (Haine)

Even the Dark God Entropy, that is considered as the ultimate God, can’t change her.

To try and connect this Mother Earth God to the other existences.

“That’s not true-dasu!!”

“?????/?!!!!/?????”

Eh?!

That voice just now...?!

The voice that only had the words of Mantle coming out...this time around, the words of someone else came out.

The real owner of that voice.

"This Earth Hero, Gonbee Sasae! If it be the words of the Mother Earth, Mantle-sama, I be following 'em no matter what they be-dasu! That be the way of the Earth nation-dasu!!" (Sasae)

- 328: Foolish God

"Sasae-chan?!" "Sasae?!" "Sasae-chi?!"

The ones who were agitated by the sudden mention of this name were her very friends, Karen-san, Mirack, and Celestis.

"As I thought, is that really Sasae-chan?! It is hard to believe but, is it really Sasae-chan?!" (Karen)

"Yes, I am-dasu! The incompetent, Gonbee Sasae! Even if mah boobs got bigger, I still be everyone's friend-dasu!!" (Sasae)

Sasae-chan says with strength.

It looks like her body wasn't taken over even when Mantle was residing in it.

"More importantly, what be this-dasu ka?! Everyone ganging up on us. Don't go bullying our God Mantle-sama-dasu! I be stepping in and say no-dasu!!" (Sasae)

Is what Sasae-chan says with a bad temper.

What is the meaning of this?!

"Uhm...but you see, Sasae-chan, we can't agree to what Mantle-sama said. Monsters are already not the same as before—!" (Karen)

"I don't care about that-dasu!!" (Sasae)

""""Eeeh?!""""

Her statements were completely absurd and, everytime she enforces her words, her boobs shake, which overwhelmed the three young ladies.

It also overwhelmed me.

“The important thing be whether I believe in mah God or not-dasu! In the face of the words of mah God, everything else be a trifling matter-dasu!!”
(Sasae)

“Eeh?! I don’t think it is such a trifling matter though!” (Karen)

“Karen-nee chan, Mirack-nee chan, and Celestis-nee chan; each one of ya have yer own God ye believe in-dasu. And fer me, that be Mantle-sama-dasu. It be because we believe in our God that those words be priceless, ain’t it-dasu ka?!”
(Sasae)

“B-But...” (Karen)

“That be why, if it be the words of Mantle-sama, I will follow ‘em-dasu! No need for context-dasu! I will cut the Demon Lord-sans, stick ‘em up, and cut ‘em up again-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“Torture?!” (Haine)

To think Sasae-chan would agree with Mantle!

“Doesn’t this feel like deja vu?” (Celestis)

“You think so too, Celestis? Actually, I also do!” (Mirack)

Is what Mirack and Celestis say.

“The first time we met Sasae-chan, she had received an oracle from the Mother Earth God, and when we showed opposition to those words, Sasae-chan got angry and it even ended up in a fight!” (Karen)

“And now, Mantle is speaking personally and, when we went against it, Sasae-chi got angry!” (Celestis)

“It will definitely fall into the same pattern!” (Mirack)

For the five Grand Churches, the Gods they worship are absolute existences.

Denying them can even end up in killing.

Sasae-chan is faithfully applying this, and she is about to apply it now.

“Mantle-sama created the earth we stand, sit, and sleep in, and she also nurtures the food that we eat everyday-dasu! She even sent Golems that were the friends of humans. Not believing in the Mother Earth God-sama after all this

would be ungrateful-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“Sasae-chan!!” (Karen)

“The people of the Earth nation believe in Mother Earth-sama in anything and everything-dasu! Someone that doesn’t believe ain’t religious-dasu! Oi, the Demon Lord there!” (Sasae)

“Yes?!” (Uriel)

Being pointed the scythe at him, Uriel was greatly scared.

“What ya gonna do-dasu? By the will of Mantle-sama, I will be destroying ya-dasu. If ye don’t want that, ya better fight back-dasu!” (Sasae)

“Eh?”

“In mah Ishtar Blaze, when we don’t know whose side be the correct one, there be only one thing the Earth people do-dasu! Kill each other-dasu! The one that dies be the one in the wrong-dasu! Got that-dasu ka?!” (Sasae)

“Eeeeeeh?!”

It was quite the messed up statement.

But...

“Oh my! Oh my! My hero-san will believe in me?!” (Mantle)

“Obviously course-dasu! Someone that doesn’t believe saying they be followers would be the lie-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“This is...the first time I have been told that... I am so happy!” (Mantle)

Before coming here, the grandma of Sasae-chan told me this: ‘Sasae-chan resembles herself’.

When she was young, she looked absent-minded and as if she lacked the ability to think, but that’s exactly why she was able to push through with a clear mind and head straight towards what she believed in.

What was born from this was the legend that would make even crying children silent, the ‘Taker by the roots’.

Sasae-chan had inherited that trait almost completely and possesses the

ability to believe in something blindly like her grandma.

A domain that half-baked sagaciousness wouldn't be able to reach; a foolishness that knows no bounds.

"...Let's try leaving it in Sasae-chan's hands." (Haine)

"Haine-san?!" (Karen)

My decision created confusion in my surroundings, but I felt like betting on it.

At times, the foolishness of Sasae-chan would be the source of trouble and would irritate the short-fused ones. But that foolishness also, at times, can change the impossible to possible.

It is not some plain foolishness, it is an extra-large foolishness inherited from the blood of a legend.

It might be able to achieve big things that the regular intelligent ones wouldn't be able to achieve!

Achieve things that even I, the Dark God Entropy, gave up on...

"The way too simplistic heart of Mantle; trying to connect it to others is impossible, but she might be able to make that impossible into reality." (Haine)

In this battle with the Demon Lords, the humans have even managed to change the hearts of the Demon Lords.

In that case, she should be able to change the heart of a God too —with that trusting heart of hers that's on the level of being foolish.

"Stand up and accept the challenge, Uriel." (Michael)

"Eh?!" (Uriel)

"You will fight alone." (Michael)

Michael spoke to him from the back and the tree human Demon Lord trembled heavily at those words.

"It looks like each of us Demon Lords have to be tested -in what we are and what we should do. We have to fight our own battles and reach those answers." (Michael)

“No, what are you saying, Michael?” (Uriel)

“In this stage where the earth hero and Earth God are standing, Uriel, this is no doubt your stage as well. Gabriel and I have done our fight too and we got a vague view of the path we should advance on. Uriel, you must take that step as well!” (Michael)

The Fire Demon Lord says this with burning passion.

“Even if you currently don’t have a decision, one should appear after battle! Clash to your heart’s content! Clash, break, mix those broken pieces, to the point that you can’t even tell what was its previous form, and find an answer that you haven’t found until now!! ...In other words, let there be hot-bloodedness!!” (Michael)

Ah.

Now that those words have come out, he has no choice but to accept.

“Ah geez! I get it!!” (Uriel)

Uriel shouts annoyed.

“That was my intention in the first place anyways!! Earth hero, if I fight you and win, that means I should be the one to keep on living! I will bring judgement. Monsters are the ones who should keep on living in this surface world!” (Uriel)

“That’s the spirit-dasu! Makes it worth cutting-dasu yo!!” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan was her charming self as always as she takes a stance with her all-cutting scythe.

“Well then, let’s begin-dasu! A battle where I will believe thoroughly in Mantle-sama and will decide the way of living of the Demon Lord-sans-dasu!! No grudges no matter who dies-dasu yo!!” (Sasae)

WR – Chapter 329-331: Like a maelstrom

“Was this really okay, Haine-san?” (Karen)

It couldn’t be helped that Karen-san would ask with uneasiness.

The one on one battle with Uriel and Sasae was decided in a truly weird sequence of events.

We all had no choice but to turn to spectators, but I think it can’t be helped.

“Mantle is a God that moves with a simple line of thought, so she can’t be convinced with complicated logic. It is similar to Sasae-chan. Unless we use something that surpasses logic, it won’t work.” (Haine)

“And you are saying that ‘something’ is a fight?” (Mirack)

It may not be the best choice, but that’s the only effective method I can think of.

I don’t know at all what result this battle will bring about, but we have no choice but to believe it will be a good one as we watch over it.

“...That may be fine for Sasae-chan and Mother Earth-sama, but Uriel-san who is their opponent is just...!” (Karen)

“Well, I can only say that he should just go along with it!” (Haine)

I am beginning to feel sorry for that Demon Lord.

“Uryaaaa! Now that it has come to this, I will do this thoroughly!” (Uriel)

The person himself is getting pissed off after all.

“Uriel is unexpectedly a scaredy-cat isn’t he. To get so agitated just because he got cornered...” (Gabriel)

“Looks like he is still far from hot-bloodedness.” (Michael)

The other two Demon Lords were mannerly watching over it as well.

“Be sure to watch, how the serious Earth Demon Lord looks!!” (Uriel)

Uriel bends his body and flaps the two branch-like wings from his back heavily.

Their shape resembles that of wings but, as expected, they are still wood.

Those two branch wings of his grew wide at an incredible rate, and then, drew a spiral towards the heavens, and became a tree.

That size and the way the leaves spread, it is like...!

“It looks like Great Pillar-sama-dasu!!” (Sasae)

It was like the Earth Mother Monster that gave birth to him, Grandma Wood.

Of course, compared to the Grandma Wood that spread through Ishtar Blaze as if covering it whole, it is a lot smaller. But even if it is mini-sized, there's a feeling of grandeur to it.

There's no doubt this trait had been inherited from his mother.

“What's surprising is still to come. Watch and be in awe!!” (Uriel)

Something was released from the spread out tree.

Bang Bang Bang Bang

They were shot out at incredible speed, like bullets. Several hundreds were being shot from the whole tree at rapid fire.

They flew diagonally downwards and hit the ground, raising heavy dust clouds.

“Uwa! Dangerous!” (Karen)

“Wait, Uriel?! If you are going to fight, be mindful of your surroundings! It would hurt if it hits us!” (Celestis)

It is true that it was quite the amazing rapid fire. Decent enough to be used as an attack, but the things that look like bullets were buried in the ground, and the opponent Sasae-chan doesn't have a single scratch.

What is Uriel trying to do?

“Kukuku! If you want to know the answer, strain your eyes and look carefully.

At what I shot." (Uriel)

"Eh? That is...!" (Haine)

Straining my eyes, I caught on.

What was dug into the ground was a block that was big enough to hold in one hand.

I remember that shape...

"The Golem's core, a Life Block!" (Haine)

A Golem is in basis just a lump of earth in human shape, but it is not as if they come out as giants from the very beginning.

They will first be born as blocks from Grandma Wood and, by using that as the core, they gather earth and stones around the area to form the humanoid shape.

Right now, that's exactly what's happening.

The several hundreds of Life Blocks Uriel shot were changing into Golems and became a big army commanded by Uriel!

"Are you surprised at my Golem army?" (Uriel)

Uriel had already returned the tree-form of his wings back to normal.

"Uriel can also create Golems?!" (Haine)

"Apparently, the Demon Lords have inherited the ability to make monsters from the Mother Monsters. If that wasn't the case, the monsters wouldn't be born anymore after the death of the Mother Monsters after all." (Karen)

Karen-san explained it to me.

"It is actually an ultimate technique that I had saved in order to swallow your cities whole, but now that it has come to this, I don't need to show any restrain. With these army of several hundreds of Golems, I will beat you to a pulp!!" (Uriel)

Is what he says as he moves way back at the rear of the Golem army.

"That guy, isn't he actually so scared that he is hiding in the shadows of the

Golems?" (Gabriel)

"A man too far away from being hot-blooded." (Michael)

His comrade Demon Lords were also being quite the harsh judges.

On the other hand, Sasae-chan who had witnessed the sudden spawning of the Golem army...

"What a...! What a great thing-dasu!!" (Sasae)

Was actually moved.

"The Golems that I thought wouldn't be born ever again...have once again been born! There be nothing as happy as this-dasu!" (Sasae)

"Eh?" (Uriel)

As expected of the Golem-loving Sasae-chan.

Now that I think about it, Sasae-chan's undivided attention to the Golems was admirable.

After the incident with Grandma Wood going berserk, the Golems were about to be made into the bad guys, but the one who covered for them was Sasae-chan.

That's why Golems still continue being the friends of humans in Ishtar Blaze.

"As thanks for showing me something so good, I will also be pouring mah own bit-dasu!!" (Sasae)

The dynamite body Sasae-chan, who is filled with power thanks to Mantle, hits the ground with her Earth Scythe, Sita.

"That stance is...!" (Haine)

Sasae-chan's new technique, the alchemy refined Golem that doesn't require a Life Block!

And then, just as I thought, resonating with the divine power that Sasae-chan poured, a beautiful female-shaped Golem appeared from the ground.

Just that...there was one thing that I didn't think would happen.

The numbers...

“Waaa?!”

The Golems refined by Sasae-chan were not only limited to one.

There were 2, 3, 4, 5, 8, 10, 20, 30, 40, 50...hundreds...

An incredible amount of Goddess Golems appeared at the surroundings of Sasae-chan.

“This is...the true power of the God Hero Sasae-chan?!” (Haine)

In the past, she could only make one, and it was not on a level where she could use it in battle, and yet, in the blink of an eye, she could now make several hundreds.

Are you saying that's how much outrageous her divine power has increased?!

“...Now that I think about it, Sasae-chan has still not used a Golem in battle since the time she became a God Hero!” (Haine)

“W-What do you mean by that, Haine-san?” (Karen)

“The earth heroes are divided in two types: the ones that fight in close quarters with their scythe, and the ones that fight controlling Golems. But Sasae-chan fights in the frontlines while controlling Golems. She was thinking of doing both of those at the same time.” (Haine)

She was struggling heavily in how difficult this endeavour was.

“By becoming a God Hero, even that problem might have been overcome. Her natural ability of controlling Golems has increased and her skills with the scythe rose to the level of Yoneko-san.” (Haine)

Her body has grown and she now has a body that can properly swing her big scythe after all.

“And yet, Sasae-chan has been using only her scythe in battle until now — without using her specialty that are Golems.” (Haine)

“Meaning that Sasae-chan has not been showing half her strength until now?!” (Karen)

Even with that, she fought with three Demon Lords and God Heroes at the same time and didn't lose.

How much potential is inside of Sasae-chan?!

And there's also another thing. The abnormal fight that would be beginning now, I couldn't just not falter at it.

Uriel had brought out his strength as the Earth Demon Lord to make several hundreds of Golems; Sasae-chan followed fit and refined an army of Goddess Golems.

A Golem army and a Golem army are about to battle.

If they were to clash, there's no way this will wrap up as just a one on one match.

- 330: Golem Corps

"This be the ultimate technique of the God Hero Sasae! I call it 'Earth Conquering Female Corps'-dasu!!" (Sasae)

A swarming Goddess Golem army.

In the past, a single one of those would make us speechless, and yet, now it has several of them appearing at once. It has already surpassed shock and reached the point where I don't even know what reaction to make.

On the other hand, Uriel had also created several hundreds of Golems.

The current situation is that it is expected to be a Golem army vs Golem army group battle.

"This...! Just what kind of situation will this bring?!" (Celestis)

The spectators were unable to stay calm at this situation.

The first one to raise her voice in this place that felt as if we were inside a sealed bag was Celestis.

Mirack also answers this.

"I don't know! But it is certain that this battle will turn into one that we haven't experienced before!" (Mirack)

"It is a battle of a group against a group after all. Until now, we have fought against one Giant monster at a time, but fighting many with many is not

something I have done before!" (Celestis)

"Even if it is a large scale battle, it just feels different in nature! It is as if this were like the time the Churches were at war!" (Karen)

It is just as the trio says.

This is already a mass battle between Uriel and Sasae-chan.

It is on a scale where, rather than calling it a battle, it would be more fitting to call it a war.

Even I can't predict what kind of fight this will turn out into.

"Fufu! Isn't that fine. This is a completely different type of battle until now. It is fitting for the Demon Lord Uriel!! In that case, your Golem army and my Golem army; let's decide which one is the strongest one!!" (Uriel)

"No, before that!!" (Sasae)

Is what the adult Sasae-chan says with her hand raised.

But, can't something be done about those boobs of hers that shake at every single action of hers?

Everytime my gaze gravitates to them, Karen-san pokes my sides.

"Cutting each other out of pure hatred be inelegant-dasu!! Before the sparks fly, how about appraising each other's goods-dasu?!" (Sasae)

"Goods?! Appraising?!" (Uriel)

A sudden unexpected development!

"Uriel-dono. About the Golems ya made-dasu ga, they truly be made with loyalty to the basics-dasu." (Sasae)

"Huh?!" (Uriel)

"It can even be said that they be Golems born naturally without any sort of outside influence-dasu. There be only the necessities and they probably be able to work efficiently, but it be the truth that I don't feel a single sense of individuality in 'em and it feels like something be missing-dasu!" (Sasae)

"What are you trying to say?!" (Uriel)

The question of Uriel is natural.

The Golems that Uriel created are indeed regular ones that use a Life Block to gather the earth around with simplistic legs and arms.

Compared to the Goddess Golems of Sasae-chan, Uriel's feel like they are way too simple in making.

"The Goddess Golems of Sasae-chan are obviously made with the female body as its motif; a design overflowing with allure. The thinness of its waist and the charming curves that entice the viewer. It is indeed beautiful, but, at the same time, it creates insecurity in the work and adds an unnecessary step into the creation of it. It can be said it is inefficient." (Celestis)

"Celestis-chan?!" (Karen)

Celestis-chan is giving a commentary about it.

"If it is in cultural terms, leave it to the hero of the sightseeing city Hydra Ville, Celestis-chan! We have imported a large amount of potteries created from the good earth there. I have seen a lot of them, so my eyes are trained. I can serve as the commentator!" (Celestis)

We didn't ask for a commentator though!

"Sasae-chi's Golems are truly works that have 'beauty' as their theme! They may be humanoid but, in the end, they are simply tools for manual labour, however, by giving them a gender, it makes it possible for them to charm the people that see it —truly a bold thought!" (Celestis)

"Incredible! This is also culture, isn't it?!" (Gabriel)

Gabriel bit?!

What's with the water element people all the time?!

"Being molded by the gone mother of Sasae-chi, there's also a motherly feeling added onto the beauty it has. Truly a complex making! Because of this complexity, it doesn't fall into the category of being a dirty piece of art that was only made to invite the carnal desires! There's even a feeling authority from it! Holiness! In other words, a Saint!" (Celestis)

"I be grateful for yer high evaluation-dasu." (Sasae)

The no-holds barred evaluation of Celestis makes Sasae-chan thank her.

“When looking at the Golems of Uriel after that...as I thought, they are so simple it is saddening.” (Celestis)

“Wa?!” (Uriel)

“No affection placed on them, it is as if saying ‘I made them on the spot’. Couldn’t you put a bit more of a...strong-like look to them?” (Celestis)

The way too honest comment of Celestis making Uriel distracted was inevitable.

“What stupid things are you saying, human! My kinfolk Golems are earth element monsters! Monsters decorating themselves; are you telling me to imitate humans?!” (Uriel)

And he exploded.

“But Uriel, weren’t you pretty bothered by your outward appearance?” (Gabriel)

“Gabriel?!” (Uriel)

The Demon Lord was shot from the back.

“The bark that you took off because you were hit by Kuromiya Haine, you said that you didn’t like the shade of black it had when it regenerated, so you took a hell lot of time in it. What should have taken a few days to go back to normal, took several weeks. I even thought, ‘aren’t you an idiot?’.” (Gabriel)

Now that I think about it, he did say something to that effect...

“I don’t count! I am a Demon Lord after all! As the Lord of the demons, I have to show fitting majesty!” (Uriel)

“A hot-bloodedness that is understandable.” (Michael)

Michael nods at it.

“Compared to that, Golems are only weak monsters and there should be a fitting look for the small fry. There’s this many, so I don’t have the time to be placing details on each and every one of them!” (Uriel)

“Putting details ain’t entering in the adorning category-dasu.” (Sasae)

And Sasae-chan once again joins in the discussion.

Or more like, this conversation is still continuing?!

What about the fight?!

- 331: Unfortunate mishaps

For some reason, the Golem design opinions are still ongoing.

“I also like the simple Golems that don’t have deliberate decorations-dasu.”
(Sasae)

Is what Sasae-chan points out.

Sasae-chan’s tone of voice had become like that of a beauty after turning into an adult and, for some mysterious reason, it also gave it more weight in her words.

“Golems that be made just for the sake of working without any unnecessary decorations. But even with that, they still have limbs and face-dasu. At times, I feel kindness in their expressions-dasu.” (Sasae)

“I-I see?” (Uriel)

“Golems that don’t return to Life Blocks after a long while of being formed, slowly have their surface covered by moss, and color begins to be painted in what be once earthen color-dasu. When I see Golems that can only look like that after having passed such a long time...!” (Sasae)

Yes...?!

“I feel like, ‘Muhyaaaa’-dasu!.” (Sasae)

I see, I don’t understand!

“A learning experience! This is a learning experience! As expected of the opinion of an habitant, their opinions just have a different taste!” (Celestis)

And Celestis began to memo it with passion?!

Like really, isn’t this already entering a domain where only a certain type of people can understand?!

“Of course, the Golems that Uriel-dono made as well...!” (Sasae)

“Uriel-dono?!” (Uriel)

What path is this thing taking?!

“...Since they be made just now, ye can’t search fer a depth that can only be found with accumulated time-dasu. The structure of the Golems be simple, so that kind of depth makes it more interesting though-dasu!” (Sasae)

“Here, Sensei!” (Gabriel)

Sensei?!

Gabriel raised her hand and called Sasae-chan.

“Then, in the current state, you are saying Uriel’s Golems can’t match yours?! In front of Sensei’s Golems that exude feminine charm and have an elegance to them, the seedy-looking Golems of Uriel are inferior!” (Gabriel)

“Don’t call them seedy-looking!” (Uriel)

Sasae-chan answers the question of Gabriel.

“That ain’t the case-dasu. It be true that Uriel-dono’s Golems be of simple making, but within this form that requires a minimum degree of shape, there are also individual traits that inevitably appear-dasu.” (Sasae)

Is what Sasae-chan says as she moves her gaze to the Golems made by Uriel.

“As expected of Golems made directly by a Demon Lord, the skill of the maker be showing directly in it-dasu. For example; the shoulder width!” (Sasae)

She points around its shoulder.

“Its shoulders are wider than the regular Golem and it gives it a threatening look-dasu ga, however, as expected, this be the form it took after having the thought of ‘I will defeat ya!'-dasu. Of course...!” (Sasae)

Sasae...-sensei?

“...The build be well made and that links into it being good in physical ability-dasu. It can be said that this line of thought of Uriel-dono be directly affecting the strength of the Golems-dasu.” (Sasae)

“W-Well, obviously. They are Golems made personally by the Demon Lord after all!” (Uriel)

Looks like Uriel wasn't against that part at all.

"But everything can be bad when there be too much-dasu." (Sasae)

"What?!" (Uriel)

"The Golems of Uriel-dono... maybe because it took shape from yer desire to not lose, both fists have become quite big-dasu." (Sasae)

Sasae-chan says this as she directly touches the forearm of the Uriel-made Golems.

"Of course, with the logic of a hammer, when the end be bigger and heavier, the stronger the destructive power it has when hitting-dasu. However, the heavier it be, the harder it be to control also applies. More so when you make a part that be from its main body so big. It be natural that its movements would be affected-dasu." (Sasae)

"Ugh!" (Uriel)

Now that she mentions it, the hands of Uriel's Golems are big enough that it would affect the balance of the Golems.

Even in my amateur eyes, I could notice after it was pointed out.

Those kind of small inconsistencies are what decide the victory in a battle at times.

"It goes without saying in terms of functionality. When evaluating in terms of looks, rather than calling it a human, it would be more fitting to describe it as a monkey-dasu. It feels as if ye got too stuck in yer zeal-dasu na. In order to make a creative work, it be important to have passion, but if that passion be poured all into yer creations, the technique gets overwritten-dasu." (Sasae)

"Shut up!!" (Uriel)

Must have been a sense of opposition towards the dry evaluation of Sasae-chan, Uriel roars.

"I silently hear you out but, what are you trying to say for a while now?! The Golems are my limbs; tools of battle! Isn't it fine to not put so much spirit into each and every single one of those tools?!" (Uriel)

“Even though you got angry when Mantle told you that monsters are tools?”
(Haine)

“Ugh!” (Uriel)

I reflexively spoke out and Uriel choked his words.

Because, you know...I couldn’t just not say anything about that.

“You can’t say to others what you yourself got angry when being told that. Rather, the people of Ishtar Blaze placed their heart and soul for generations into the Golems that have only been hollow shells, and with that accumulation over accumulation, you as a Demon Lord with a heart was born. Isn’t that right?” (Haine)

“Guh... No way... There’s just no way...!” (Uriel)

Uriel couldn’t refute it, and within that confusion of his, more strikes were sent.

“Honestly accept the advice, Uriel. Isn’t this a good chance to absorb the culture of humans?” (Gabriel)

“Gabriel?!” (Uriel)

“Being sportsmanlike is also part of being hot-blooded, Uriel.” (Michael)

“Even Michael?!” (Uriel)

Even his comrades were ganging up on him.

“Gngh! Gunununu!! I get it, geez. In that case, let’s decide this clearly!” (Uriel)

He finally snapped.

“Which Golem is better; we will decide in battle! Destroy each other, and the one that remains is the superior Golem. The perfect way to decide that no one can complain about. In the first place, we were intending to fight, and yet, why hasn’t it begun yet?!” (Uriel)

It is exactly as Uriel says.

The fanfare of war has finally been sounded.

“I accept yer challenge-dasu! A battle of Golems that has never been seen

before will be taking place here! Let this victory be witnessed clearly by Mother Earth Mantle-sama!!" (Sasae)

"Yes! I will clearly witness it!!" (Mantle)

Even so, it still felt like we were in a festival of some sort.

WR – Chapter 332-334: Tactics

- 332: Tactics

Just like this, hundreds of Golems clash and a big battle began.

A big war was unfolding right before our eyes.

We spectators might get dragged in it, so we were watching the battle from a pretty faraway location that allowed us to see the whole picture.

The view from there was truly a battle where you wash blood with blood... Well, the ones fighting there are Golems, so there's no blood though. In substitute, clouds of dust were made as their rocky body was broken and the location was noisy.

The basic Golems of Uriel and Sasae-chan's refined Goddess Golems had mixed and was in a chaotic state as they destroyed each other.

When the basic Golems destroy the head of the Goddess Golems with their fists, the Goddess Golems would sever the Basic ones with their swordhand.

Even when they are broken and fall, new ones are continuously made from the back, so destruction with destruction overlapped without showing signs of ending.

It is truly a battle; truly a war.

It was clearly a different type of battle to the ones we have experienced until now.

“It is kind of...scary!” (Karen)

Karen-san, who had overcome several trials and tribulations from the many giant monsters she has defeated, was feeling fear from this —this sight where Golems are being destroyed one after the other.

“Sasae is fighting in a way so that doesn’t destroy the Life Blocks of the enemy Golems. The Golems of Sasae were shaped from her divine power so, as long as Sasae herself is in good shape, they can come back as many times as they want. They are destined to return to the earth when their divine power is taken away.” (Mirack)

Mirack was watching this with a stout heart.

“But, this just...doesn’t feel right. As I thought, battles should be done one on one. Group battles don’t go with my nature.” (Mirack)

And she also said words that were truly fitting of a person of the Fire nation.

On the other hand...

“The cruel battlefield, the noise of drearily resounding clashes; conflicts truly make the heart of people race and stir!” (Celestis)

Celestis was saying some strange things.

“Why is it that I am shaken by this important war-like battle and compositions are flowing one after the other inside of me?! New songs are overflowing inside of me and are not stopping! At this rate, by the next live, I might be able to have one with all new songs!!” (Celestis)

“Incredible. This is also culture, isn’t it!!” (Gabriel)

And Gabriel once again rides on it.

“Let there be hot-bloodedness.” (Michael)

To finish, Michael mutters this with his arms crossed.

“I can only describe this battlefield with those words. I understand that this is too rough of a description and it doesn’t capture it all. In order to grasp and feel it all, I still need to learn a lot of words and values.” (Michael)

That’s right.

And then, after learning it all and being able to separate the things that are unnecessary, you will steadily take out the unnecessary parts and, in the end, you will return to those words again —Let there be hot-bloodedness.

“But the ones learning the most in this battle are the ones who are actually in

it, Uriel and that hero girl. In this battle, just what will they learn and what kind of answer will they reach? I will be watching over this." (Michael)

Time passed and the state of things was slowly tilting to one side.

Within the repetition of Basic Golems breaking and Goddess Golems breaking, the amount of times the Goddess Golems were being destroyed was slowly increasing.

It looked as if Uriel and Sasae-chan were making new Golems one after the other, but...as I thought, there's no mistake. Uriel is slowly pushing it to his favour.

"Kukuku... What's the matter? Aren't your Golems brittle?" (Uriel)

"Kugh...-dasu!!" (Sasae)

Even from afar, we could see that the adult Sasae-chan had a strained expression.

"This is the reality! Unrelated to things like appearance and elegance; in the end, the true value of Golems is their strength! Rather than your Golems that have unnecessary things added to them, my Golems that are simply aimed at strength are stronger! That's the simple reality!" (Uriel)

*Crash!

Another Goddess Golem broke from the punch of the regular Golem.

The same thing was occurring here and there in the battlefield.

"Not good-dasu! Retreat-dasu!!" (Sasae)

"Like I will let you!!" (Uriel)

Uriel's Golems chase after the Goddess Golems that were retreating.

Does he plan on finishing it now?!

How impatient!

"It is because you make them in the shape of a feeble woman that the Golems themselves turn out feeble. As I thought, there's no need for glamour in

Golems! Utility is the true worth! Unnecessary factors that would affect it negatively should all be taken away!!" (Uriel)

...That Uriel, is he holding a grudge on ornamenting because his Golems were spoken ill of before the battle?

But this flow of things...is Uriel really the one in the advantage?

"Hey, these movements...!" (Celestis)

Even within the group of spectators, someone else had noticed it as well.

As expected, the literate Hydra Ville resident Celestis was the one.

"Isn't it strange? At a glance, it looks as if Sasae-chi is the one being pushed back, but...!" (Celestis)

"It is not strange, is it? The Sasae army is actually being pushed back after all." (Mirack)

"What a fool, Mirack-chi. Your brain really only works for one on one battles?!" (Celestis)

"Sasae-chan's Golem army looks as if they are retreating, but they are actually extending their formation to the sides." (Haine)

When I pointed this out, Celestis snapped her fingers.

"Right! On the other hand, Uriel's Golem army is steadily stepping forward due to him chasing after Sasae-chi's army!!" (Celestis)

The formation of Sasae's army that has extended to the sides looked as if they were going to wrap Uriel's army from left and right.

"The Crescent Formation." (Haine)

"That Uriel! Did he get baited into a trap?!" (Michael)

Looks like Michael has also noticed it —the crafty scheme that Sasae-chan had prepared.

"What?! W-What is this?!" (Uriel)

By the time Uriel himself had noticed, it was already after the fact.

The half encirclement of Sasae's army had already been finished and it had already become a disastrous scene where Uriel's army was being beaten up.

The breaking of the Goddess Golems were simply used to bait him into a trap.

"The fourth daughter of Sobo-chan, Sano Oba-chan, told me this-dasu. 'The specialty of women be pinning techniques'. That ye be the strongest after ya got 'em down!" (Sasae)

Following that advice, she acted as if she were a weak girl, and when the man has lowered his guard, you constrict them to death like a snake.

Sasae-chan's tactic worked well.

"One of dah teachings of the earth! 'At first, like a maiden; in the end, like a predator'-dasu!!" (Sasae)

The Goddess Golems had already stopped their acting and had begun fighting back with all their strength.

The half encirclement had already been finished and the Sasae army could attack from many directions, so it gave her even more of an advantage; Uriel's army who is the one taking the brunt of this was thrown into a predicament.

"Damn it! Damn it!!" (Uriel)

If Uriel were to have a relative understanding of the terrain, he could aim for the weak points of the formation created from the encirclement and escape from it by rushing one point. But, not knowing this, Uriel decided on retreating instead of pushing out of the encirclement.

"All forces, fall back! Retreat!" (Uriel)

But with that, he will simply be chased after at the same speed he retreats and get one-sidedly beat up.

He is completely caught up in the advantage of Sasae's army.

"Damn it! That's dirty! Are you telling me you were feigning as if you were losing in order to get an advantageous position?!" (Uriel)

"The lies of God are teachings, the lies of a warrior are strategies', that be

what the sixth son of Sobo-chan, Saruga Oji-san, told me-dasu! Fooling and being fooled be the basics of war! Being fooled be the mistake of the fooled-dasu!!” (Sasae)

Even what Sasae-chan is saying is beginning to sound adult-like?!

Moreover, in a not so desirable direction!

Did Sasae-chan become a bad adult because of Mantle?!

- 333: Match of the Generals

“Fantastic! Beast! This must be the ‘art of war’ that comes from the battle culture of humans, right?!” (Gabriel)

It looks like Gabriel-san is getting excited, but I am not that familiar with this Demon Lord, so let’s leave her alone.

“Hey, don’t you think this might end just like this?” (Celestis)

I agreed with Celestis’ opinion.

The ability of a commander is shown in whether they can get out of situations like this when they have fallen in them.

But the moment Uriel noticed that he was surrounded, he couldn’t see through the weak points of the opponent’s thinned formation, and threw away the option of pushing through.

He lost the timing to turn a turnaround into a turnaround and the situation worsened.

The more timings you miss, the harder it is to recover.

Honestly speaking, I don’t think Uriel has the intelligence and courage to deal with this situation. Then, what’s left is to be washed away by the flow that Sasae-chan created.

“Demon Lord... So they are still beings that rely fully on their great amount of divine power huh.” (Haine)

To think they would be so brittle the moment they are against an opponent that has a divine power that rivals theirs.

At that moment, someone reacted to my mutter.

“Damn it! Damn iiiitt!!” (Uriel)

And so, Uriel was finally beginning to look like it is no good.

His own army had already been reduced to half of what was before and, even when he tried to add new Golems, the pace couldn't keep up.

“Now that it has come to this, crowd up and harden the defense! Resist the attacks of the enemy!!” (Uriel)

A stupid decision.

If they were to stand ground crowded, they won't be able to move properly and will have no choice but be destroyed steadily from the outside.

Uriel has once again made a bad choice in a bad situation.

The Goddess Golems had already become slaughtering amazonesses.

The outcome of this battle was once again affected by the nature of these two.

The actual Golems that are born from Life Blocks, as long as they have their Life Blocks, they can think on their own to a certain extent.

On the other hand, Sasae-chan's Goddess Golems had Sasae-chan's divine power running through every piece of the Golems and are basically marionettes.

In other words, Uriel's Golems are semi-automatic with their Life Blocks while Sasae-chan's Goddess Golems are completely manual control.

They show different advantages and disadvantages depending on the situation, but in this occasion, it was completely tilting into Uriel's disadvantage.

It is exactly because you can leave the decision making to the Life Blocks that Uriel's burden in giving orders decreases, but with Uriel sucking this much, there's no point in reducing the burden.

In this situation where they are cornered, the movements of each individual Golem is important, and yet, the semi-automatic Golems of Uriel can't act

quickly to the situation and were in confusion as they were being attacked from different directions.

Compared to that, Sasae-chan's Goddess Golems have to be controlled even in the smallest of details and this makes the burden in Sasae-chan as much, but that problem has already been cleared when she became a God Hero.

In that case, all the Goddess Golems are basically the limbs of Sasae-chan. Each one of them can move as if they were living beings.

An army that has coordination and one that doesn't. There's no need to think about which one would win.

The basic Golems of Uriel were already just waiting to be completely hunted down by Sasae-chan's Goddess Golems.

If these were a battle between humans, these would be the point where they would raise the white flag.

"Now that it has come to this...! Now that it has come to this...I myself will be entering the fray!" (Uriel)

Oh.

"Or more like, why didn't I do so from the beginning?! My strength is higher than all the Golems I made combined! I will fight myself and dominate the enemy army!!" (Uriel)

So he noticed it. There were actions he should have taken the moment his army was surrounded, but he can still do something about it.

But there's one thing he is overlooking.

That trump card is something that the other side also holds.

"Then, I will be yer opponent as ye wish-dasu!!" (Sasae)

"Wa?!" (Uriel)

Uriel somehow managed to avoid the scythe that came from overhead.

Adult Sasae-chan had suddenly appeared in front of Uriel.

"You! Why are you here?!" (Uriel)

The positioning in the battlefield of Sasae-chan and Uriel should be one end and the other.

As the Generals watching over the battle, they should have been at the deep parts in order to be able to properly see both armies.

And yet, at some point in time, Sasae-chan had rushed deep into enemy territory and was right in front of the enemy General.

“The moment the half encirclement was finished, I moved around-dasu. In the climax, it needs to be a one on one battle between the Generals-dasu!!” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan takes stance with her earth scythe.

With this, Uriel has been completely checkmated.

Sasae-chan definitely won't withdraw her blade.

In the first place, Sasae-chan issued this challenge with her thoughts as a resident of the Earth nation. If Uriel doesn't oppose her here, the decision of Mantle about 'Destroying the Demon Lords' would be correct and Uriel will be killed.

That is the way of thinking of the Earth nation people.

“Ah...Ah...!” (Uriel)

“If ya ain't gonna resist, I will be taking that neck of yers-dasu!” (Sasae)

The scythe of judgment was swung.

With this, the match to decide who is the top of the Earth between Uriel and Sasae-chan has been decided—

“What are you doing, Uriel?!”

And there, an unexpected interruption appeared.

Right in the middle of Uriel and Sasae-chan, a fireball crashed and broke the ground.

“Hiih?! What-dasu?!” (Sasae)

“Michael?!” (Uriel)

The one who stopped the last moment was the Fire Demon Lord.

The leader of the four Demon Lords with a big muscular body and fire wings spread.

I thought he interrupted to save his comrade Uriel, but...

“That’s pathetic, Uriel!!” (Michael)

“Hiih?!” (Uriel)

He suddenly began reprimanding that comrade of his?!

“What a pathetic sight you are showing as one of the Demon Lords! Don’t you have guts?! Because of you, we Demon Lords are being thought of as cowards that only rely on our strength in divine power!!” (Michael)

Could it be...Michael heard what I muttered before? And because of that, he is pissed?

“Even...Even if you tell me that...! Didn’t you come here to save me?!” (Uriel)

“Don’t delude yourself!! This is your battle, Uriel! If you don’t fight on your own, it won’t have meaning!! But don’t forget that you are shouldering the name of all us Demon Lords!! I won’t allow an unsightly defeat!! Fight with all you have!! I will be your witness!!” (Michael)

What he was saying was all jumbled up, but he continued.

“Don’t give up! Do your best, Uriel!!” (Michael)

- 334: Encouragement

“Do your best? Is that all?!” (Uriel)

“That’s right. What else would be needed?!” (Michael)

Saying this, Michael stretches his arms horizontally and releases high ranged fire dragons.

The direction of those burning flames was the Golem armies that were still in battle. Without a care of ally or foe, all Golems were swallowed by it; their surface was burned and, due to them being made out of earth, they ended up hardening like pots —every single one of them.

As expected, the divine power of a Demon Lord is incredible.

“Now, what’s left are the only people that need to fight! Bring out your all and fight! Without using Golems; with your own body!!” (Michael)

“W-Wait!” (Uriel)

Even with that, Uriel-san clings onto him.

“Michael, you saw it too, right?! That God Hero is abnormal! She is on another level even when compared to other God Heroes!” (Uriel)

Well, that’s true after all.

In the first place, a God Hero is a system where you only give a part of a God. However, in this occasion, Mantle, who always goes overboard in everything she does, poured everything of her so, looking at that point alone, Sasae-chan’s God Hero form is several times stronger than the others.

Moreover, Sasae-chan and Mantle have a similar mind at the most weirdest of places and, because of that synchronicity, the power increases by even more. Thanks to the work of the Golems, Mantle managed to get a lot more prayers than the other Gods, so that makes the power go up by even more. Because she didn’t have to maintain the ‘Nameless Desert’ that Inflation had forced her to due to her being thrown into a Black Hole, her use of divine power has been zero until now.

On top of that, Sasae-chan herself has inherited completely the talent of a legend, but because she was young, it was supposed to raise with time, however, the God Hero transformation had released it all.

...

The more I think about it, the more I end up thinking ‘what kind of beast have we awakened’.

I even feel pity for Uriel who is being made to fight against something like that.

“It is impossible to fight her upfront and win! We should run away or attack her all at once!” (Uriel)

“Like hell I care!” (Michael)

The wordy complain of Uriel was blown away by the few words of Michael.

“That’s pathetic, Uriel! Are you going to give up just because your opponent is strong?! From the very beginning, humans were in those same circumstances!!” (Michael)

“Wa?!” (Uriel)

“Even against the Demon Lords that were far superior in strength, the humans didn’t surrender and fought head on! As a result, they obtained the new strength that is the God Hero form! There’s no evolution for the ones that give up and turn their backs! Uriel, your decision is akin to throwing away the possibilities of monsters!!” (Michael)

“E-Even if you tell me that...!” (Uriel)

Uriel was on the verge of crying.

“I also think that way, Uriel.” (Gabriel)

“Even Gabriel?!” (Uriel)

The Water Demon Lord had gone down there as well.

“The humans not only have strength. They also possess the wits and love to overcome difficult situations where strength is a nonfactor. Whether we monsters can obtain this or not; I think that is what will decide if we monsters can become true living beings!” (Gabriel)

“What does that have to do with this fight?!” (Uriel)

“Don’t you understand?! This fight has our will and pride at stake! Show an unsightly display at such a fight and you would be throwing dirt at the pride of all the Demon Lords!” (Gabriel)

“I think exactly the same.” (Karen)

Karen-san, Mirack, and Celestis had also joined?!

“This battle is one that one of the Gods of Creation, Mantle-sama, is watching over personally. This is a fight where you are showcasing your very meaning of existence to a God.” (Karen)

“Your God told you that you monsters are just tools, you know?! Are you not feeling frustrated by that?! This battle is your best chance at showing the true

meaning of your existence and making that God go wow!" (Mirack)

"That's why there's meaning in you fighting alone. There's no one aside from you who can show her the reason of your existence! This is something that only you alone can do!!" (Celestis)

"What, even the humans?! What is it you are trying to make me do by ganging up on me?!" (Uriel)

This must be a pain to the max for Uriel.

A difficult situation, an enemy he cannot win against. It would be a lot easier to just run away.

But...

"Everyone here has overcome that and has gotten all the way to this point." (Haine)

"Kuromiya Haine?!" (Uriel)

Unknowingly, I had followed everyone and had arrived to where Uriel was.

"Everyone wants you to overcome that as well. They want you to stand at the same summit; in order to stand side by side. To stand as equal friends." (Haine)

"Friends, you say?! Friends?! What a joke. Demon Lords are simply joining forces in order to eradicate humans. Moreover, humans are the enemies!" (Uriel)

"In order to realize this, this battle is necessary. Overcome it as well. Overcome this battle and find the answer at the other side that can't be expressed in words! And then, show it to all of us!!" (Haine)

Those words became the trigger. Everyone began to speak out their share.

"Do your best, Uriel! Show your will as a Demon Lord!" (Michael)

"You can do it, Uriel! You can definitely do it!!" (Gabriel)

"Please do your best, Uriel-san!" (Karen)

"Do your damn best already and show your guts!!" (Mirack)

"Do you best~ Uriel! Do your best~!" (Celestis)

Support from everyone.

Everyone here is wishing for Uriel to overcome this.

“Do your best, Uriel! If you are one of the powers that stand at the top of the demons, show it!!” (Michael)

“Aaaaaaahhhh!! Gaaaaaahhh!! Kishaaaaa!!” (Uriel)

Uriel broke.

“Aaaah! Geeez!! Every damn single one of you irresponsibly telling me to do my best!! I get it already! I just have to do it, right?! I just have to bring out my all and defeat that beast woman, right?!” (Uriel)

““““““Oooh!““““““““

*Clap Clap *Clap*

Everyone began to clap together.

The already pissed off Uriel had broke his limit in the pissed off meter.

“Y-Ya done now-dasu ka?” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan was waiting mannerly.

Well, that's a given. For her, this fight was already not one where the survival of humans or monsters is at stake. It is like a court where it is decided whether you are right or wrong.

A match where the God is watching over it.

You can't just choose right or wrong lightheartedly.

“Then, we resume the battle-dasu! But before that, Uriel-dono, I also wanna say something to ya-dasu!” (Sasae)

“?” (Uriel)

“Do yer best-dasu!” (Sasae)

“Shut up!!” (Uriel)

Everyone is saying it, so Sasae-chan felt like saying it as well.

That nature of going with the flow of things, maybe she really is being

influenced by Mantle?

WR – Chapter 335-337: Eudaimonia

“Oooooh!! [Wooden Punch]!!” (Uriel)

The punch of Uriel sends Sasae-chan flying.

Even if he is a coward, that's a Demon Lord for you. In terms of battle strength, he is on the world class level.

“They have finally begun fighting in close quarters combat. I think this is the first time I see Uriel fighting personally.” (Gabriel)

Until now, he has been fighting by using Slimes or Golems and it has always been with something in between after all.

This is also part of why he is called a coward Demon Lord.

“But once it is pushed to a close quarters fight, Uriel is strong.” (Michael)

“The Earth element is originally the most suited for close combat. By taking effect on the solids, they can adjust its hardness, weight, and sharpness as they wish with earth divine power. That power shows its most effectiveness in close range.” (Haine)

“But the same goes for Sasae-chi.” (Celestis)

More so because Sasae-chan also has the technique. She has learned the use of her big scythe from her Oba-san and Yoneko-san.

Compared to that, Uriel had recently gained intelligence and, no matter how you think about it, he doesn't have the know-hows.

In terms of technique, the difference is high.

He has no choice but to fill that difference with something.

“Damn it! Damn it!! What's with this, what's with this?! Everyone saying things that don't make sense!!” (Uriel)

Uriel's desperate state was already reaching new heights.

By increasing the height of his own wooden body by a crazy extent, he has somehow managed to oppose Sasae-chan.

"I...! I simply wanted to eradicate the humans! Eradicate the humans and have the monsters take the position of rulers that the humans held! That's all it was for this battle!" (Uriel)

Uriel cried out as he lets out a barrage of punches -while spitting his own barrage of 'this is not how it was supposed to go'.

"And yet, why do I have to pass through this painful experience?! Why do I have to pass through this scary experience?! I am a Demon Lord, you know?! The strongest existence in the surface world! Why is it that this position is being threatened?! No, in the first place, why is it that I have begun to feel things like fear and pain?!" (Uriel)

Why do you feel fear, why do you feel pain.

"I wouldn't have even thought about it in the past...! The kinfolk that were born before me from my mother as well; they didn't feel things like fear or pain. And yet...!" (Uriel)

That's because the very thought of 'thinking' was alien for them after all.

No matter the thought or emotion, if you don't have the basis of 'feeling', they simply can't exist.

The Demon Lord is feeling danger to his life and is desperately fighting against it as he suffers because he now holds a heart that can feel.

It is because he has become a living being that holds a heart.

"How terrible! Were we born in this world to feel such things?! Were we born to learn about pain and harshness?! Meeting such a strong opponent was in order to experience pain?!" (Uriel)

Uriel extends several tens of roots, but even when he swings them around like a club or a whip, it was all cut to pieces by Sasae-chan's scythe.

When a living being feels danger towards their life, they feel fear towards it. The Demon Lord must be the same.

“If I am to pass through such a painful experience...! It would have been better to not have had a life from the very beginning! That way, there would be no need for me to think or feel!” (Uriel)

Yes, you wouldn’t feel all that.

“Thinking or feeling...! If I didn’t have those, I wouldn’t be feeling this painful experience myself! My very self wouldn’t be here! My existence itself wouldn’t have been present! Thinking is...! The same as existing?” (Uriel)

“I think, therefore I am-dasu ka.” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan says this without stopping swinging her scythe.

“The second son of Sobo-chan, Reushi-ojichan, said that-dasu. He died from an illness last year though-dasu ga. He be a philosophical guy to the bitter end-dasu.” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan’s relatives are truly varied.

“I also hate tough things-dasu. Things like pain and things that ya don’t like, it wouldn’t be bad fer ‘em ta be resolved without feeling those kind of things-dasu. But no matter how harsh it be, if ye were to lose the very ability ta feel, that would be the saddest-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“Right... That’s true! I am already a Demon Lord. I ended up having a heart...! Giving up my heart now would definitely be the most painful and scariest of all!!” (Uriel)

The fighting had temporarily stopped.

Uriel looked down at his wooden body as if confirming its state.

“I don’t want that. No matter how painful and scary the future is, I definitely don’t want to forsake my heart.” (Uriel)

“Same here-dasu.” (Sasae)

“Why did I turn into something like this? Being tormented by pain and fear. Would it have been better to not be born at all? No, that’s not it! There’s no way that’s it!” (Uriel)

No matter what pain and how harsh of a life you have, you can’t just call your

birth a mistake.

That same feeling is swirling inside of Uriel.

“I don’t understand! There’s no logical sense to this!” (Uriel)

Contradictions.

For the people that can only speak from logic, contradictions are just painful.

The current Uriel is...the Demon Lord Uriel is trying to overcome this.

By crossing over a problem that can’t be solved by logic, he will reach at what’s beyond it.

“Who was it?! Who was it that birthed me in this way?! Into something that just doesn’t make sense, into something that can’t be explained! Who was it?! Who was the one that created me?!” (Uriel)

At that moment, Uriel’s eyes stopped at one place.

The current opponent of his, Sasae-chan.

No, the one he is looking at is the existence that’s inside of Sasae-chan herself. The God that is currently providing power to Sasae-chan.

“I see... It was you...” (Uriel)

“...?”

“You certainly did say it.” (Uriel)

That monsters were created by the Gods.

That they were created to serve as the tools of the Gods.

Uriel must have remembered those words clearly just now.

“You created us...” (Uriel)

And the Earth Demon Lord Uriel speaks from the heart.

“...Thank you very much.” (Uriel)

- 336: Gratitude towards the gratitude

Why is he thanking her?

It is true that the one who created the monsters -especially the monster that gave birth to Uriel-was Mantle, but that was something far in the past.

Monsters obtaining self-consciousness was something they obtained on their own. Moreover, the Gods were looking at monsters solely as tools.

In the past, I fought the other Gods as the Dark God Entropy because of their treatment towards humans –even when compared to that, the standing of the monsters must have been harsh.

Even with that, Uriel gave his gratitude.

By simply looking at the part that ‘they have created us’.

“Oh my~!”

A fluffy voice resonates.

“Oh my, oh my, oh my, oh my~~!!”

That voice came from the adult Sasae-chan, but it was definitely different from Sasae-chan’s usual way of speaking.

“Thank you, he said! Thank you, he said!!” (Mantle)

“Mantle-sama?” (Sasae)

“This is the first time I have been told that!!” (Mantle)

For some reason, Mantle is happy to an incredible extent.

“I have always always done a lot of things in order to be of use to the human-sans. But it never went as I wanted, failed, get scolded by Inflation-san, and also get erased by Entropy-san...” (Mantle)

That is the undeniable truth.

“But being thanked by the monster-san must mean that I have been of use to the monster-sans, right?! Even if I wasn’t of use to the human-sans, I can be of use to the monster-sans!!” (Mantle)

“Eh? No, that’s not...!” (Uriel)

“Understood. As per the request of the monster-sans, I will eradicate the human-sans!!” (Mantle)

““““Wait, wait, wait!!””””

Mantle is deciding on things way too easily as always.

Changing sides on a single thanks?!

“Wait-dasu yo, Mantle-sama! We humans have also been giving our thanks to Mantle-sama everyday-dasu! We give our thanks from morning to night-dasu yo!!” (Sasae)

“Ara, really?” (Mantle)

We also thankful fer Mantle-sama creating us-dasu shi, and we also be grateful fer blessing us everyday-dasu! I also be grateful that ya made me into a God Hero-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“Ara ara ara, the human-sans were also this grateful?! They didn’t tell me directly, so I didn’t notice!” (Mantle)

“We always be giving prayers of gratitude everyday-dasu yo!! Also, I gave ya my thanks directly not that long ago-dasu!” (Sasae)

“At that time, what you said was ‘I believe in you’...” (Mantle)

“It basically be the same-dasu yo!!” (Sasae)

By the way, this conversation is coming from Sasae-chan and Mantle who is possessing Sasae-chan, so two people are speaking from the same mouth, making it quite the surreal spectacle.

“I-Is that so?! Then, I was properly being of use to the human-sans?” (Mantle)

“Not only properly, ya were doing a splentacular job-dasu yo!! Mantle-sama be the best God-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“Oh my, oh my, oh my!!” (Mantle)

I could tell the happiness of Mantle even from here.

“I have never been told something like that since the Genesis Era!! I was of use to the human-sans huh! I managed to stay as an useful God, right?!” (Mantle)

She is truly happy.

It is exactly because she is a God that can work that hard for the sake of others that she can be easily influenced in her everyday.

At any rate, it looks like Mantle's desire of being useful for someone has finally been fulfilled after 1,600 years.

"Understood! For the sake of the human-sans that believe in me, I will eradicate the monster-sans that are trying to eradicate the human-sans!!"
(Mantle)

"Wait, wait, wait?!" (Uriel)

This time, Uriel was the one agitated.

"That's troubling! We can't let go of the meaning we were born! We are also grateful for having been created by you!! Isn't that what I said before?!" (Uriel)

"Ara ara, that's true." (Mantle)

Two hard to coexist truths were clashing inside of Mantle.

"Ara? Ara? ...What do I do here? This is troubling. What should I do?"
(Mantle)

If she grants the wish of the monsters that have shown their gratitude to her, she would have to eradicate the humans; for the sake of the humans that worship her, she has to eradicate the monsters that threaten the humans.

For Mantle who has only made incredibly simple decisions until now, this is a contradiction that she definitely won't be able to find an answer to.

"What do I do, what should I do?! Eradicate the monsters for the sake of humans? Eradicate the humans for the sake of monsters? ...Ah! Eradicate them both?!" (Mantle)

““No no no no no!?”” “-Dasu!!”

It was close to jumping into a catastrophic conclusion, so the two of them stopped her.

...This woman has a tendency of reaching destructive conclusions all the time.

"That's no good, God-sama! Don't reach such close-minded conclusions! Deliberate and discuss about it!!" (Uriel)

“That’s right-dasu yo! Also, that matter already has a conclusion-dasu!!”
(Sasae)

Eh?

“I already said it-dasu! Which one is right or wrong be decided by who dies-dasu! The one who survives be the one in the right-dasu! And we have been having a match until now-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“But...neither of us has died?” (Uriel)

Uriel asks as if confused.

Looks like he couldn’t keep up the pace anymore and would scream at any moment now.

“One must die in order to reach a conclusion? You won’t say we are gonna be fighting again, right?!” (Uriel)

And there goes the coward.

“I won’t say that-dasu. This match has already ended-dasu. And the result has already been shown-dasu. Both sides didn’t die. Both sides survived-dasu. That means...” (Sasae)

The judgment was made.

“We both be right-dasu!!” (Sasae)

- 337: Offering a prayer

“Both are in the right? Oh my, oh my!” (Mantle)

Mantle lets out a voice as if she had been enlightened.

“I didn’t think of that! I simply thought that if one is good, the other one should be bad!!” (Mantle)

Mantle has always been separating everything in black and white since 1,600 years ago.

“By the way, I go by the word of ‘justice wins, evil dies’-dasu! That be why, whether it be good or bad be decided by whether ya die or not-dasu!!” (Sasae)

...As I said before, the way the Earth nation people think is scary.

“I have already clashed blades and judged-dasu! We both survived-dasu! And so, the judgment of ‘both being right’ be given-dasu! That be the style of the Earth Church-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“Hey, Gabriel... Wouldn’t it be better for you people to eradicate the humans? Like, the Earth nation might need a bit of cleansing, if you catch my drift.” (Celestis)

“E~h?” (Gabriel)

Celestis and Gabriel were whispering to each other, but we outsiders were respecting the radical conversation that was occurring.

“Uhm then, what should I do? If I don’t eradicate either the humans or monsters, who should I eradicate?” (Mantle)

“Ya don’t have ta eradicate anyone-dasu! Just as Karen-oneechan says, how about aiming fer coexistence-dasu ka?!” (Sasae)

“Eh?”

I shivered at Mantle who was unable to get away from the thought of eradicating, and I also ended up shivering at the strength of will of Sasae-chan in refuting her own God.

“Just as Karen-oneechan and the others said, the proposal of humans coexisting with monsters-dasu! But! If it be about coexisting with monsters, our Earth Church be the one with most experience-dasu!” (Sasae)

“Oh my, that’s true!” (Mantle)

They have been on friendly terms with the Golems for a century after all.

“Our Ishtar Blaze having an inseparable connection with Golems be common knowledge-dasu! Humans and Golems have always been getting along with each other-dasu! This also be thanks to Mantle-sama-dasu! Thank ya very much-dasu!” (Sasae)

“Ara ara, if you thank me that much, I am going to blush!!” (Mantle)

Being poured by gratitude, Mantle was at cloud nine.

“But! That relationship had been thrown into chaos because of Great Pillar-

sama's rampage-dasu! That truly be a regret-dasu!! Who was the one that threw cold water ta our relationship with the Golems?!" (Sasae)

"Ugu!" (Mantle)

Sasae-chan twists the knife naturally at her own God.

"On top of that! After seeing how Uriel-dono created Life Blocks an idea flashed-dasu! A nice idea-dasu!!" (Sasae)

"~~~~~"A nice idea?!"~~~~~"

The spectators were also confused.

"In this times when Great Pillar-sama's gone and the Golems are not born anymore, Uriel-dono can go to Ishtar Blaze and make Golems-dasu! It will be the coming of another era of prosperity-dasu!!" (Sasae)

What?!

"Oh my, oh my! That's truly a nice idea!!" (Mantle)

"No, but that's...!"

It is true that coexisting is good, but isn't this going a bit too far right off the bat?!

...No, that's exactly why this can only be done because the Earth Church has been coexisting with Golems for a hundred years, but...even with that...!

"The conversation be wrapped-dasu! Now, Uriel-dono! I want ya to come to our capital, Ishtar Blaze, right now-dasu!" (Sasae)

"No... what's this about the conversation being wrapped up? I am still in the stage where I am shocked by the development though!" (Uriel)

Uriel was surprised all the way.

But Sasae-chan and Mantle aren't kind-hearted enough to play along with the other party's surprise.

"Sobo-chan be bringing techniques from the outside ta fill in the gaps of the Golem! But it looks like we need another change of policies-dasu! We gotta go back immediately and have a meeting-dasu!!" (Sasae)

“Eh?! Eh?! Eh?! What are you tying me for?!” (Uriel)

Uriel is restrained while in confusion.

Sasae-chan had alchemized a rope or more like a wire to tie Uriel with.

While at it, she retrieved the Life Blocks of the Golems that had been destroyed and puts them into a bag that she had alchemized.

“Well then, Karen-oneechan! Mirack-oneechan! Celestis-oneechan! And the others!” (Sasae)

““““Y-Yes?!”“““

Being called, it took our all to respond.

“It been a long time since we last met, but I will be taking mah leave for this urgent business-dasu! I wanna show this hooked fish to Sobo-chan as soon as possible-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“By hooked fish, are you talking about me?!” (Uriel)

Uriel, who looked as if he were a fish caught in a net, was bellowing.

“Well then, bye bye-dasu! I’m gonna meet ya guys in the near future and give ya a report of the current state-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“I will also go with you! I am shining the most right now in all this 1,600 years!! I am truly glad to be a God!!” (Mantle)

The excitement of Sasae-chan and Mantle were completely synchronizing!!

Are these two okay? Can they properly separate later?!

“Gyaaaa!! Wait! Wait!! I have not said a single word about going with you!! Take this off! Release me from this net!! At least stop dragging me as you go! My bark is tearing off as it scrapes the ground! Gyaaaa!! Are you actually planning on dragging me all the way like this to Ishtar Blaze?! By the time we arrive, I will only be left with my legs!! Seriously, wait! I said wait!! Ugyaaa!!” (Uriel)

Uriel’s cries of agony were disappearing in the horizon together with his figure.

“Uwa~~!!” (Uriel)

Left there, we at least gave our condolences to Uriel as we let out a sigh.

WR – Chapter 338-340: Towards a new era

- 338: Towards a new era

It had ended up in a result that I wouldn't have even thought.

The behaviour of Mantle, that we Gods didn't have the ability to correct, was corrected by the human Sasae-chan.

It was unbelievably impossible to manage with logic, but that's probably why she managed to change that Mantle.

I may have been reminded of the greatness of humans.

Well, leaving that aside, we all were left in the plains after Sasae-chan, Mantle, and Uriel left, and had no choice but to space out.

“In the end, we didn't do anything!” (Celestis)

“We just left Sasae to rampage as she wanted after all. She came like a storm and left like a storm!!” (Mirack)

Celestis and Mirack were definitely not characters of dim presence, and yet, Sasae-chan had completely taken the spotlight.

Sasae-chan's fearsomeness gets even more fearsome the more I think about it.

“.....Let's return as well.” (Michael)

Is what Michael said.

“As we go by in the fights with the humans, it feels as if we destroy one wall at a time. The battle of Uriel also felt as if we had gone through another wall and had advanced a step forward.” (Michael)

“Right... Then, the next thing we should do is to progress onto what's after that broken wall.” (Gabriel)

Gabriel says agreeing.

“Even if we are to learn from the humans and live together with them, we first have to check the thoughts of Lucifer-sama. And so, we will return to the castle.” (Michael)

“? You have a place that’s like the base of the Demon Lords?” (Haine)

I pursue the subject. The big hand of Michael that felt like a shield stopped me.

“I can’t tell you that. Just like how we abide to the moral code towards you people, we also have a moral code towards Lucifer-sama.” (Michael)

“If we were to let you people into Lucifer-sama’s place when he is still in his sleep without his permission, we won’t be able to regain his trust ever again. If you want to avoid battle, this outcome wouldn’t be desirable, right?” (Michael)

That’s true.

To think the Demon Lords would be reprimanding me for my manners!

“Let’s leave things to Michael-san and the others.” (Karen)

Looks like Karen also agrees with the Demon Lords.

“If we want to push the coexistence, we have to trust in the other party or nothing would begin. This is where we trust in the Demon Lords and wait. Just like how Sasae-chan did. Let’s try to straightforwardly trust!” (Karen)

“I think the ‘trust’ of Sasae-chi has pierced through being aggressive though!” (Celestis)

The opinion of Celestis has a point, but Karen-san’s opinion also has a point.

“...Understood. Demon Lords...” (Haine)

I face the tall Michael.

“The next time we meet, it will not be as enemies, but as friends.” (Haine)

“Understood.” (Michael)

The first time we saw each other, I didn’t think things would turn out like this.

What kind of conflicts occurred in my absence?

As I see off Michael and Gabriel who were flying off, we couldn't help but feel happy at the future that was coming.

After that, it was all taking care of the aftermath.

The Muspelheim, Hydra Ville, and Ishtar Blaze incidents that were brought by the Demon Lords were all wrapped up as a series of events, but all of them ended with low damage, so the whole world sighed in relief.

The aforementioned cities will need to clean up after those incidents, but what's important are the lives.

The material damages can be fixed as much as required. It looks like all cities were in high motivation.

Within all that, Karen-san, me, and the parties related to the Light Church decided on returning to Apollon City for now.

Sasae-chan had dragged Uriel to Ishtar Blaze and Mirack had returned to Muspelheim to reorganize the Fire Militant corps.

Since Celestis was already at Hydra Ville, she had resumed helping on the jobs that had stagnated.

The Light Church was the only one who didn't get a direct attack from the Demon Lords, so we asked if there was anything to help in, but they told us that we had helped plenty enough and kindly refused.

"We can't have the hero be absent for so long, so return to your homeland already", is what they told us.

It is true that they are being considerate.

At any rate, my flying machine had ran through Ishtar Blaze all the way to Hydra Ville without any breaks and at full speed, so it required a complete overhaul at its manufacturer.

Doraha was finally in a state where she could stand from bed, but she wasn't in perfect shape yet, so we decided on having a slow return by ethereal train.

Karen-san, Doraha, and I...

The scenery that can be seen outside the window of the train was a different flavour from that of the flying machine.

The regular method of transportation when moving from one country to another are these ethereal trains.

It was finally possible for us to take it easy and use this regular method of transportation to return to the Light capital.

“Doraha-san, it looks like they are selling a variety of things in the train, so how about buying something to eat?” (Karen)

“Karen-sama, this refrigerated orange thing has captured my heart! Also, this celebratory key holder is worth of notice!” (Doraha)

“No, as I said, something to eat...!” (Karen)

I thought Doraha was slightly colder before, but right now, she is strangely hype, maybe because she is not used to a train, or it might be because she had received some sort of change in the time she was in Muspelheim and Hydra Ville.

Looks like all humans are showing growth in places the Gods don't know of. Karen-san, Doraha, Mirack, Celestis, Sasae-chan, and even the Demon Lords.

That's why humans are great, and that's why I went so far as to fight the other Gods to protect that possibility.

And then, even those Gods had learned about the greatness of the humans with time-without the need of teaching them-and the world was beginning to gather into one.

This was brought by the strength of the humans, and they have grown to the point where they can overcome their problems by themselves.

It has reached a point where it might be unnecessary for Gods to help humans anymore.

“Isn't this fun, Haine-san?” (Karen)

Karen-san offers me a refrigerated orange as she says this.

“It is nice to take it easy and be shook by the train like this.” (Karen)

“True.” (Haine)

The fight with the Demon Lords that had the fate of humanity at stake feels as if it might end up peacefully if it continues like this.

This factor made my heart even calmer.

“By the way, talking about fun...” (Karen)

“Hm?” (Haine)

“Your outing with Yorishiro-sama was fun as well?” (Karen)

...

Where did the calming trip go?

My mentality had gone from zero to code red.

“No well...you see, it is kind of like a top secret mission. It cannot be disclosed...!” (Haine)

“It is something you can’t even tell a hero? I am truly interested in that.” (Karen)

Karen-san stands up from her seat and sits by my side, making a heavy sound as she does.

The seats of the train were spacious enough for two people to sit in, and since I am at the window side and Karen-san is sitting by my side, I am now cornered?!

“There’s still a lot before reaching Apollon City. Let’s enjoy the view from the train as we take our time talking...!” (Karen)

“Karen-san! If you get so close to me, I will be crushed between Karen-san and the wall, or more like, your soft thigh and arm are pushing against me! At any rate, you are a bit too close for comfort!” (Haine)

I had no choice but to do my best in fixing the mood of Karen-san that had been neglected for a long time.

“Karen-sama! I want to try out this thing called train boxed lunch!” (Doraha)

“Right. Let’s try out the boxed lunch. Let’s buy all the types and eat them. Haine-san, money.” (Karen)

“Eh?!” (Haine)

- 339: The two of us alone

After bringing a close to the incident at Ishtar Blaze and Hydra Ville, we were in the middle of returning to Apollon City.

I had met up with Karen-san due to various circumstances, fought together, and after overcoming that, we managed to return safely.

And so, we are currently at the shaking ethereal-powered train and enjoying our way back...or at least, that’s how it was supposed to be.

“And you see, Celestis-chan was terrible, you know?!” (Karen)

“I see...” (Haine)

“She said that I ‘think with my womb’, and I was also made to grab a slimy lizard and she didn’t save me from that! Ah, but when she faced the God Demon Lord, Celestis-chan was incredibly cool! I learned how incredible it was to love!” (Karen)

“I see...” (Haine)

“Mirack-chan was the first one to fight a Demon Lord-san, so it could be said that the one who opened up all possibilities was Mirack-chan! I could only be a spectator at the end of that battle, but the punching battle between her and Michael-san was truly awesome!!” (Karen)

“I see....” (Haine)

And so, that’s how time passed with the nonstop talking of Karen-san.

Since the time I left Apollon City to bring back Mantle, we have been apart.

We haven’t been separated this long since we met.

It means that a lot has accumulated inside of Karen-san huh.

Because she couldn’t be together with me?

...That’s the reason why stress accumulated?

"Ah~, if Haine-san were together with us, you could have witnessed it all personally~. You could have witnessed these big events that would change history together with me. Ah~ ah~." (Karen)

It really is not me being over-conscious.

Karen-san was clearly way too stressed after being separated from me.

"Uhm...Karen-san..." (Haine)

I said this while being incredibly careful.

"...I am sorry." (Haine)

"Why? Why are you apologizing? Haine-san was absent from Apollon City because you had important business that had to do with saving the world, right? Alone with Yorishiro-sama." (Karen)

"..."

"Alone...with Yorishiro-sama." (Karen)

...

No, to put it more accurately, it was with Shiva as well, so it wasn't as if I was alone with her, but saying that will only sound like a bad excuse and it might be like throwing oil to the fire.

In the first place, if I were to tell her that I went with Yorishiro and Shiva to revive the Mother Earth God, I would have to reveal my identity as the incarnation of the Dark God Entropy, so I can't just speak about everything.

I still want to continue enjoying a normal human life, if that's what my current life can be called.

What should I do to get her in a better mood?!

"Hah...It is fine." (Karen)

Looking at me, Karen-san lets out a big sigh.

"If you make such a troubled face, I won't be able to force it onto you anymore. I love Haine-san a lot and I don't want to be hated by Haine-san after all." (Karen)

“I see...” (Haine)

Karen-san had become a girl that can say things clearly like this.

“I have known since way back that Haine-san is riddled in mysteries, so there’s no point in pursuing it now. I love Haine-san, so I will trust in Haine-san even in the parts that I don’t know of. That’s all there is to it.” (Karen)

The decisiveness in Karen-san’s voice made even me feel overwhelmed by it.

We have been separated for quite a bit lately. There’s Mirack’s fierce battle, the big love of Celestis, and the foolishness of Sasae-chan; Karen-san must have had some sort of influence in all of those.

She herself has reached the God Hero form, and in the time I wasn’t with her, she has grown remarkably.

I could accept that open-heartedness of Karen-san.

“...I am truly sorry, Karen-san.” (Haine)

“Geez~.” (Karen)

?

“Those are not the words I want to hear from Haine-san. Please learn to pick up those kind of things.” (Karen)

Is what Karen-san says as she puffs her cheeks.

Rather than saying she is angry, it is more like she is sulking.

...

Okay, let’s say it.

“No matter what happens, I will never hate Karen-san.” (Haine)

“...Passing grade.” (Karen)

The expression of Karen-san has softened for a bit!

...No, she is blushing?!

“I actually wanted you to clearly say that you ‘loved’ me, but that modesty is also a charming point of Haine-san.” (Karen)

Saying this, Karen-san moved closer to me, her body sticking to mine.

Every soft part of hers was making contact with me!

“Ah... I have become surprisingly bolder than before. But it can’t be helped. It is just the two of us here after all!!” (Karen)

Right!

Until now, we have normally been together with Mirack or Yorishiro, so being just the two of us is pretty unusual!

“But Haine-san was alone with Yorishiro-sama just recently, so it would be unfair if I didn’t have my quality time as well. It is a short while until we arrive at Apollon City, but I will be properly enjoying our alone time.” (Karen)

Shiva was with us at that time though...or more like, woah! Even her nice scent was close enough that I could pick it up!!

This is bad. My sanity will be melted away!

Train travelling is pretty nice. Alone time in the train!

“Karen-sama, Haine-sama.”

No, we are not alone.

Doraha was absent from her seat for a bit, but she had returned now.

“Welcome back, Doraha-san. Was there any boxed lunch that seemed good?” (Karen)

Maybe because a third party had arrived, Karen-san regained her sanity as well and a small space had opened between her and me.

A really small space.

“Yes! Buying inside the train within the time limit of when the train is still running made me excited. I was scared of taking time in choosing, so in the end, I bought one of everything!” (Doraha)

“That price is coming directly from my pocket though!” (Haine)

I am sending half of my pay to my family, so this is actually pretty painful!

“Train boxed lunches are pretty good, aren’t they! The ones I ate before were

incredibly delicious, so I want to eat more train boxed lunches! I want boxed lunches!!" (Doraha)

"Right. You want boxed lunches, right! You rarely get the chance, so enjoy boxed lunches to your heart's content!" (Karen) <Ekiben is a boxed lunch bought in trains, but it can also refer to a sex position.>

Stop it!

I don't understand, but it feels as if you are saying a problematic statement there, so please stop!

"Eh? But Doraha-san, for someone who bought all the types, you took quite a bit of time. It took so long that I thought you had gotten lost." (Karen)

"The buying itself finished quickly, but I was called out by someone after that. It was apparently from a member of a branch Light Church at the previous train stop." (Doraha)

The train had already resumed movement and had left that train stop not that long ago.

"I received a message from that person. It is apparently an urgent order from Yorishiro-sama." (Doraha)

- 340: Train travel

Urgent order from Yorishiro?

What in the world happened?

Yorishiro is the Light Founder. She has plenty enough authority to order Karen-san and I who are affiliated to the Light Church.

But at this time, she is giving us an urgent order? I don't know what situation would warrant being urgent.

While I was confused, the one at my side...

"Doraha-san, to think you not only were able to do an errand on your own, but could also properly respond to a stranger that called out to you...! I am moved!" (Karen)

For some reason, Karen-san is getting emotional?

Uhm...it is true that Doraha-san's birthplace is special and, in the time she was brought back, she was basically a child mentally, but...

"She is not that young, you know. Aren't you overblowing it with just shopping and responding to a stranger?" (Haine)

"Haine-san doesn't know, that's why you can say something like that!" (Karen)

"Wa?!" (Haine)

I was scolded?!

"Do you know how serious her dislike of strangers was?! ...I am relieved with just the simple fact that she hasn't high kicked someone to the ceiling! It makes me sigh in relief!" (Karen)

"I-Is that so?!" (Haine)

"In the first place, Haine-san, you are one of the people that found Doraha-san together with Yorishiro-sama and I! Your consideration is lacking! That's why you end up missing the small growths of Doraha-san! Doraha-san is also growing everyday! Moreover, she is a girl, so you have to pay proper attention and praise her at the right times!" (Karen)

"I am sorry!!" (Haine)

For some reason, I have lately been getting scolded as if I were a father that doesn't know how to raise a child?!

Moreover, by a different girl every time!

The conversation derailed!

What about the urgent message of Yorishiro?! Bring the train back in track!

"A person of the branch church had given me a telegram." (Doraha)

Is what Doraha says as she gives me a single piece of paper.

I open these folded paper and, even though the paper itself was rough, the beautiful writing that showed the grace of Yorishiro could be seen in it.

The contents of it are...

'Karen-sama, Haine-sama,

I have received notice of your achievements in the many nations. Having the name of two precious people of mine resonate through the nations is something that makes me incredibly proud.'

"...For a telegram, this is quite the leisure writing here." (Haine)

"That's just how Yorishiro-sama is after all." (Karen)

True.

The only one capable of crumbling that pace of hers would be someone like Karen-san.

Let's continue reading.

'Taking into consideration that there's no delay in ethereal transmissions, according to the information from the other Churches in a favorable relationship with the Light Church, from the four Demon Lords, three are positive at the prospect of coexisting with humans.'

It is a hard to believe report, but if it is made possible, it would be a truly joyous situation.

We, the Light Church, are going to join this development and are on the intent of walking this path together.'

"...Well, this is indeed a development that would be hard to imagine when we first met the Demon Lords after all." (Haine)

"This is all thanks to Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, and Sasae-chan doing their best! Everyone not only protected the world, they also changed it!" (Karen)

Is what Karen-san says in excitement.

...There were truly a series of events that were hard to believe.

Now that I think about it, what is that Uriel doing right now?

Did he safely go back?

...Let's just continue reading.

'Now then, the thing that's of concern now is the Wind nation.'

Fumu.

The Wind nation huh.

'From the four Demon Lords, the Water, Earth, and Fire Demon Lord have calmed their hostility towards humans, so the remaining one is the Wind Demon Lord.'

His name being Raphael.

His whereabouts are currently unknown and it is definitely not something we can take in a positive light.

On top of that, Karen-san, Mirack-san, Celestis-san, and Sasae-san have achieved God Hero form, so the remaining one is the wind hero, Hyue-san.

If she manages to become a God Hero, the five God Heroes will be gathered.'

True.

Since the Wind Founder Shiva is cooperative, we didn't pay as much attention to it as other heroes.

Moreso with Shiva being the incarnation of the Wind God Quasar.

If he wanted to, he would be able to make Hyue into a God Hero.

Thinking in this way, we prioritized the fire, water, and earth that felt like they would be a lot more troublesome and left wind for later.

'I have a presentiment that the next incident will happen at the Wind Church.

And so, Karen-san, Haine-san, and Doraha; about your current return in train to Apollon City, please change your destination and head to Rudras Metropolis.'

"So this is the actual matter at hand huh." (Haine)

"The details of the urgent order." (Karen)

'Rudras Metropolis is a moving city, but the current location is accurately being notified to the other Churches.

Haine-san and the others should be able to arrive soon to their current location after exiting at the next stop and changing trains.

We have received the permission of the Wind Founder Shiva, so you will be staying for a while in Rudras Metropolis and get ready for any sort of abnormal situation.

Best regards,

Light Founder, Yorishiro'

I see.

So that's why she send a telegram at the previous stop huh.

But 'get ready for any sort of abnormal situation'? That's quite the vague order.

"Haine-san, let's go." (Karen)

Karen-san was already resolute.

"The Demon Lords are all acting. After three of the four acted, I don't think the remaining one will not be doing anything." (Karen)

"Meaning that the presentiment of Yorishiro might actually happen." (Haine)

"I haven't met Hyue-chan in a while, so there's still worth in going there to at least check how she is doing!" (Karen)

So the next incident will occur in the Wind nation huh.

It is true that this does feel possible. The Light capital already has Yorishiro there, so there shouldn't be any problems in being absent for a bit more.

In that case, let's go to the Wind capital, Rudras Metropolis.

'P.S'

Hm?

'To Karen-san.

I am truly sorry for separating you from Haine-san for so long.

Please consider this mission as an apology.'

Hmmm?

'Leave Apollon City to me and, this time, you enjoy your alone time with

Haine-san.

I will also leave Doraha-san in your care.

I am looking forward to your stories when you return. I will be waiting at our love nest.'

The moment I read that, Karen-san was shedding tears of gratitude.

"As expected of Yorishiro-sama! As expected of my Founder! I will follow Yorishiro-sama for the rest of my life!!" (Karen)

...Was this actually Yorishiro's main reason of changing our destination?

WR – Chapter 341-343: Spring Breeze, so to speak

And so, like this, we changed destinations and decided on heading to Rudras Metropolis.

Rudras Metropolis is an unusual city that's riding on top of a giant ethereal transportation device. The trait of it is that it is always in motion.

That's why it is extremely difficult to grasp its location and it is normally referred to as the Mirage Land; an existence shrouded in mystery.

But in the current times where the Churches are having a good relationship, Rudras Metropolis has been sending wireless transmissions and telling the others of its location themselves, so it is decently possible to visit them now.

Karen-san and I have arrived close to the city, and after travelling by foot for a day, we should be able to arrive. The Mirage Land was already at sight.

Well, there's still an inspection of sorts before entering the city, but we have obtained permission from the highest authority of the Wind Church, so we can pass just by having our faces recognized.

We could enter normally.

The Wind city, how long has it been.

The first time I arrived here was when the Five Founders' Conference was opened, and the next time was in the heroes match.

This would be the third visit.

Moreover, it has changed a lot in atmosphere since the second visit... it felt festive.

““Welcome to Rudras Metropolis!!””

That's the kind of welcoming we received the moment we entered.

That's not all.

The cityscape of Rudras Metropolis is the very definition of cheerful.

The hanging boards decorating the buildings, the balloons rising here and there, there were flowers decorating the stores without exception, and all the girls that were at the streets were saying 'are you going to be participating in the martial arts tournament?', which made us want to question it.

“...What in the world is with this commotion?” (Karen)

Karen-san and I were dumbstruck by the weird state of the city.

“...From what I remember, Rudras Metropolis was a lot more calm. I remember it giving out a bloodthirsty atmosphere.” (Haine)

My confusion didn't lose to hers.

Maybe because Rudras Metropolis is standing on top of a moving object, the feeling of being artificial and cold was oozing out from the whole place, and I have memories of the people in this nation not showing themselves much.

The Wind Church was thorough in their secretive policy for many centuries.

As if showing off this stiffness, the first time I came to Rudras Metropolis, it felt like a cold gale of a city.

And yet, now...

“Now it feels like a spring breeze...” (Haine)

The people are cheerful and warm; the cityscape is cheerful and showy; I can't think of this place as the same city I visited before.

Just what in the world happened in the time between when we left Rudras Metropolis the last time until now?!

“...Haine-san, please look at that!!” (Karen)

Karen-san noticed something and points at it.

When I follow the direction of her finger with my gaze, I saw a normal

mercantile house.

It was in a festive state like the other stores, but they were the same as the stores in the city, and there's nothing that really stands out.

...Well, having that thought itself makes it clear that the whole city itself is plain weird though.

"That's not it! What I want you to see is the sign!" (Karen)

"Sign?" (Haine)

There's certainly a sign that seems to be hastily made at the store's front, and there, this is what was written in a congratulatory manner: 'Celebratory sale in commemoration for Founder-sama's marriage!! 90% off at most!!'

"90% off?!" (Haine)

What a discount!!

No wait, don't get fooled!

If they were to make such a big price reduction, the store would fall! It said '90% off at most', so the important part is the 'at most'. In other words, if only one item at the store were to be sold at 10%, the '90% off at most' would not be a lie!

The other articles would be at 50% off? 30% off? Or maybe, they are actually selling at the established price and saying 'this is the lowest price we can go'?!

By reducing the price on trash-like stuff that no one wants, they bring in the customers, and then, sell the actual goods they want to sell in their actual price!!

But if we search properly, we might be able to find something that's at a good price!

Let's go inside and check!!

"Haine-san! Haine-san! That's not the part you should be concentrating on!" (Karen)

What?! Do you understand what you are saying, Karen-san?!

"What I want to see is what's on top of the price reduction! The

‘Commemoration of Founder-sama’s wedding’!!” (Karen)

“Founder-sama’s ...wedding?” (Haine)

Meaning that they are selling cheap because of this?

“Founder? Whose Founder?” (Haine)

“The one in this Rudras Metropolis! The Wind Church’s Founder!! When they talk of Founder, it is obviously the Wind Founder-sama!!” (Karen)

Ah.

Toreido Shiva huh.

Now that I think about it, he did talk about marriage or something.

In that case, this festive mood in the whole Wind capital is to celebrate that?!

“Well, the Founder is the top of the Church after all. If it is such an auspicious event, it is natural for the whole Church to celebrate, but...” (Haine)

To think that the cold and iron-like people of the Wind Church would get so heated up.

Is Shiva surprisingly liked by his subordinates?

- 342: Change to a homely person

We slipped through this festival, and finally, managed to get an audience with the person in question.

“I welcome you here from your long journey.” (Shiva)

Wind Founder, Toreido Shiva.

“I have already heard the details from Yorishiro by wireless transmission. I am grateful for the consideration of the Light Church as the Wind Founder.” (Shiva)

“Okay...” (Haine)

“The Wind Church will give you a warm reception in your stay at the Wind capital. Think of it as your own homeland and stay for as long as you wish.” (Shiva)

“.....”

I ended up instinctively saying this.

“Gross.” (Haine)

“Hm?”

It is a totally out of bounds complain to the number one authority of the place we are visiting, but...I couldn't not say it.

Because you know...

“That's not your personality at all!” (Haine)

What's with that proper welcoming?!

The first time we met Shiva, he was more haughty and snappy, and it felt as if you could get cut with that edginess!!

And yet, what's with this mildness here?!

“Haine-san! No matter what, that's way too rude! Towards the Founder-sama of another church...!” (Karen)

It is obvious that Karen-san would reprimand me.

“It is fine, light hero. You can already consider Haine and I as friends of several years. Speaking in a slightly loose manner just means that we are that close.” (Shiva)

However, this Wind Founder spits out words like those of a saint.

Where is the sharpness of before, Shiva-san?!

“How to say this... It is as if you and Rudras Metropolis have made a complete turnaround!” (Haine)

“Ah, so you have already witnessed thoroughly the state of the city before coming here huh.” (Shiva)

By here, he means the reception room of the Wind Church that we are currently in with Shiva.

“Quite the exaggerated reaction those guys have. A wedding is simply like a door that everyone has to pass through at least once. Just because it is the Founder, the city is in a celebratory mood... Well, as the one being celebrated, I

am quite happy though." (Shiva)

It was quite the adult way of dealing with it.

"I want you people to participate in my wedding as well. I will assure you your stay here until then, so it is fine to tour around or have some cultural exchange." (Shiva)

"It really is gross! Shiva-kun, why did you become such a mild guy?!" (Haine)

If a human loses their edge, it is the end, you know?

I may be persistent here, but where is the edginess Shiva had when I first met him?!

"Haine, the single you might not understand yet, but once a man marries, their personality gets more depth." (Shiva)

"Is that so..." (Haine)

"When I was an unmarried man, I let my youth take over me and felt as if I could do anything. After obtaining a woman I can love, feeling the need for a family, and gaining someone you wish to protect, you will naturally end up softening." (Shiva)

"..."

"Women are kind and gentle at their roots. By being together with a woman, the wildness of the man will lay in rest. Meaning that it gives room for your personality to grow. Marriage has that kind of effect." (Shiva)

I feel like...the conversation has turned into preaching?!

"On top of that, by having a partner, you can perceive others more clearly, and acknowledge that there are people with other way of thinking than yours. From the very beginning, the body of men and women were made differently, so there's no way their ways of thinking are the same. By being together with the other gender, by clashing small opinions in trivial daily matters, you obtain knowledge." (Shiva)

Growth as a human.

That's...

“That’s the meaning of marriage, Haine.” (Shiva)

“Like hell I care!” (Haine)

Why is it taking a direction as if I’m being taught?!

“It is splendid, Founder-sama! I have been moved by your words!!” (Karen)

And Karen-san is totally into it!

“So marriage had that kind of meaning! By being together with the person you love, your own personality grows! What splendid words!!” (Karen)

“Light hero, that’s not what I meant.” (Shiva)

Oi, Founder. Don’t get all-knowing in here.

“You don’t grow yourself, you grow together with the person you are tied together with. A man and a woman that have become one with the link that is a family; that is truly a single being. It is impossible for just one side to move forward.” (Shiva)

“It is even more splendid! I am feeling the need of marrying now!!” (Karen)

Stop it.

“Uhm...”

While there was this charade going on, Doraha finally spoke.

As a mentally young girl, she didn’t have much to say in this kind of conversation, so she was silently drinking coffee until now, but...

“This black drink is bitter and not tasty. Is there no tea?” (Doraha)

Is what she said.

“Dorahaaaaa!!” (Haine)

I shouted.

That’s because what she said was the number one phrase that would piss off the super coffee maniac Shiva.

Even putting milk or sugar in your coffee in front of him is unforgivable, and yet, she even went and said to bring out tea instead, so Shiva will definitely snap.

If it is that Shiva, he would definitely be pissed off!

Is what I thought, but...

“I see. The tongue of the young really can’t stand the bitterness huh... Oi.”
(Shiva)

Is what Shiva says as he calls the maid that was at standby at his side.

“Change it to a sweet cappuccino please. With lots of milk and sugar.” (Shiva)

He changed!!

This Shiva has completely turned!!

To think he could accept another person that has different tastes!! Is the married Shiva totally unfazeable?!

“It is incredible, Haine-san! This must be the power of marriage. We must learn from this too!!” (Karen)

“Not ready yet, so no!” (Haine)

“Also, sorry but, I also want a cappuccino!!” (Karen)

Humans don’t stay with the same personality from birth to death.

By experiencing many things and receiving influences from their environment, they can change their ways freely.

That is also one of the great things of being a human.

- 343: In the face of right and wrong

“But you people have come on a mission. Let’s have a slightly serious talk.”
(Shiva)

Shiva was merry because of his marriage, but he returned a bit to his past atmosphere.

Well, his face will definitely loosen again in a little while though.

“Battles occurring almost at the same time on different nations. That has reached my ears thanks to the wireless transmissions. To tell you the truth, I was absent for a while because of some business, you see. When I returned, a

lot of reports came to me to the point it flustered me.” (Shiva)

Shiva is currently keeping it a secret that he is incarnation of the Wind God Quasar.

He cooperated heavily in returning Mantle.

...At that time, his brain didn't look like it was a flower bed like now though.

Maybe it got rewritten temporarily because of his bad relationship with Yorishiro?

“From the four Demon Lords, three have already clashed with humanity. Moreover, the results were not a victory or a defeat, but a reconciliation. They were reports that made me doubt my ears.” (Shiva)

Shiva giving out that impression is something reasonable.

That's because he is one of the first people that encountered a Demon Lord after all.

The first one to appear in front of humanity was the Wind Demon Lord, Raphael, and it was Shiva who fought him with weapon in hand.

At that time, we both fought against him together and somehow managed to erase him, or at least that's what it looked like.

The price for that was that a warrior like Shiva, who had both the jobs of a Wind Founder and hero, was unable to continue doing that. Receiving damage that rendered him impossible to return to his line of job as a hero.

Giving his position of hero to his little sister, Hyue, he decided on concentrating on his Founder position.

“Shiva, I want to ask you this. Do you think humans and demons can join hands?” (Haine)

I want to hear his opinion as someone who fought against a Demon Lord to the point of breaking his body to an irreparable state.

“Rather than me, shouldn't you be asking the Demon Lords?” (Shiva)

Shiva answered composed.

“Both sides suffered a great deal of damage in that fight. Raphael has the

ability to change every single one of his cells into insects and regenerate himself, but your dark matter erased most of it and left just a few.” (Shiva)

“It is true that, even if he is a Demon Lord, that’s not something you can regenerate from immediately.” (Haine)

Because of that, I thought Raphael’s actions were slightly dull compared to the other Demon Lords.

“Normally, there’s no one who wouldn’t hold a grudge after being done something like that.” (Shiva)

“That’s just...!” (Karen)

Karen-san interjects as if she couldn’t hold it.

“That’s just unreasonable! When Raphael appeared, he was the one who attacked us first! We simply fought back. Getting angry for being greatly injured after that would be misguided blame!” (Karen)

“That logic is correct. But it is also true that the other party has their own view of things.” (Shiva)

With his marriage, Shiva has now obtained the ability to see other people with their different ways of thinking.

“Moreover, the problematic thing is that, in reasoning, being right or wrong isn’t that important. If we were to put it in an exaggerated way, you could get a hundred people and those hundred people might be in the wrong. Once one person thinks they are in the right, it will become their way of acting.” (Shiva)

“Especially in battle.” (Haine)

“Of course, there’s no way we would allow our destruction on reasons that are clearly wrong. If they are to attack, we will simply face them. That’s all we can do.” (Shiva)

‘That’s all we can do’, those were words show the limit of Shiva.

“Are you saying that, against a wrong reasoning, there’s no other way to stop them aside from fighting and defeating them?” (Haine)

“I don’t know if we can join hands like the other Demon Lords and Churches.

That is something the other party has to decide. We don't have the choice.”
(Shiva)

The cool-headed decision making of Shiva as a Founder was shown.

Their fight with the Wind Demon Lord had begun since long ago.

This will probably be a totally different battle from the other Demon Lords that had begun their own fights recently.

The sparks were already there and they will not disappear just like that.

“And so, I have ordered the military force of our Wind Church -the Kazama Shinobis-and the wind hero to be on alert. So that, even if the Demon Lord were to attack us, we will be able to react immediately.” (Shiva)

“I thought the inside of the city was a festival, but it looks like you are properly putting ground on the places where it is required.” (Haine)

“Of course. Or more like, because of the dangerous times, I was thinking of doing my wedding as simplistic as possible, but the guys below are not caring at all of the person in question and are going all festive.” (Shiva)

Shiva makes a wry smile.

He says all that, but it looks like he is still happy that everyone is celebrating them.

“Uhm...that means the wind hero...!” (Karen)

Karen-san says while fidgeting.

“Uhm...is Hyue-chan also...” (Karen)

“Of course. Now that you are in Rudras Metropolis, I would like you to meet her as well. It looks like she has been worrying about you people everyday.”
(Shiva)

“Ah, yes!” (Karen)

Karen-san's voice changed from timid to a springy one.

For her, her other hero comrades are also important friends. She has already met Mirack, Celestis, and Sasae-chan, so the remaining one is Hyue, and she must be worried about her.

“It looks like she is also preparing a lot of things for the upcoming Demon Lord battle. I would like it if you were to give her advice as someone who has already experienced battling with Demon Lords.” (Shiva)

“Yes, then, I will go immediately!” (Karen)

Karen-san quickly gets up from her seat and was intending to head to Hyue’s place right now.

Even though she hasn’t heard in what part of Rudras Metropolis she is yet.

“I will have someone of the church guide you. Work has piled up on me, so I can’t go with you guys. Please give her my apologies when you see her.” (Shiva)

It took us a lot of time to return Mantle after all. Of course work would pile up. Moreover, his wedding will be taking place soon, so it is a situation that’s clearly busy for him.

...Sorry about that, Shiva-kun.

“Understood! Haine-san, Doraha-san, let’s go as well!! Hyue-san may look like that, but she actually gets lonely easily!” (Karen)

“Understood, Karen-sama.” (Doraha)

Doraha follows after Karen-san who runs out of the room.

After confirming that only Shiva and I remained in the room, I ask him in a whisper.

“And so...what about the God Hero matter?” (Haine)

“No problem. Inflation— I mean, Yorishiro has already embedded the component to become a God Hero inside of Hyue. What’s required next is only to pour a part of a God inside of it.” (Shiva)

‘Seriously, since when did she manage to do that?’, is what Shiva said questioningly.

“Just that, there is a part that bothers me aside from that.” (Shiva)

“Something that bothers you?” (Haine)

“For that sake, can you meet with Hyue once? She is the wind hero, but at the same time, she is also the little sister of this Toreido Shiva. I want her to have a

fight that she can acknowledge.” (Shiva)

Six Gods of Creation, further divided into four Base Elements. Within that group, the Wind God Quasar was the one who noticed the potential of humans the fastest, and in order to learn about humans and change it into power, he incarnated as a human.

As that went on, he would have a new family, a new lover, and new emotions to interact with his important people.

Quasar had reincarnated several times already.

For the Toreido Shiva that only exists once, Hyue is his only little sister.

“Understood. I will go check it out.” (Haine)

I also stand from my seat and follow after Karen-san and Doraha who had left the room before me.

WR – Chapter 344-346: Reuniting with the sylph

- 344: Reuniting with the sylph

And so, we asked where the location of Hyue is, and to our surprise, she wasn't inside the Wind capital.

She was standing right at the wasteland outside the moving city of Rudras Metropolis.

Wind Hero, Toreido Hyue.

Her long black hair tied in a ponytail and her gallant straight figure felt picturesque even from far away.

“There she is! Hyue-cha~n!!” (Karen)

The first one to run towards her was Karen-san.

It can't be helped that Karen-san would get excited for reuniting with her hero comrade after so long.

“Ah...” (Hyue)

And it looks like Hyue also noticed Karen-san running towards her.

“I am truly sorry!!” (Hyue)

And she did a diving dogeza.

““Eeeeehh?!“

This not only shocked Karen-san but me as well.

Why did she suddenly do the highest form of apology the moment we meet?!

“It is been a long time-de gozaru! To tell you the truth, I knew in advance that Karen-dono would be coming!” (Hyue)

“Ah, yeah. It is been a while.” (Karen)

“Even so, I prioritized my training and didn’t go welcome you. As the wind hero, and as a friend, this is the very definition of disgraceful! I can’t face you like this, so I will be sticking it onto the ground!” (Hyue)

“Aaaah! Please don’t scrape your face on the ground so much!!” (Karen)

Karen-san could only get flustered.

Compared to Karen-san, I am not that much acquainted with Hyue yet.

I still haven’t grasped her character yet, but there’s no doubt that she is a special cookie just like the other heroes.

You could say she is an...extreme level of straightlaced?

“It is okay, Hyue-chan. I am not bothered by that. I am the one at fault for suddenly coming to visit after all. If I were to interrupt your training, I would be the one who would be hurt.” (Karen)

“T-That’s right. That’s why, don’t worry about it!” (Haine)

I also follow-up on her.

With that, Hyue finally raised her head from the ground. She was filled with dust.

“Karen-dono, Haine-dono, that big heart of you two that is as vast as the sky, I am truly humbled.” (Hyue)

And once again, she gives us her deep gratitude.

There, Doraha who came last said this.

“I haven’t forgiven you though.” (Doraha)

“I am truuuuulyyyyy sorry~~~!!” (Hyue)

Hyue rubbed her face on the ground again!!

“Back to zero!!” (Haine)

“Doraha-san! You really are ruthless on people of other nations!!” (Karen)

To think that it wasn’t only Hyue but Doraha also that had a side of her like this.

I see. Doraha is not only bad with other people, she is also crazy aggressive towards outside people.

The reason she was able to receive the message at the train station was because it was someone of the Light Church and her sensor barely worked in favor there.

“Anyways! ...Hyue-chan, you were training? That’s why you are at the outside of Rudras Metropolis, right?” (Karen)

“That’s right. My current training is slightly showy, so I asked Aniue-sama to stay in this land where there’s no people-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

So he changed the destination of the moving city on the request of his little sister...

Was Shiva unexpectedly a doting brother?!

“I see... Hyue-chan is doing her best as the wind hero after all.” (Karen)

“I was appointed as hero recently, so in order to stand side by side with Karen-dono and the others, I have no other choice but to work harder than everyone.” (Hyue)

“That’s not true. Hyue-chan is plenty strong.” (Karen)

True. From within the five heroes, Hyue utilizes a special divine tool called a long wind gun, which makes for an incredibly special type of fighting style.

Made with a machine structure, it can shoot at long distances, moreover, it can hit accurately at its target and pierce through them.

The range of attack is danger itself, and it could even shoot you death from a distance that you wouldn’t even be able to notice and wouldn’t be able to understand what happened.

Since the time the five heroes were gathered to form a team, Hyue has been standing at the backlines, seeing the whole battlefield and quickly disposing of the frontlines that approach which is incredibly important.

There’s not a single person in the Hero Alliance who would look down on Hyue.

“When you say training, you mean sniping training, right? Are you shooting accurately at something that’s far?” (Karen)

“No, that’s not the case-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

Hm?

“I am currently in the planning of a new fighting style-de gozaru. With the long wind gun I have been using until now, I thought I wouldn’t be able to face the Demon Lords.” (Hyue)

“Eh? But the sniping of Hyue-chan is super strong. If it is Hyue-chan; Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, Sasae-chan, and I would have peace of mind in leaving our backs to you, you know?” (Karen)

“But with that, I would be leaving the front completely to everyone, and I wouldn’t be able to fight without being protected. As long as I am a hero, I should be able to fight alone against monsters and...be able to face Demon Lords!” (Hyue)

Hyue says with strength.

I felt like she was a bit worked up there. Being nervous in the face of a big opponent like the Demon Lords is something that I have gotten used to seeing in the other heroes already, but...

“This is a good chance. I want Karen-dono and Haine-dono to inspect my new power. It is still incomplete, so hearing the opinion of you two will serve as reference.” (Hyue)

“W-What?” (Karen)

The straightlaced people are, at times, strong at pushing.

We ended up spectating Hyue’s training.

“Please look forward to it. This power will definitely be able to go against the Demon Lords. I have sold my soul to the devil for that sake!” (Hyue)

““Devil?!””

Doesn’t sound peaceful!

Please treasure your life and soul.

“Let me introduce you. The devil that I sold my soul to!” (Hyue)

“Hi there...”

And so, it appeared.

The proxy wind hero, Brastor Juo.

- 345: Whispering ghost

““Hiiiih!!””

Karen-san and I jumped up while raising a scream.

Because a ghost had appeared!

A ghost!

The ghost of a woman that has her hair hanging down her face!!

“Wait, this is Juo-san!!” (Haine)

The proxy wind hero, Brastor Juo-san.

She works as a scientist in the research laboratory of the Wind Church, and because she was so concentrated on her research, she ignored her appearance and her skin care as well, and ended up with an outward appearance like that of a ghost.

“This exchange is repeated...all the time. You still don’t learn...!” (Juo)

“Uhm, can you please not stand silently at my side?! Every time you do that, I am sure that one year is scraped off my life!” (Haine)

Karen-san was clinging to my body and trembling.

“...Fuh, long time no see~.” (Juo)

Juo-san had her whole face hidden with hair that looked like seaweed.

I feel as if I would be cursed if I were to answer carelessly, so I was hesitating on my answer.

“Also...first of all, congratulations on your marriage.” (Haine)

“.....*Blush*” (Juo)

She is also one of the reasons of the crazy ruckus that's happening in Rudras Metropolis.

The marriage of the Wind Founder.

Juo-san is incredibly related to it.

Because she is the one who will be marrying Shiva after all.

“...Tch!!” (Hyue)

When I said that, Hyue at the side clicked her tongue in displeasure. She pointed her wind gun up in the sky and shot it.

...So she is still a ‘I like Shiva a lot and hate Juo a lot’ huh.

What a brocon.

“And so! Here is the devil I sold my soul to!” (Hyue)

“Please don’t call your sister-in-law a devil, Hyue-chan!” (Karen)

Karen-san’s proper retort flew.

“...I see. Hyue is Shiva’s little sister, so if Juo-san marries Shiva, Hyue and her would be sisters-in-law huh.” (Haine)

“Wuoooooooo!! Gruoooaaaa!!” (Hyue)

Hyue is going mad.

This girl can’t accept the marriage on an exaggerated level.

“That’s! That’s something that doesn’t matter right now-de gozaru!!” (Hyue)

“She averted her eyes from reality.” (Haine)

“The problem is that this woman is the best scientist in the Wind Church!! Combining the wind techniques and the ethereal techniques. In terms of poultry inventions, there’s no one who can match this woman!” (Hyue)

“Fuhi, thanks for the compliment...” (Juo)

Juo-san doesn’t seem to be against it.

It is true that, from the five Grand Churches, the one that has the most advanced ethereal research is the Wind Church.

The churches were originally against the idea of the machine culture developing, so they were prohibiting it, but the only church who took the initiative to research it themselves was this Wind Church.

“That’s why I lowered my head to this ghost woman I didn’t want to lower my head to, in order to request something of her-de gozaru. The making of a new divine tool!” (Hyue)

““A new divine tool?!””

That announcement made both Karen-san and I raise our voices.

A divine tool is a weapon required to fight with divine power, and for the heroes that stand at top, it is completely necessary.

Not only that, the heroes are lend a unique divine tool just for them as tradition. The holy sword Saint-George of Karen-san is a divine tool that’s uniquely for her use.

The wind divine tool of Hyue is one that came from the city with the most advanced ethereal technology, so there’s even machine components in it.

Hyue’s long wind gun; Shiva’s dual wind guns; Juo’s wind rebellion guns; they are all weapons that you wouldn’t be able to see in other churches at all. At first glance, one couldn’t tell how they would be attacking their opponents.

And yet, she is saying there’s another new weapon now?

“But Hyue-chan, I said it before but, Hyue-chan’s sniping is plenty strong, you know? There’s no need to force yourself to change that battle style!” (Karen)

“There’s no point if it doesn’t work on Demon Lords-de gozaru! Right now my objective is only to defeat the Demon Lords! That’s why I had Juo make it!” (Hyue)

Just what in the world did she have Juo make?

“It was good timing that Karen-dono and Haine-dono came! Juo! We will be operating it for the first time now!! This is the time to show my gun technique and your scientific ability!!” (Hyue)

“...It is the request of Kotome, so I can’t say no. I will accompany you.” (Juo)

Kotome is apparently her mother-in-law.

“...Well then, switch on. Activate.” (Juo)

Juo-san takes out something that looks like a control and pushes the button.

At the same time, an earth tremoring *gogogogo* sound reverberated.

...No, the earth is actually tremoring?!

“What’s going on?! What’s going to happen?!” (Haine)

An unexpected development!

Doraha, who was playing around with the bugs in the area as if it wasn’t of her business, was also surprised by it and clung onto Karen-san.

“Wa?! Ah! Haine-san, that!!” (Karen)

“What is it?!” (Haine)

“The rock, the rock is...!” (Karen)

We are currently at a deserted wasteland faraway from Rudras Metropolis, so there was only small grass as far as I could see, but there was a single towering boulder standing there.

I thought it was a natural object in the environment, so I didn’t pay it much mind, but it looks like that wasn’t the case.

It was not a natural boulder, but a gigantic artificially made something that was covered and camouflaged as a boulder.

“Now everyone, feast your eyes on it!” (Hyue)

Hyue takes off the cover all at once.

And from inside, what appears is...!

“What?!” (Haine)

“What is that?!” (Karen)

Something that Karen-san and I couldn’t understand.

If I had to put it in words, it would be a...metallic giant?

It has the shape of a human and it is made of metal.

It is moving on its own and making sounds like those of roars!

“What is this? Is it a Golem?!” (Karen)

“It is true that it does resemble it, but...!” (Haine)

That's not the case, right?

Golems are earth element monsters, but I don't feel earth divine power from this metallic giant.

What I feel from it is clearly...wind divine power.

“...This is the...compilation of my...research.” (Juo)

Juo-san speaks proudly with a muttering voice.

“The result of combining all the wind guns made and making use of them in a smooth manner. A giant weapon that ended up being human-shaped in terms of machine structure. I call it a robot.” (Juo)

““A robot?!””

“A divine tool robot that moves on wind divine power..... I call it, the moving gun, Kukurukan.” (Juo)

- 346: Machine Beast

“Wind moving gun, Kukurukan?!” (Haine)

It is apparently the name of the metallic giant.

Even with that, my understanding is not keeping up at all!

“What's with this feeling?! It is the feeling of being explained something that's right in front of you but not understanding at all!” (Haine)

I remember having this feeling before...

Right, it was the same feeling as when Karen-san showed me the flying machine for the first time.

I couldn't understand at all what was in front of me, and even when it was explained to me, I couldn't understand the words itself at all.

That's how it feels right now.

“What in the world is this?!” (Karen)

And Karen-san seems to be in the same boat this time.

Isn’t that right? There’s no way this can be understood.

When a human is in front of something you don’t understand at all, they can’t help being dumbfounded.

“Maybe it really is a Golem? It is human-shaped and it is inorganic.” (Haine)

From within our memories, what’s closest to resembling this would be a Golem.

But Golems are solely earth element monsters, and the one in front of us is a metallic...robot? I feel like it is different in a fundamental level.

This is a type of machine that Juo-san has made as an ethereal scientist.

If I had to categorize it, I would have to put it in the same category as the flying machine.

“Juo, I want to make an operating experiment immediately. Is the data gathering ready?” (Hyue)

“It is completely ready. I have already set up several wind rebellion guns here and there for recording sake. They have the latest camera recorders installed and we can check back on it as many times as we want.” (Juo)

“Okay.” (Hyue)

After finishing a small talk, Hyue enters the metallic giant in question.

...Enters?!

“The wind moving gun is controlled in that way.” (Juo)

Juo-san, who remained in place, explains briefly.

“After the encounter with the Demon Lords, Hyue made a direct request to me. The request was an ‘equipment that can serve to go against the Demon Lords.’” (Juo)

“Go against...” (Haine)

“The Demon Lords?” (Karen)

As expected, Hyue was really single-mindedly thinking that there would be a battle against the Demon Lords huh.

“It is true that the long range gunmanship of Hyue is fearsome. Because the battle stage of the heroes match was limited...I was in the advantage...but in a field where anything goes and there’s no limit in distance, I would end up being one-sidedly shot.” (Juo)

True.

That’s how dangerous Hyue’s prided sniping range is, and there’s nothing scarier as an enemy.

“But the Demon Lord that she will be fighting against in the future, no matter how accurate and sharp of a snipe it is, she won’t be able to kill it. Their defensive capabilities and endurance are on a whole different level. In order to defeat that, we would need destructive power that surpasses it or we won’t be able to certainly kill them.” (Juo)

“And so, Hyue requested for that destructive power huh.” (Haine)

Just like she says, they possess an unbelievable amount of divine power, and most attacks would be blocked by their natural divine power barrier. On top of that, they all possess strong regenerative ability, and they won’t die by simply cutting them to pieces.

Raphael was the very definition of that. Even when I erased a great amount of his cells, I was unable to kill him.

No matter how accurate of a snipe one manages, there won’t be any point. Even if it is in the head or the heart.

That’s why she went for a destructive power that can erase everything.

“That’s right. In order to fulfill the request...I aimed for the increase of firepower. Without aiming for a breakthrough...I simply added everything that was already present.” (Juo)

The weapons she has made until now -the wind guns.

The best scientist of the Wind Church, Juo-san, has certainly not only created the wind rebellion guns, but many other weapons as well.

She added them all and aimed for something that can utilize them all...

“...And that’s what came out?” (Haine)

“I think it came out pretty well...even for my standards.” (Juo)

Juo-san’s breathing got rough.

That’s...a prided work of hers?

“There’s around 20 types of weapons installed in the wind moving gun... Kukurukan. Hyue is able to control them all at once. It couldn’t be helped that the weight had increased radically along with the firepower. With the infinite ethereal moving device added to it...it is possible to show mobility that can endure actual battle.

In terms of specs...it would be able to wipe out the giant monsters that have appeared in the past. Truly a scientific wonder of the Rudras Metropolis. The scientific power of the Rudras Metropolis is number one of the five Grand Churches...!” (Juo)

Understood. I have understood plenty enough that it is incredible.

“Please calm down, Juo-san!” (Haine)

It is difficult to deal with craftsmen that get fluent the moment it is about their craft.

The first thing that’s difficult is that they don’t make any sense!

“Now then, let’s begin the test drive! Don’t mess up the recording, Juo!” (Hyue)

A metallic...robot. I can hear the voice of Hyue from inside it.

“...As I said already...the preparations are already complete. Or rather...you are the one that has to begin soon or I might get tired.” (Juo)

“So you have said it now! Then, wind moving gun, Kukurukan! Start!!” (Hyue)

The metallic beast lets out a roar.

This was the sound it made when it moved at high potency, but it was so strong that it made my eardrums tremble.

“Grrrrrrr!” (Doraha)

That piercing sound scared Doraha and she was clinging onto the leg of Karen-san -or more like, isn't her wild nature getting stronger?

"Okay! Let's begin with the test firing of the strongest one first!!" (Hyue)

Hyue shouts energetically.

"Eh? Don't tell me..." (Haine)

"Wind main armament, Beethoven!!" (Hyue)

A cylindrical object comes out from the metal giant with the shout of Hyue, and ends up with a stance of being carried on its shoulder.

That was truly a cannon. It looked like it was shouldering a cannon.

And then, from its gunport, an overwhelming air heat was released.

Booom!!

The gun was pointing at a different direction and it was shot at a pretty far distance, and yet, a blast strong enough that it felt as if it was hitting my head directly had attacked me.

"Awawa!!" (Karen)

Karen-san and Doraha had stumbled two to three steps back and ended up falling on their butts. And then, the actual air bullet had...completely blown away a hill that was apparently the target!

"...The Wind main armament, Beethoven, is the wind gun that possesses the highest firepower within all the things I have made. It is a wind divine tool, so what is shot is a wind bullet. It doesn't change in basis, but the scale and destructive power are comparable to that of the Fire Church's 'Grand Melt'." (Juo)

The squall blew violently due to the sudden change of atmospheric pressure caused by the bombing.

No wonder they went through the trouble of operating it outside of Rudras Metropolis. If this were shot in the city, it would turn into a big catastrophe!

"Because of how incredibly big and heavy it is, along with its heavy energy expenditure, I was troubled in whether it was actually operable by a human, but

it looks like it is no problem for Kukurukan. With this, the Wind Church has obtained a new power." (Juo)

...Could it be that this person...has created a crazy incredible thing?!

WR – Chapter 347-348: There's a problem

“...The Wind Cannon, Beethoven. Its power and accuracy has reached the desired levels. No visible burden on the machine. Results are great.” (Juo)

Looks like it went as expected and Juo-san's mood was on rise.

“I have created something good. As dawn of the mass production of Kukulkan, we will crush something like the Demon Lords...!” (Juo)

Is it really okay to mass produce something like that?

Won't it turn into the last war!?

“Creating just that one machine blew away a whole year of the budget of our laboratory, so it won't be possible though.” (Juo)

“Ain't that too much?!” (Haine)

How much is one year of budget?!

How much is that one year specifically?!

No wait, I don't want to hear it! For a super commoner like me who feels pain in his pocket when treating a cute girl to train lunch boxes, there's no doubt the numbers she would say would be able to stop my heart!

“Hyue, looks like operating it is going smoothly. Next, I want to check the maneuverability and the chassis...” (Juo)

“.....”

“...Hyue?” (Juo)

Hyue, who was inside Kukulkan, wasn't making a single sound.

“This is...” (Haine)

“Isn't there something wrong?!” (Karen)

We obviously end up getting worried and run to the robot, forcefully opening up the hatch.

When we did that, Hyue fell out from it with her eyes going around in circles.

“Hyue?!” (Haine)

“Hyue-chan?!” (Karen)

Karen-san and I had released her together, but Hyue was completely unconscious.

“.....Looks like the drastic divine power consumption and the recoil gave her a double punch. I thought I solved the drying up of divine power with ethereal, but looks like the recoil was..... Should I strengthen the shock absorber in the cockpit?” (Juo)

“Don’t just calmly analyze it and help her out! Isn’t she your sister-in-law?!” (Haine)

“Who is her sister-in-law—?!!” (Hyue)

“Woah?!” (Haine)

Hyue revived with a roar!

To think she would react to the word sister-in-law even when she is unconscious. Does she really dislike it that much?!

“...Hah...Hah... How disgraceful. I lost consciousness huh. Beethoven is the strongest trump card of Kukulkan. If I faint every time I shoot it, it won’t be of use in actual combat.” (Hyue)

“We can solve the problem by increasing the defense of the cockpit. Let’s leave the test operation here for today and return to the laboratory.” (Juo)

“No, not yet...” (Hyue)

Hyue stands up, but it looks like her legs are unsteady.

“We simply tested shooting the main armament. The test firing of the other sub-weapons, and their effect on the chassis, and its endurance to continuous firing. We are going to test them in combat. There’s way too many things we have to test.” (Juo)

“That will be when the cockpit is improve—” (Juo)

“No! It is more efficient to bring out to light as many problems as possible to fix them all at once. For the sake of that, we have to continue testing!” (Hyue)

“No, wait.” (Haine)

Unable to take it, I enter to stop her.

“Even if you are to do that, you should put a break in between, Hyue. The recoil of the bombing has caused more damage to you than expected.” (Haine)

“...Even while I am doing this, who knows when the Demon Lord will attack. When that happens, we can’t have Kukulkan be unfinished. We have to prepare for an attack as soon as possible!” (Hyue)

Saying this, Hyue tried to enter the cockpit again.

As I thought, I could feel quite the hurry from her.

The threat of the Demon Lords.

The hero shoulders the duty of crushing them.

The five heroes that protect the five nations were all struggling with this pressure. However, I felt severe hurry from Hyue that was one step higher than that.

“...”

A hand grabs the hurried Hyue from the collar.

“?!”

And then, forcefully takes out Hyue who was trying to ride Kukulkan.

“Uwawawawawa?! What is the meaning of this?! ...Karen-dono?!” (Hyue)

Being dragged out, Hyue was confused and turns her head back.

She realized that the one who grabbed her collar was Karen-san.

“What’s the matter-de gozaru ka, Karen-dono?! As you can see, I am currently busy—!” (Hyue)

“Hyue-chan, let’s play.” (Karen)

“Eh?” (Hyue)

Hm?

“Hyue-chan, do you understand in what situation you are in? I have come here, you know? I am a guest, you know? Moreover, I am visiting here as the representative of the Light Church, the light hero. Isn’t it a matter of course that a hero of the same rank should be entertaining me?” (Karen)

“No, but, as I said...!” (Hyue)

“Fighting is not the only duty of a hero. That’s why, Hyue-chan, cancel your current plans, and play with me. Doraha-san as well, let’s go together!” (Karen)

“Yes, Karen-sama.” (Doraha)

Doraha agreed and Karen-san grabbed the hand of both as she pulls them.

“Wait! Did you two hear what I said-de gozaru ka?! I have an important duty to...! Aaaah~~~!!” (Hyue)

Being dragged away without a say in the matter, the echoes of Hyue’s cries fade away in the distance along with her figure.

.....

...That was Karen-san being considerate.

“...Thanks. You were a great help.” (Juo)

On the other hand, the ghost Juo had entered the metallic robot that remained.

“Hyue has been completely into the development of this lately that I thought she needed a break already. She is a serious girl after all. If someone doesn’t force her, she won’t take a break.” (Juo)

“Wouldn’t it have been fine for you to be the one to tell her?” (Haine)

“It is not possible for me. She hates me, so she won’t listen to what I say no matter what.” (Juo)

Right.

Hyue’s hate for Juo is quite the thing after all. Must be her brocon acting up

there.

“That’s why I was surprised when Hyue requested me to make this. I thought she wouldn’t ask me for anything ever.” (Juo)

Juo-san seemed to be in deep thought.

“That’s just how strong her resolve is. She is a hero and plans on protecting Rudras Metropolis at all costs.” (Haine)

“It would be nice if that were all there is...” (Juo)

The meaningful mutter of Juo-san bothered me.

But Juo-san smoothly activated the robot and prepared to return.

“I will be returning to the laboratory and improve this little one. This is probably the first and last time Hyue will be relying on me after all. Gotta do my best.” (Juo)

“Please don’t push yourself, okay? You are also busy, right?” (Haine)

She is the bride of a wedding that is soon to come after all.

There’s no doubt she should be busy with the wedding preparations and all that.

“...No worries. The preparations for the wedding are being done by other people.” (Juo)

“Oi oi.” (Haine)

“Shiva-sama is the same. We want to concentrate on our jobs. We are a couple that think the same way.” (Juo)

Saying this, she operates the robot and leaves.

...As always, she is a person that is hard to grasp.

Now then, let’s go after Karen-san, Hyue, and Doraha.

- 348: Bug eating relationship

“The completion of Kukulkan... the completion of Kukulkan.....! Is getting further away...!” (Hyue)

“I-It is okay, Hyue-chan! The Demon Lord-sans will wait while we are having a break and playing around!!” (Karen)

Hyue has been like this the whole time she had returned to Rudras Metropolis. And the city was also still in their festive mood over the marriage of their Founder.

Is this going to continue all the way until the wedding?

Karen-san, Hyue, Doraha, and I were in the middle of walking through the tumult of people.

“That robot is currently being improved by Juo, so it is not as if progress has been stopped. Taking a break is also part of work. Hyue, you have been working all this time lately, right?” (Haine)

In order to reduce the burden in Hyue’s heart even if for a little bit, I decided on hurting my pocket again.

If she eats something good, her heart should naturally gain some respite as well.

Because there were a number of stalls taking advantage of the festival, I bought snacks for all of our group.

I distribute this candy in a stick to all four of us.

“Wa~, so good! Even ordinary candy can give the feeling of delicious when eaten at a festival!!” (Karen)

Karen-san licks the candy in a stick and turns it around to enjoy the taste.

“It is a popular product of Rudras Metropolis, the lethocerus candy-ni gozaru. I also like it a lot-de gozaru yo.” (Hyue)

“Hm?!” (Karen)

The tongue of Karen-san that was licking on the candy had stopped.

“After cooking the freshly caught lethocerus from the water spots, they enclose them in candy-de gozaru. By the time your tongue gets tired of the sweetness of the candy, you can taste the saltiness of the insect-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

Now that she mentions it, insect food is common in Rudras Metropolis.

“But this lethocerus candy isn’t that good. Looks like they were stingy in the production cost and used lethocerus that’s not fresh-de gozaru. That’s why they made the candy non-transparent. They are making it so you can’t confirm the state of the inside before buying it-de gozaru yo.” (Hyue)

The ones selling have also thought it thorough.

We are tourists that just bought it without noticing that.

Well, I just bit on the candy normally and ended up crunching on the lethocerus that’s inside though.

...It is true that there’s a skeletal sensation to it. And there’s also the squishy feeling that comes out after biting it all.

As expected of the water bug that is said to be the strongest underwater, the stretchiness of its meat is nice. It is true that this serves as quite the nice stimulus when combined with the sweetness of the candy.

“...Uhm, Haine-san. If you want, you can have mine too...” (Karen)

Karen-san slowly offers me her candy.

If I remember correctly, Karen-san was always in tears when insect food came out huh.

No, but...

“Is that okay? You know...” (Haine)

“What?” (Karen)

“Karen-san licked that candy quite a lot, so if I were to put it in my mouth...” (Haine)

Karen-san must have reached to the conclusion of ‘indirect kiss’. Her face turned completely red.

“Never mind! I will take responsibility and lick it all!!” (Karen)

Is what Karen-san said as she brings the candy back to her mouth.

“Uh...sweet. It is good...! But when I finish licking this candy...!!” (Karen)

“Ah, it is okay-de gozaru yo, Karen-dono. I will eat it.” (Hyue)

Hyue says and bites on the lethocerus candy that Karen-san has in her hand.

Looks like she already finished eating hers.

“Eh? Is that okay, Hyue-chan?!” (Karen)

“Food differs from each nation after all. Forcing yourself to eat wouldn’t be good for either side. Nom nom.” (Hyue)

And so, the candy that Karen-san was licking, is now inside the mouth of Hyue.

In the past, Hyue had happily done her best to show the prided insect cooking of Rudras Metropolis to her new comrades.

Maybe she has noticed the differences that come from being raised in different environments.

“...Well, it can’t be helped-de gozaru yo. But the candy itself isn’t that good either...” (Hyue)

Hyue looked slightly dissatisfied as she bites onto the candy.

Seeing this...

“Hyue-chan! As I thought, I will be eating it!!” (Karen)

Karen-san pulls the candy out of Hyue’s mouth.

“Feeh?!” (Hyue)

“This is the taste that Hyue-chan likes, right?! Hating on the food that a friend of mine likes is not something that a hero should do! More so, saying that I don’t like it when I haven’t even eaten it yet! Nom!” (Karen)

Is what Karen-san declares as she bites on the candy that had gotten pretty small already from being inside of Hyue’s mouth.

“Wuh... the sensation of something that’s clearly not candy has come out... It is okay. I am the hero that was okay even when directly holding a lizard!” (Karen)

Lizard?

Just what in the world happened, Karen-san?

Lizards remind me of newts, and those are poisonous, so I don't really want to eat them.

"...Karen-dono, when the body of the lethocerus shows up, crunch on it without hesitation-de gozaru. Even if you lick it, it won't be taste of anything-de wa gozaranzo." (Hyue)

"Understood...!!" (Karen)

Gabu

"Feeh?! What's with this sensation that I have never felt before?! And this jelly-like meat that's coming out!" (Karen)

"That's the taste of the lethocerus-de gozaru yo. Since it is a fitting bite-size, it has been established as a sweet in the stores-de gozaru." (Hyue)

"Incredible! Incredible! To think I would be able to meet a taste that I haven't experienced before; this is truly cultural exchange!!" (Karen)

"I am happy to see you are happy-de gozaru! But as I said before, because this is not that good of a product, next time, I will be treating you to the best hand-made lethocerus candy-de gozaru yo!!" (Hyue)

"Really?! I am so happy!" (Karen)

Karen-san is truly a genius in getting along with people.

She broad-mindedly accepts the different values of other people, and puts love and effort in it.

Karen-san is probably a big core for why the five Churches that didn't get along at first are now joining as one, and even the Demon Lords are joining those ranks.

...By the way, Karen-san and Hyue were exchanging that candy like crazy. Is it okay because they are girls?!

My heart was throbbing just from watching it though!

By the way, Doraha didn't show much opposition to the lethocerus inside the candy and ate it completely -with stick and all.

WR – Chapter 349-351: The insecure hero

While we were walking around the city like this, the restless Hyue had slowly regained her calm and had begun to enjoy her reunion with Karen-san and the others from the bottom of her heart.

“Wa~! Hyue-chan, what’s this stall?!” (Karen)

“This is a throwing weapon stall-de gozaru na. The signature weapon of the Kazama Shinobis is the shuriken. You use those in this game-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

“Oh~! It is the type where you throw shurikens and hit the prizes, right?!” (Karen)

“No, you have a match with the stall owner throwing those shurikens, and the one who gets stabbed first loses-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

“What’s that?! That’s scary!” (Karen)

Even with that, Karen-san, Hyue, and Doraha had challenged the shuriken stall and left the stall owner like a cactus. They splendidly obtained their prizes.

Looks like the more shurikens you stab at the stall owner, the higher the prize rank.

They obtained what’s most likely the highest ranked prize, a big stuffed toy of the mascot character of Rudras Metropolis -Windy-kun-, and were chuckling.

“Everyone... thank you very much.” (Hyue)

After a while, Hyue suddenly thanked us and that led to confusion.

“Hm? What’s the matter? Were you that happy to get Windy-kun?” (Karen)

“No, aside from that...you guys brought me away from the development of the divine tool and were considerate on me by giving me a change of pace. I want to give my thanks for that-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

Oh.

Hyue also noticed the consideration of Karen-san huh.

She is a good girl after all. Well, that goes for all the heroes though.

“...Hyue-chan, there’s no need to be in so much of a hurry. You are not fighting on your own. With Haine-san, Doraha-san, and I here; even if a Demon Lord were to appear, we will be fighting together with you!” (Karen)

Karen-san hits her own chest filled with confidence. When she did this, her fist bounced off and her breasts shook.

“You don’t have to be pessimistic! The situation is tilting to a favorable direction for the humans. You have heard of the God Heroes in the wireless transmissions, right?” (Karen)

God Hero.

These words are not known only by a limited amount of people now, it is beginning to be known by the whole world.

“It is true that...I have heard about those reports from the messengers of their respective nations-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

“The Gods of our churches are helping us out! Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, Sasae-chan, and I have become God Heroes! Hyue-chan can definitely become a God Hero as well!!” (Karen)

“Do you really think so-de gozaro ka?!” (Hyue)

“That’s right! I heard this directly from the Fire God-sama and the Water God-sama after all!! They said that the Wind God Quasar-sama is especially in favor of the humans!!” (Karen)

That Nova and Coacervate, they had leaked those things out to the humans huh.

But more than that, the fact that they revealed their identities and made direct contact with the humans makes me want to hit those guys with a Black Hole.

This might come as weird coming from the Dark God that incarnated as a

human, but the boundary between humans and Gods should be clearly defined.

“You see! In the fights until now, we have directly met with the Fire God-sama, Water God-sama, and Mother Earth-sama directly, but they were all nice allies, you know!! That’s why the Wind God-sama must be an incredibly good ally as well, no doubt!” (Karen)

So she says, Shiva-san.

Those were words I would like the incarnated Quasar to hear and delight in his reaction.

...But, to think that Nova, Coacervate, and Mantle would be called good allies. Karen-san’s saint-like personality must play a big factor in how she sees them though.

But... leaving aside Nova and Mantle, Coacervate being a good ally huh.

...That contaminated water bastard was called a good ally. It played a big part that he has been distilled and the filth of several centuries has been taken away.

I skimmed through the newspaper that I had bought on the way here.

These were the headlines that were going around.

‘A miracle?! A spring welling up from dry land!!’

‘A river flood avoided urban areas, no casualties!!’

‘Villages that were fighting over a water source have made up! A mysterious monster used his wisdom to divide it equally!!’

.....

Those are all his doing.

Thinking that this guy will be accumulating filth and changing into a villain...

Does he digest karma? Or maybe he accumulates it?

“That’s why, Hyue-chan can become a God Hero when the Demon Lord-san appears! With that, it will be solved!!” (Karen)

The conversation on the other side continued.

Karen-san seemed to be in slightly high tension.

“Karen-dono... I think that’s wrong.” (Hyue)

“Eh?”

“It is true that the Gods loving us and helping us is something to be happy about. But if humans take that for granted and stop bettering themselves, the blessings of the Gods will only become poison that rots the inside of humans.” (Hyue)

Hyue speaks my mind out.

It also doubles for the reason of why I wanted humans to not know about Gods being in the surface world. Just knowing that fact alone can serve as a poison for the growth of humans, rotting their potential and possibilities.

“That’s why I want to grow stronger with my own strength as much as I can-de gozaru. Before relying on Gods, I should first become a hero that is acknowledged by the Gods -by my own strength!” (Hyue)

Hyue began to get worked up again.

All heroes lost their composure when the Demon Lords appeared, but I think Hyue was the one that took it the hardest.

“...Hey, Hyue, why are you so worked up?” (Haine)

“Uh.”

“It is true that it is important to be independent, but your current attitude feels as if you have to fight the Demon Lord on your own no matter what. What is the reason that’s making you feel that way?” (Haine)

When I asked that, Hyue made a discouraged expression.

And then, she painfully said.

“I...if I don’t do that first, I won’t be able to get balance.” (Hyue)

Balance?

What does she mean?

“I became a hero recently. The achievements as a hero, the experience; I am

lower than everyone in those aspects. Karen-dono, Mirack-dono, Celestis-dono; to stand at the side of the others, my efforts and ability are still lacking-de gozaru." (Hyue)

"That's not true. Hyue-chan is doing plenty well as a hero." (Karen)

Karen-san's heartfelt feelings seemed to not have been enough.

"That's why, I need achievements-de gozaru. A grand achievement that allows me to be acknowledged as a hero. I want to achieve this on my own without the help of anyone-de gozaru!" (Hyue)

"Going against a Demon Lord alone for the sake of that is just...!" (Haine)

The achievement she is aiming for is on the max level.

"Uhm... how about taking on a more gentle quest...? Monsters are not limited to Demon Lords after all!" (Haine)

For now, it would be better to cooperate with everyone in matters that affect the destiny of humanity as a whole.

Personal achievements should be raised slowly with your daily efforts.

"No, that won't do." (Hyue)

But Hyue was more stubborn than I thought.

"I have never fought by myself before after all." (Hyue)

- 350: Guardian of the backlines

"You have never fought alone?" (Haine)

That mutter of hers surprised Karen-san and I.

"Uhm...Hyue-chan? You say that, but I also haven't fought alone, you know?" (Karen)

Well, of course. The fights between humans and monsters are group battles that have the survival of their race at stake.

The heroes lead the respective soldiers of their affiliated church, and lately, the heroes have even cooperated in fighting together.

Fighting alone wouldn't be done unless you are quite the peculiar character. And thinking about the many things that would be lost if you were to lose, that peculiar character would be a sinful one.

"No, that's not what I mean. My fighting style requires the support of someone else at all times, so.." (Hyue)

I see.

Hyue's long gun, En-no-Ozuno, was made in mind for long range snipes.

With that kind of fighting style, there would be no way a proper one versus one can take place.

It would be either a one-sided assassination without giving the chance for the other party to notice, or a group battle, where you provide backup for the frontlines.

Watching the battlefield from the back and eliminating beforehand the dangers that the others haven't noticed.

I said this before but, the importance of this is of the highest degree, and her participation in the Hero Alliance was incredibly reassuring.

But when I think it again...

"It is true that Hyue's battle style is not fitting as a hero that cuts through the enemy lines." (Haine)

Heroes are the symbol that protects humanity.

How to say it. Shooting from a hidden location without standing out isn't that cool, or more like, not that hero-like.

"Hyue-chan, why did you choose that Wind Long Gu—nhgh..." (Karen)

Wind Long Gun technique.

Karen-san, don't bite your tongue in such a cute way.

"...*Cough*, why did you try to learn that? The wind divine power users have a variety of styles, and they all have their special points, which makes them interesting." (Karen)

True.

In the past, Shiva, who was a Founder and hero at the same time, used the dual wind gun technique and showed terrifying close combat prowess.

The proxy wind hero, Juo, had an even more unique fighting style called Wind Rebellion Guns.

Both of them are suited to fight directly with the monsters at the frontlines, and they are flashy and thrilling battles styles.

“...I originally wanted to be of help to Aniue-sama...” (Hyue)

I see.

“If Aniue-sama will be fighting at the frontlines, I will take the back and protect Aniue-sama from danger. That’s why I learned the wind long gun technique-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

The brother that advances forward, and the little sister that protects the back; she was training with that image in mind.

“To tell you the truth, I didn’t think at all that I would become a hero-de gozaru. I simply wanted to be of help to Aniue-sama. Becoming stronger and fighting; those were my only objectives-de gozatta.” (Hyue)

Instead of defeating the enemy, she wanted to be a sniper that secures the safety of her allies.

Her reason for choosing that position was, as expected, her brother huh.

“Hyue-chan, you really like your brother...” (Karen)

“Yes! I like him a lot-de gozaru!!” (Hyue)

Hyue agrees vehemently.

...Uhm, isn’t that the part where you should get embarrassed cause you were seen through?

“And I want Juo to die-de gozaru!!” (Hyue)

“I didn’t ask you to let so much of your true feelings out!!” (Karen)

“...Juo was taken out of her position as hero and Aniue-sama took her position as replacement, which led to his body breaking, forcing him to retire. The batton was passed to me-de gozatta.” (Hyue)

Hyue was once again showing a pained expression.

“I honestly didn’t imagine that things would turn out like this-de gozaru. My strength was supposed to protect only Aniue-sama. And yet, it isn’t limited to protecting him anymore, but protect all the people of the Wind Church -no, all the people in the world. Is my current self enough to achieve that?” (Hyue)

This was the first time I heard the wavering of becoming a hero from the mouth of Hyue.

We witnessed the moment when she became a hero.

A hero is a position that holds heavy responsibility, so it will of course come with uneasiness and doubts, but it looks like that uneasiness continued all the way until now.

“That’s why you had a new divine tool made and thought of a different battle style. All in order to get the achievement of defeating a Demon Lord on your own?” (Haine)

Even if that’s the case, I think that robot strays way too far from that!

“...Sorry. It was a verbal slip just now-de gozatta. Please forget about it.” (Hyue)

When reaching certain positions, those people are not allowed to show weakness.

A hero also falls into those positions.

Hyue noticed this and corrected her posture.

“No matter if I am worthy of that position or not, now that I am a hero, I have to fulfill that position to the best of my abilities-de gozaru. If I don’t do that, it would be a disgrace for Aniue-sama that had chosen me as a hero.” (Hyue)

“Truly like you.” (Haine)

“And so, I plan on continuing my training without slackening. If possible, I would like Karen-dono and Haine-dono to assist me.” (Hyue)

Hyue lowers her head deeply.

Well, helping each other is important, and helping out in training isn’t a bad

thing.

But at this rate, I feel like she will refuse any reinforcements when the actual battle with the Demon Lord happens...

“But, in the end, I still think you are fine as you are, Hyue-chan.” (Karen)

Karen-san says this with a tone as if soothing Hyue.

“With how things are going, I feel like there won’t be a battle with the Demon Lord-sans.” (Karen)

“Eh?” (Hyue)

“We have reached a compromise with Michael-san, Gabriel-san, and Uriel-san. Raphael will definitely—!” (Karen)

Before Karen-san could finish saying what she wanted to say, a shouting voice interrupted them.

“Hero-sama!! Wind Hero, Hyue-samaaaa!!”

Looks like it was someone from the Wind Church.

He is clearly agitated.

“I am so glad...! So you were here! ...We searched everywhere for you.”

“What’s the matter?” (Hyue)

Even if she carries insecurities inside of her, if she were to show them to the outside, she would be a failure as a hero.

In front of her brethren, she had to tidy up her voice and attitude.

“Please return to the headquarters at once! Something terrible has happened!”

- 351: Emergency

“Something terrible?! What in the world happened?!” (Hyue)

Being urged by the member of the Wind Church, Hyue hurriedly returns to the headquarters, and we had no choice but to follow.

In the current state, the only terrible thing that could happen would be the

arrival of the Demon Lord.

Looks like the final Demon Lord battle will begin!

—That's what I thought, but when we stepped into the Wind Church, the one who received us was a maid-like person I see for the first time.

“Ah, Hyue-ojousama! You have finally come!!”

“Fein-san, what's the matter?” (Hyue)

Hyue seems to be acquainted with her as well, but she was also confused by this.

“Ah, everyone, this is Fein-san. She is a maid of our Toreido household-de gozaru. She has been working under us for a long time and she is practically family-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

“Ojousama...! Those words are wasted on me!” (Fein)

Now that I think about it, Hyue's family is one of the most influential households in the Wind Church.

That's why the eldest son Shiva became the Wind Founder and ended up marrying Juo who is from an influential family too.

“Fein-san is also one of the people preparing the wedding of Aniue-sama-de gozaru. Since the two in question are busy.” (Hyue)

“Yes! We are cooperating with the Brastor household to progress the preparations.” (Fein)

When I look, the butler-like person at the side lowers his head.

It is a wedding between influential families, so there must be a lot going on.

“...But can you wait for a bit, Fein-san? There's apparently something terrible happening, so I returned to the headquarters just now.” (Hyue)

“I was the one! I was the one who asked to call for Hyue-ojousama!!” (Fein)

“Eh?” (Hyue)

Looks like...things are moving to a different direction?

“I was the one who told them it was something terrible! It is terrible!” (Fein)

“Uhm...Fein-san? What has happened?” (Hyue)

“It is terrible!!” (Fein)

Spit out what is terrible already.

“The preparations for the wedding are not proceeding at all!!” (Fein)

.....

.....Wa?

“What? That’s all?” (Haine)

I thought it was the arrival of the Demon Lord, so once things were revealed, it felt like cold water was thrown onto me. I ended up slipping out those words and the Maid-san glared at me for that.

“What do you mean by ‘that’s all’?!” (Fein)

“Woah!” (Haine)

“Shiva-obocchama and Juo-sama’s wedding is an event of utmost importance as it is the joining of the Wind Church’s influential powerhouses; the Toreido and Brastor family! As the person left in charge of it, for this maid of the Toreido family, this is a job of top priority!” (Fein)

What an incredibly threatening attitude!

“More so when Shiva-obocchama is the current Wind Founder! This is a celebration that involves the whole Wind Church! If this were to fail, I would have to die to make amends!!” (Fein)

How exaggerated!...is what I thought, but there might be that much of a punishment when influential families are involved.

I tried directing my gaze to Hyue just in case, and Hyue shook her head to the sides with an exhausted expression.

...So it was only this maid-san being heavily delusional huh.

“So, what do you mean by the preparations of the wedding not proceeding? If I remember correctly, the wedding will be...” (Hyue)

“In ten days!!” (Fein)

10 days?!

Isn't that pretty close?

With the day being this close, it is understandable that the city would be raising a festival though.

No, raising a festival is still too soon even with 10 days.

"How much is not prepared?" (Hyue)

"Everything!!" (Fein)

Everything?!

"Everything, you say?!" (Hyue)

"What do you mean by everything?!" (Karen)

Not only Hyue and I, even Karen-san was surprised and bit onto those words as well.

Maybe the maid-san felt danger, her face turned blue.

"That's...Shiva-bocchama and Juo-sama prioritized their work and didn't get involved at all in their wedding preparations, so...! No, that part is fine. The two of them are important people of the Wind Church, and they are busy. That's why we took the job of proceeding with the preparations, but...!" (Fein)

Did a problem appear?

"Even with that, the two of them said they wanted to decide on the important things since it is their own wedding. The wedding dress, the interior design of the opening banquet, the menu, the guests' seat orders, and the cake; there's nothing decided!!" (Fein)

Eeeeeeeeh?!

There's only 10 days left, right?!

"The ceremony itself has already been decided that it will be held in the Grand Wind Church, with him being the Wind Founder, but Shiva-sama and Juo-sama said that they would be deciding on the priest as well, and that hasn't been decided either. The five candidates are still on hold!!" (Fein)

Uwa...

“Shiva-sama had suddenly said that ‘I will be meeting with the Light Founder’ and went missing for several days, and when he finally returned, he holed up in his office room with the work that had accumulated!! No matter how many times I called, there was no answer!” (Fein)

“Fein-san has a habit of nagging a lot, so Aniue-sama ended up getting a habit of ignoring what she says.” (Hyue)

“Everything is for the sake of Bocchama becoming a wonderful head of the Toreido family! But now that it has come to this, the only other person aside from myself that can make Shiva-bocchama listen is Hyue-ojosama!!” (Fein)

“What about father and mother?” (Hyue)

“If Danna-sama and Oku-sama were to learn of this mess, my dignity as a maid would be...!!” (Fein)

The maid-san has it tough in a lot of ways huh.

But, from what I hear, the reason why Shiva went missing in such a busy period is clearly because we dragged him to the Nameless Desert.

...I have a part of the responsibility in this.

“Was Juo the same?” (Haine)

When I ask the butler that seems to be from the Brastor family, he simply nodded with a disheartened expression.

“...I had her make Kukulkan, so I am partly to blame for that.... Understood.” (Hyue)

Hyue turned to me.

Hm?

“Haine-dono, it seems like you are close to Aniue-sama. Aniue-sama was wise and brilliant, so he was unable to make close friends in the Kazama Shinobis, so you two have an incredibly mysterious closeness. But that’s exactly why he would hear what you say. Can you please bring Aniue-sama here in my sted?” (Hyue)

"I am fine with that but, what about you, Hyue?" (Haine)

"I will be going to where Juo is. The time limit is already closing in. I want to take care of the troublesome stuff as soon as possible." (HYue)

Meaning that she will be dividing the job rather than just leaving it to one person huh.

Okay.

Just like I said before, I hold part of the responsibility.

This is slightly peaceful compared to a Demon Lord battle, but in order to protect the festive mood of Rudras Metropolis, I will be providing my best to assist!

WR – Chapter 352-354: I heard about it from a neighboring housewife

Bam!

I kick open the door without knocking.

“Hiih?!” (Shiva)

And Shiva screamed in surprise from it.

He stops his hands that were signing documents.

“What, so it was Haine! Ah~, that surprised me. Did you check on Hyue already? I want to hear the details about it, but sadly to say, I still can’t get my hands off this, you see.” (Shiva) “[Dark Matter, Set]” (Haine)

“Eh? Uwaaa?!!” (Shiva)

I engulf Shiva in dark matter no questions asked and, just like that, leave the room carrying him on my shoulders.

Kidnapping the Founder?, I don’t care.

I have the permission of the wind hero, so there’s no problem.

And in this way, I return shouldering my catch, and there, I could see Hyue returning with the ghost Juo under her arms.

“Good?” (Hyue)

“Good.” (Haine)

We were having an exchange with the minimum amount of words.

Quick information transmission is an important part in succeeding at a crime.

And so, like this, we gathered the bride and groom.

We made them do a seiza side by side.

“Uhm...Hyue? Just what in the world is going on?!” (Shiva)

Shiva was unable to understand what was happening at all and the fact that he was suddenly kidnapped.

You would obviously want to hear the reason in all the confusion.

“There’s no way you don’t know, Aniue-sama. I have already heard everything from Fein-san.” (Hyue) “Eh...” (Shiva)

“Even when you are in face of your wedding that only happens once in your whole life, you have been too focused in your job that you haven’t done the preparations. Aniue-sama’s wedding not only involves both of your families, but also the whole Wind nation, and on top of that, it also gathers the attention of the other Churches.” (Hyue) Truly the epitome of workaholic.

“If you were to show an unsightly wedding because of a lack of preparations, the embarrassment of the Wind Church could be transmitted to the whole world! I will have Aniue-sama and the others concentrate on the wedding preparations! All other jobs will be temporarily put on hold!” (Hyue) “B-But, if we were to do that, the management of the Wind Church would stagnate—!” (Shiva) “Just leave it to administration. If they can’t progress with anything without inquiring with the Founder, they are of no need!” (Hyue) “No, but...it was because of my long absence that work that only the Founder can put a final word to has been accumulated heavily...!” (Shiva) “If you have been able to manage until today, you can manage to accumulate it for 10 days more. At any rate, please quickly decide the priest for the ceremony!” (Hyue) Uwa...

Hyue is going full-throttle, no questions asked.

I thought she was a straight-laced and moderate girl, but to think she had such a strong pushy side to her.

“Hyue-ojousama has been like that since long ago.” (Fein)

Fein-san, who is standing by my side, says this.

“She is polite and proper when in public, but with her relatives...especially Shiva-obochama and Juo-sama, she is...how to say it, incredibly strong!” (Fein)

“Even towards Juo?” (Haine)

Meaning she sees Juo as a relative?

Or more like, she sounds like the total opposite of our Doraha.

“Yes. I am serving the Toreido family from my father’s side, so I know of Obocchama since they were children. Hyue-ojousama, who is normally obedient like a doll, would turn into a beast only at the times when Juo-sama came to play!” (Fein) “I thought that was because she hated me...!” (Juo)

““Hiih?!””

Juo suddenly appeared from nowhere, and Fein and I were about to have our heart stopped.

Looks like her ghost-looks aren’t something that you get used to no matter how long you know that person for, as proved by Fein-san.

“I have been bitten by her in the times she was not even a year old. I thought that she simply couldn’t stand me in a physiological level...!” (Juo) “T-That’s not the case, Juo-sama! Hyue-ojousama likes Juo-sama quite a lot!” (Fein) “Really?” (Juo)

Maid-san, I understand you wanting to smooth the relationship of your employer’s family, but I think you shouldn’t say those kind of things so lightly...

“That’s true. When Juo-sama was a child, every time you came to play to our residence, Shiva-obocchama would always meet you together with her, didn’t she?!” (Fein) “Rather than calling it meeting me, it was more like she was waiting to hit me...!” (Juo) I can imagine a little Hyue going ‘grrr’ as she shouts ‘don’t touch Aniue-sama!!’.

“Even when Juo-sama walked the path of a scientist and entered the academy, Hyue-ojousama had Juo-sama in her mind. She held you in her mind as much as Shiva-obocchama who had entered training for the Kazama Shinobis.” (Fein) “It is more of a ‘know thy enemy’...!” (Juo)

The one who controls information controls the war after all.

“Well, I have tried asking about this to Hyue-ojousama once. About what she thinks of Juo-sama.” (Fein) “You overstepped your boundaries there, Maid-san.”

(Haine)

This has already pushed me to blurt my thoughts out.

“Well, I brought that topic up in between casual talk though. Until that time, I honestly thought that Hyue-sama didn’t like the lady of the Brastor household.” (Fein) But Hyue apparently answered in this way.

“She said: ‘It is the person that Aniue-sama likes a lot, so it can’t be helped’.” (Fein) Fein-san plays out with a change of tone.

“Looks like rather than her own feelings, she had accepted the feelings that Shiva-obocchama had towards Juo-sama and couldn’t do anything about. She treasures her brother more than anything else after all. She understands that the help of Juo-sama is necessary for the sake of Shiva-obocchama’s happiness.” (Fein) “Eh...” (Juo)

“There’s no bigger happiness as a maid than being able to serve these siblings.” (Fein) That’s how Fein-san wrapped this up.

This might be the silver tongue of a maid that is trying to avoid problems within the family, but it also felt like there was a tint of truth in it.

That must be how the heart of a human works.

“Fein-san! Fein-san!!” (Hyue)

And Hyue was currently unstoppable.

“The personal selection of the priest, the interior design of the banquet, the seating order of the attendees; all of those have been decided! What’s left is for the staff to do their best!!” (Hyue) Already?!

Hyue-san sure works fast!

“Thank you very much!! With this, we will make it to the estimated day!!” (Fein) “What hasn’t been decided yet is the bride’s dress!!” (Hyue)

Hyue’s gaze falls onto Juo.

“Let’s go, Juo! This point alone can’t be left to the groom! You have to choose for yourself the dress that you will be displaying!!” (Hyue) “.....Hyue.” (Juo)

“Hm? What?” (Hyue)

“Nice, sister-in-law.” (Juo)

“Stop with the nonsensical talk and hurry. I heard that the bride’s dress is still only sewn in its initial stages!!” (Hyue) Hyue pulls the hand of Juo-san.

This is the first time I see her going in such an energetic manner. I can already see the difference in treatment she has towards family.

- 353: Purification equipment

Hyue pulls Juo-san away.

We can’t just leave those girls alone, so Karen-san, Doraha, and I go together with them.

The place we arrived at was a luxurious clothing room.

There were several tens of clothing that were worn by mannequins or hung and lined up, moreover, they were all female clothes. On top of that, from what I see, each one of them looks so fancy that I think it would cost a whole month of my pay for a single one.

They truly are *the* dresses.

“These are all the candidates for the wedding dress of Juo.” (Hyue) “All of them?!” (Haine)

Isn’t there way too many?

There might actually be close to a hundred dresses here!

“Are you saying we have to choose only one from all of this?!” (Haine) “What are you saying, Haine-san? In the weddings of these days, it is common sense to change dresses.” (Karen) “Change dresses?” (Haine)

Karen-san’s was looking at me with eyes as if saying ‘does he not know?’.

“You change several times in the middle of the ceremony. And so, you dress in several different types of wedding dresses.” (Karen) “I see, and in that way, it entertains the eyes of the guests.” (Haine) “That’s not it!” (Karen)

“It isn’t?” (Haine)

“Isn’t it obviously because the bride wants to dress in a variety of dresses?! A

wedding ceremony is something you only get once in a lifetime!! That's why, it is impossible to just go in one dress!!" (Karen) Go in several different dresses for one's own sake?!

I can't understand well the desires of a woman!

"Well, adding to that, this is the Wind Founder's wedding, so it has the influence of the whole Wind Church on the table. There's the need to make the wedding as extravagant as possible, which will also lead to showing the other churches how big the Wind Church is." (Hyue) Hyue explains as she checks the dresses.

"The era of confrontation has passed, and peace is becoming the standard of the whole world, so there's nothing good in being seen lightly. The other churches will definitely send envoys to celebrate this occasion, so we have to make a grand wedding that will awe them!" (Hyue) Well, Karen-san and I are like the envoys of the Light Church in a sense.

We only noticed at the moment we arrived though.

"If we are going to make it extravagant, changing the dresses once or twice won't be enough. Ten times, twenty times...no, we should change it 100 times, maybe 200 times." (Hyue) Wouldn't that make her change all the time in the wedding?!

"But there's a problem with that..." (Hyue)

Hyue's bitter gaze turns towards a certain direction and we follow it.

At the place we focused our gazes in, there was a ghost that felt as if she had crawled from the depths of the netherworld.

This ghost is without doubt the bride of the wedding.

"...No matter how beautiful and luxurious of a dress we have her wear..." (Hyue) "If the person herself is like this...!" (Haine)

The guests will most likely be in awe for a different reason —mostly fear.

"It is practically a mystery why this point hasn't been addressed until now though!" (Haine) "Well, the way of dealing with it had already been established, so it wasn't taken as a big problem." (Hyue) Right.

In the past, there was a time when we tried to beautify this Juo-san that looked like she had came right out of drowning in the sea, and the result was that she ended being an incredible beauty.

It was as if a vengeful ghost had ascended to heaven.

I have seen this purified Juo-san once, but she was so dazzling and beautiful that I don't remember it well now.

"Haine-san? What are you remembering~?" (Karen)

"Wah?!" (Haine)

Karen-san whispered at my back and I felt my spine shiver.

"Uhm...then, how about calling Celestis or Sarasa-san to beautify her by the time of the wedding?" (Haine) With the help of the water divine power that can affect the body, we can purify Juo-san.

By doing that, a heavenly bride will most definitely descend in the wedding.

"Umu, that's why this problem was not seen as a big one-de gozaru ga. But with this, it might be impossible to try on the wedding dresses-de gozaru na. For now, how about selecting the ones she should wear just by glance?" (Hyue)
"No problem." (Juo)

Is what the ghost bride added.

"I don't have any preference. I can't go troubling my friend Sarasa all the time." (Juo) "By that, you mean?" (Haine)

"I have made this." (Juo)

Saying this, she points at a certain something that's at the corner of the room.

Looks like...a metallic capsule that a whole human can enter?

We again didn't notice such a strange thing so close by us!

"After receiving the help of Sarasa and the others, I tried making this. This is an ethereal device that replicates their techniques." (Juo) "Eh?! Don't tell me, you are planning on using this to..." (Haine)

"It is pretty easy to replicate the effects that the water divine power has on the body by using ethereal. With this, I can transform again!" (Juo) Saying this,

Juo-san presses the button on the capsule.

Then, the capsule opens in two as if saying 'come in'.

Juo-san enters the capsule as if this was the obvious way, and then, presses a button inside the capsule, and the capsule closes.

Right now, Juo-san was completely a Schrodinger Juo-san.

I can only feel uneasiness in all this, but maybe because of Juo-san operating it from the inside, the machine began to slowly move.

...*Wuuuun, clank*

Beep, Beep, Beep, Beep, Beep, Beep, Beep, Beep—!

Zugagagagaga!!

Dotan, batan

Zudodododododo!!

[Thank you very much!!]

“Awawawawa?!”

From inside the capsule, sounds that are definitely not natural were coming out from it!?

Is the person inside okay?! Or more like, what is happening in there?!

By the time our uneasiness changed to fear, the capsule that was making noises like crazy let out a groan as it stopped, and turned silent.

And then, it opened slowly, and what appeared from inside it was...

“Aloha~.”

A heavenly descended, purified Juo-san.

- 354: Dress Selection

I just can't believe it.

Seeing this heavenly descended being as the same person as that vengeful ghost is just...

Glossy black hair flowing down, skin that glows like a pearl; the two eyes of hers, that one couldn't see at all because of her previously weedy hair, were now visible and dazzling. This slightly drowsy expression of hers contrasted with the clear-headed expression of Hyue.

“...Tch.” (Hyue)

Hyue-san, I have to question that habit of clicking your tongue everytime you see her.

“If you can turn into that in an instant, you should just maintain that look in your everyday life.” (Hyue) “But that side is my natural form, so don’t you think that’s fine?” (Juo) Well, your current form gives more of a reassuring feeling, you know...

Isn’t it just fine to make the beautiful form into your actual form?

“Haine-san? Why are you getting all lovestruck?” (Karen)

“Ouch ouch ouch ouch?!” (Haine)

It hurts?!

Karen-san is pinching my butt for some reason!

I am not lovestruck or anything. I was simply admiring a beautiful woman.

“Haine-dono doesn’t understand the heart of women-de gozaru na...!” (Hyue)
Even Hyue pitched in!

And the Juo-san in question...

“...Fuhi.” (Juo)

Her inside was the same as before.

Well, obviously. If her personality changed along with her appearance, I wouldn’t be able to trust women anymore.

“Let’s leave that aside. Now that you are in that appearance, we can actually resize the dresses. Let’s begin trying them on.” (Hyue) “...For now, let’s reduce the candidates. Which one to wear at the wedding ceremony? It would be

better if it were as flashy as possible." (Juo) "Right. There will be envoys of the other churches as guests, so this will also serve as a show of our change in policies from the time we were secretive. Let's make it a really flashy one." (Hyue) "A plain one would give out the impression of still being secretive..." (Juo) Is what Hyue and Juo-san said as they begin choosing the dresses.....

""DOOOON'T!!""

For some reason, the one that they chose was completely dirt bad.

"It is no good-de gozaru! Even if my head understands it, my instincts ends up choosing the plain ones-de gozaru!!" (Hyue) ".....We of the Wind nation try our best to not stand out, and our motto is to have an air-like presence... Even if asked to choose a flashy dress now..." (Juo) What a praiseworthy nature you have been born with, Wind people.

They have been tasked with the duty of hiding since the time they were born, the very place they live in is always in motion, and it is the church that no one could put a finger on; being unable to suddenly stand-out might not be that much of a surprise.

"Uhm...If you want....!" (Karen)

Karen-san raises her hand nervously.

"How about I check the dresses?" (Karen)

"Karen-dono will?!" (Hyue)

"The Wind people can't choose flashy designs. In that case, I as someone of the Light nation, might be able to take a different perspective about it. Since I am already here, please let me help out." (Karen) "Karen-dono!?" (Hyue)

Hyue firmly took the hand of Karen-san.

"I am truly grateful! If Karen-dono of the Light nation is to oversee this, I am sure we will be able to find a dazzlingly flashy dress in no time-de gozaru!?" (Hyue) "Wait, Hyue-chan?! In what light do you see the Light Church?!" (Karen) True.

Do you think the Light Church that worships the Light Goddess Inflation would be a bunch of eccentric people.....wait, that might not be wrong?

“Fine!! See! This is the one I have chosen. My favorite wedding dress!!”
(Karen) What Karen-san pulled out was...a pure white dress that was way too
loyal to the basics.

In a sense, it looked like white like snow, and released a radiance that could
dazzle the eye.

“Ooh! The white color easily shines and stands out! So the basics is the way to
go, is that right-de gozaru?!” (Hyue) “Good job, light hero...!” (Juo)

Looks like Hyue and Juo-san were satisfied with Karen-san’s suggestion.

“Well then, let’s try it out at once, Juo! If there’s an issue with the size, we
have to resize it at once! We have short time to do that!” (Hyue) “Y-Yes,
ma’am...!” (Juo)

Hyue and company were going at high pace. At that time...

“Wait, please.” (Karen)

Karen-san stepped in again.

“I am sorry to stop you when you are in a hurry, but I have another proposal.”
(Karen) “A proposal?” (Hyue)

What in the world would Karen-san propose?

“How about Hyue-san also tries out the dresses?” (Karen)

“Excuse me?!” (Hyue)

Hearing this, Hyue was greatly confused.

“What do you mean-de gozaru, Karen-dono?! I am not the one getting
married but this woman-de gozaru zo! There’s no point in anyone other than
her wearing a dress-de gozaran ka!!” (Hyue) “There is meaning. We will be
comparing how it will look in differing heights.” (Karen) ““?!””

“Clothes give off quite the different impression depending on the height of
the person wearing it. There’s designs that go better for plump people, as well
as ones that look good on slender ones. We will be comparing to see which one
it is for each dress.” (Karen) “In other words...Juo and I?” (Hyue)

Now that she mentions it, these two girls have quite the contrasting body

build.

Because of her work as a scientist, Juo-san's body is decently plump, and her breasts and butt have volume.

On the other hand, Hyue has trained her body, so her body is well-toned, and looks like an herbivorous beast that's specialized in running. And the breasts to match that body...

“...” *Bang!*

“Uoo?! That was dangerous!” (Haine)

Hyue had silently shot her gun?!

I guarded myself with dark matter right before it hit me, but Hyue really is quite radical in her reactions!

“...Fuhi, tiny breasts seal of approval.” (Juo)

“Shut up!” (Hyue)

Friction was happening between Juo and Hyue.

“It is fine! Hyue-chan's small breasts are efficient small breasts!! They are made in a way so they don't obstruct your job as a hero!” (Karen) “Even if Karen-dono -a hero that has pretty big breasts-tells me, it doesn't sound convincing!” (Hyue) Calling them efficient small breasts made my heart throb for some reason.

“As proof of that, Hyue-chan's whole body is well balanced, and has a smoothness like that of a cat! It is a body build that is practically fated to have small breasts as the most beautiful part of it!” (Karen) “I can't tell if you are complimenting me or picking a fight with me!” (Hyue) “It is exactly because of Hyue-chan that we can compare it with Juo-san on the same dress!! Now then, you two, change clothes!!” (Karen) The ultimate pushiness of Karen-san had now activated.

When Karen-san is like that, the only one who would be able to stop her is Yorishiro.

“I understand! I will do what Karen-dono says, so just...!” (Hyue)

Hyue's embarrassed expression is directed at me.

Ah, well, of course.

"I will be waiting outside." (Haine)

"There's no need for that." (Karen)

"Eh?"

"[Holy Light, *Nekodamashi*]" (Karen) It was in an instant.

Karen-san, who had walked right in front of me, had both of her hands release an incredible amount of light, and dazzled my vision.

"My eyes!! My EYEEEEESS!!" (Haine)



I can't see anything!!

It was such a strong light that I felt as if my retinas had been burned.

"Once in the effect of this 'Holy Light, Nekodamashi', your vision won't return for a while. With this, there won't be any worries of being peeked at when changing." (Karen) "Was there a need to do that?! Wouldn't it have been okay to just leave the place?!" (Haine) "Out of room doesn't mean out of means." (Karen)

That's a hell of a paranoia there!

Damn it. My eyesight will properly return, right? I feel as if this will definitely leave some sort of lasting damage.

At any rate, it doesn't feel right to stand still when I am unable to see

anything, so I tried to fumble my way to the wall, but...

...*Squish*

I touched something soft.

“KYAAAAAAA!!!” (Karen)

And Karen-san lets out a cute scream.

I would call this divine punishment.

Now then, which part did I touch?

WR – Chapter 355-357: A love-comedy of three

And so, with my vision killed by the flash, I end up staying at the place where the maidens are changing.

“Eh? Eh?! Wait a moment, Karen-dono! Do we have to change our underwear too-de gozaru ka?!” (Hyue)

“Of course! Depending on the dress’ designs, your shoulders might be visible. If that’s the case, the strings of the bra would be visible, right? And there are also dresses that come with bra.” (Karen)

“Fuhiji... This panty is absurdly plentiful in laces...!” (Juo)

“Juo! Is there a single person who would call underpants as panties in this era?! You really don’t know anything aside from your researching!!” (Hyue)

“It is fine, just stay in place, Hyue-chan! I am going to gather the meat at your sides to create cleavage!” (Karen)

“What are you saying, Karen-dono! There’s no way my breasts can create a cleavage— It was created?!” (Hyue)

“There’s no impossible for the boobs of a girl!” (Karen)

“Fuhiji... I don’t need to do anything to have cleavage though.” (Juo)

I feel like dying.

The density of pink in this place is suffocating me.

Why am I in this place unable to leave and move?

If I were to try fumbling my way to the exit in this state where I can’t see, I might touch one of the girls accidentally.

And, there’s no way I can join that conversation that is a 100% girl’s talk.

That's why I stiffened my body like a statue and made my heart stone as well. Don't react to any erotic kyakyafufu they do. I had no choice but to endure this pink storm till it passes by.

"Haine-sama, Haine-sama."

?!

This voice is...Doraha?!

"If you want, I can bring you outside." (Doraha)

That's great, it would help out a lot!

To think there would be a saving line called Doraha in this pink hell!

I was about to tell her 'please, lead me outside!', but...

"—Excuse me."

The door was opened.

I heard the voice of a man.

"I heard about Juo and Hyue being here. Do you have a bit of time? There's something I want to confirm about the ceremony..... Eh?"

The 'eh?' at the end felt as if he had frozen.

The pink atmosphere that was in this room just a moment had frozen in an instant as well.

"...Doraha." (Haine)

"Yes?" (Doraha)

"Explain the situation." (Haine)

"The Wind Founder has entered the room." (Doraha)

So it really was Shiva huh.

"And so, what's the state." (Haine)

"The wind hero and the previous hero are in their underwear. They are pure white and have a lot of laces to go with the dress, so they are quite cute." (Doraha)

No need to explain in such detail.

In other words, Shiva has stepped into his little sister and bride while they were dressing huh. Moreover, the underwear is of high-class.

“Karen-sama is the only one in regular clothes since she is the one helping them change, but the wind heroes are staring directly at the Wind Founder, and their faces are stiffened. And they are now steadily getting red.” (Doraha)

The default route.

Now then, what will you do, Shiva? Depending on your words, this will decide whether this situation will calm down or explode!

Show me your ability to deal with unexpected situations!

“...The Wind Founder is sweating bullets all over his face. And he is conspicuously averting his gaze.” (Doraha)

Hearing the explanation of Doraha, I could tell that it was game over.

“Ah, you two... It fits you two pretty well. You look good.” (Shiva)

And he has now placed the tombstone.

““Kyaaaaaaaa!!””

A sudden gale had been created along with those cute screams, and it blew me away as well.

As expected of the gale created by two wind heroes. It is nothing to look down on. I only took the aftershock of it and I couldn't breath, so Shiva, who had taken a direct hit, must be in an incredible state right now.

Because my vision was in temporary retirement, I was swept by the whirling wind freely, and it hurt when colliding with things like walls and other stuff.

“Haine-san, are you okay?! I will save you!!” (Karen)

I heard the voice of Karen-san approaching me.

What reliable help. I stretch my hand out towards the voice of Karen-san.

Squish

I once again felt something soft from my hand. It was like a softness made in

heaven.

“Nghkyaaaaaaaaaa!!” (Karen)

A scream from Karen-san as well?!

And in this way, I was blown away by light divine power, and couldn't tell left from right anymore.

It took more than several minutes for everything to calm down.

“No... It is true that it is my fault for entering the room without knocking. Knocking is the greatest culture of humanity after all. It is certainly true that I am at fault for neglecting it.” (Shiva)

Shiva, who definitely crashed into many things, had scratches all over his body.

I had finally recovered my eyesight, so I was able to see that pitiful face of his.

“But you see...Juo and I are supposed to be married next week, you know? Isn't it okay to not get that frenzied over something like seeing her in underwear? ...And Hyue, I am his brother, you know? There's no brother who would feel anything at seeing his sister naked—!” (Shiva)

Bang bang!

The terrifying sound of blows were heard from the shut door.

Probably two hits at practically the same time.

Shiva and I had long been thrown out of the dressing room, and we are now doing a dogeza at the corridor.

““I am sorry! Truly sorry!””

But there was no response from the other side of the door.

This silence is frightening.

“Seriously, Shiva, you...! You really serve no other purpose but to worsen everything. Can you even call yourself the Founder-sama that leads the Wind Church?!” (Haine)

“Oh, shut up...! Or more like, I don’t want to hear that from you. You brought upon the fury of the light hero after fondling her breasts twice, right? You really don’t have good timings. Or was it intentional?” (Shiva)

“I will return those words right back at you! You are already in your late twenties, and yet, you still have the love-comedy disposition?! Are you really an adult?!” (Haine)

The dispute was about to explode, but the door was once again hit noisily, so we both returned to silence.

“...Let’s change the topic.” (Haine)

“Right.” (Shiva)

“Uhm...now that I think about it, what did you come here for, Shiva? You are here because you had some business, right?” (Haine)

“Of course. Since then, I stayed back to arrange the details of the ceremony, but there was something that couldn’t be established without Juo and I, so I came to call her.” (Shiva)

“Just that?” (Haine)

He could have just send someone to call her.

He is a Founder-sama after all.

“That’s true, but I was also slightly in an ecstatic mood, you know. I wanted to be together with the girl that will be my wife for as much as possible.” (Shiva)

Getting all cherry-minded there. Just go explode.

For some reason, the tense atmosphere at the other side of the door got denser while we were conversing.

And then, the door opened.

I was attacked by an optical illusion as if pure white light had leaked out from the opened space.

- 356: Family Virgin Road

<Virgin Road: Japanese for the bride’s walk down the aisle.>

“Incredible!!” (Haine)

The heaven-descended Juo-san wearing a pure white dress felt even more heavenly now. And her originally pearl-like shining skin was amplifying the white of the dress without bringing either down.

Her original plumbiness was fitting into the dress well, and it created a neat and clean beauty.

“Shiva-sama...how is it?” (Juo)

Juo-san asks with a downcast look.

The idiot Shiva had frozen after seeing Juo-san, so I had to nudge him from the side to have him snap out of it.

“Gufuh?! ...Ah, it looks good, it looks good! It looks really good!! You are incredibly beautiful!!” (Shiva)

The praise of Shiva that held no sense of individuality made Juo-san’s face redden once again.

How innocent.

And now...

“Shiva-san, how about here?” (Karen)

Pushed by Karen-san, the one who came out was Hyue dressed in a pure white dress as well.

This was also no less beautiful.

Hyue is still a teenager, so she normally wouldn’t be wearing a wedding dress though, but even when she is wearing the same dress design as Juo-san, the impression it gives was completely different.

Her trained body, at glance, doesn’t look like it would balance well with a heavily ornamented dress, but even with that, because Hyue herself is a natural beauty, she was beautiful in whatever she wore.

Rather, her incredibly slender body was increased in volume by the frills of the dress, and it increased that feminine charm.

Seeing this, the brother Shiva said.

“Why is Hyue wearing it as well?” (Shiva)

A truly on point opinion.

“I thought you would be saying that. That’s why I told you, Karen-dono! That I didn’t want to show Aniue-sama! It was obvious that he would just be flabbergasted! And that’s what happened!” (Hyue)

“It is fine, it is fine! Shiva-sama, please give your impression! Tell her she looks beautiful!” (Karen)

For some reason, he was overpowered by Karen-san, and Shiva nodded repeatedly.

“Yeah, of course, you look good. My little sister is a beauty to begin with after all.” (Shiva)

Hearing this, Hyue turned bright red.

The two dressed as brides were bright red.

It was a hard to describe atmosphere, so there was the need for someone to break this.

“R-Right, Shiva, you came here because you had some business, right?!”
(Haine)

That was my role.

“Right! Right! Juo, to tell you the truth, it is something that I can’t do without you! Please come with me!!” (Shiva)

And so, the place we arrived at with Shiva as the lead was... the Grand Church inside the headquarters.

In the day of the wedding, Shiva and Juo-san will be standing in front of the altar to do their pledge in the presence of the Wind God Quasar —leaving aside the fact that Quasar has incarnated as Shiva himself.

In other words, this will be the true stage for the wedding.

“At the day of the wedding, Juo and I will be entering from different entrances, and we will be walking straight towards the altar.” (Shiva)

It is a pattern that's normally seen in weddings.

"...And so, in the words of the person in charge of the wedding proceedings, there will apparently be solemn music at the time of our entry, but once we arrive at the altar, he says he wants to stop the music at the same time as that happens." (Shiva)

"That's why he wants to measure how long it will take for us to reach the altar?" (Juo)

"That's right." (Shiva)

The speed one walks at differs per person after all.

I do think that's just being way too nitpicky, but this is the wedding of their Founder, so they probably want this to go perfectly to the smallest of details.

"You are wearing your dress and all, so it would be nice to try and take the walk. For the sake of the actual day." (Shiva)

"Understood." (Juo)

When the two move towards the entrances of the church, I hold the ethereal stopwatch.

"By the way, there's absolutely no one aside from us here." (Haine)

"The church is not allowing unauthorized personnel for the sake of the wedding-de gozaru. The ones that want to, will have to go to the second church inside the headquarters to offer their prayers." (Hyue)

I see.

"Well then...get ready, and...go!" (Haine)

That call didn't fall like the right one, but Shiva and Juo-san enter the church.

And just like that, they arrive at the altar. The path leading up to there was truly the thing called Virgin Road, and it will definitely be their bridge at the time of the wedding, but there was an unexpected problem.

"Eh?"

"Eh?"

“Eeeh?!”

Karen-san and I, who were looking from the side, raised voices of distress.

The steps of the two are not matching.

To put it more precisely, Shiva’s walking speed was way too fast and Juo-san’s was way too slow, so when the two link arms and walk, the distance from each other slowly grows wider.

I felt like I was watching a bad three-legged pair.

“What are you two doing?” (Haine)

I couldn’t help grumbling.

With this, measuring the time would be the further of the problems. It is great that they practiced first.

“Shiva! Walk a bit slower! In this case, it is easier for the faster one to match the pace, right?!” (Haine)

“U-Umu, you are right...!” (Shiva)

But it looks like the problem fell on Juo-san as well. And as a girl who acts like a ghost in her daily life, she apparently had her own style in things.

Shiva couldn’t match that and, no matter how many times they tried, they couldn’t walk side by side.

“This is bad...! To think we would be hitting a wall at a place like this!” (Haine)

“There’s only ten days for the actual wedding, right? Can we correct them by then?” (Karen)

Karen-san and I were worrying, but there was someone who stepped forward a beat faster than us.

“What are you two doing?!” (Hyue)

It was Hyue.

She approaches the about to marry couple with a strength that she doesn’t show to us.

“Aniue-sama! Juo developed her own unique style when mastering her wind

gun rebellion technique. It is obvious that you wouldn't be able to match her on normal means!" (Hyue)

"I-I see!" (Shiva)

"Juo as well! In your everyday life, walk normally. You are not that much of a slowpoke that you wouldn't be able to catch up to the large strides of Aniue-sama!!" (Hyue)

"S-Sorry...!" (Juo)

Hyue was pulling the two of them.

I thought Hyue, who loves her brother and hates Juo, would be against the wedding, but maybe that wasn't the case.

It might be just as that Maid-san said.

"I can understand." (Karen)

Karen-san said at my side.

"Hyue-chan really loves the both of them." (Karen)

Karen-san speaks out the sentiments of her friend.

"Ah, geez! I can't just stand to watch this!!" (Hyue)

Hyue went in the middle of the linked arms of the bride and groom, and placed her body in between. Hyue's right arm links with Shiva's arm, and her left arm with Juo's.

With the three walking side by side, they once again entered in a new set.

"Listen well! The two of you, match my pace!" (Hyue)

"O-Okay!" "Understood!"

"The original technique of Juo 'wind step' is something that I have tested myself. I will adjust the pace in the middle, so you two match that!!" (Hyue)

""Yes...!""

And so, a strange entrance of the bride and groom began.

The groom, bride, and the little sister.

A Virgin Road with the three in arms huh.

Hyue was also in a wedding dress, so they really looked picturesque.

'Did you aim for this when you made Hyue wear a dress?', is what I ask to Karen-san when I send her my gaze, but she shook her head to the sides.

Karen-san obviously didn't have such high planning skills.

But the three of them are without doubt walking down the Virgin Road to becoming a wonderful family.

"Come on. One, two, one, two...! Aniue-sama, drop the pace a bit! Juo, don't put divine power between the space of your feet and ground!" (Hyue)

““Y-Yes!!””

Looks like the entrance practice will still be continuing.

But I think that this is an incredibly important time for the three of them.

- 357: Separation

This is something that happened at a different location at the same time.

The Demon Lords were flying towards the castle.

It is their base and also the cradle of the Great Demon Lord Lucifer that has still not reached a proper birth yet.

They temporarily called that place as 'castle'.

This is not something that the Demon Lords themselves prepared, but something that a human woman calling herself as 'Lucifer's Priestess' had guided them to.

For the Demon Lords, that woman's identity is unknown and hard to comprehend. And after deepening their understanding by fighting against the humans, her shadiness increased even more.

To the point that they want to change their view of her from shady to dangerous.

That's why Michael and Gabriel weren't in the mood of returning to what's supposed to be their home at all.

On the contrary, they were nervous, as if they were charging towards enemy territory.

They were planning on going back to the castle and have an audience with Lucifer who might have awakened by now.

Why do they have to fight the humans? What comes after the eradication of the humans?

The future that Michael and the others saw after directly coming in contact with the humans, the even bigger something that they can obtain from there — is the direction that Lucifer points at leading to such a future?

'There's the need to speak with the Great Demon Lord about this', is what the three Demon Lords with their prided wings thought as they flew through the sky in order to confirm this.

"...Really, you saved me there." (Uriel)

Uriel, who was flying at the furthest back, said this with true heartfelt relieve.

"If you guys hadn't come to save me, I might have been made a deity that forever makes Golems. Humans really surpass logic. With just their momentum, they completely sealed my chance to object!" (Uriel)

Uriel, who had been dragged to Ishtar Blaze by Sasae, had been held high up as the deity that replaces Grandma Wood.

A personal altar for Uriel had been made in the blink of an eye, he was enshrined there, and young and old people regardless of gender were visiting him alternatively.

In the time Uriel was overwhelmed by this and couldn't move, Michael and Gabriel appeared, and after doing some desperate convincing, they were allowed a temporary leave with the pretext of 'arranging personal matters'.

"...But I have to return at the fixed date. The threatening words of the hero: 'If ya don't return, I will be searching for ya-dasu yo!', don't leave my ears!!" (Uriel)

"You are just weak to pressure, Uriel. Good grief, to think that the Earth Demon Lord had such a pathetic side to him." (Gabriel)

Gabriel says with a tone as if making fun of him.

“...The more time it passes, the more our individuality grows.” (Michael)

Michael speaks with him at the lead.

“Not only our abilities and outward appearance, but mostly our personalities. The experience and knowledge is changing each of us from the inside, and changing us more and more into different beings.” (Michael)

“That’s culture! By clashing opinions between people of different thoughts, knowledge is spoke out loud and takes form, is what the people of the Water Church said!” (Gabriel)

Gabriel says in an intoxicated manner.

In that case, the Demon Lords will in time hold different ways of thinking, and might end up confronting each other.

At first, the Demon Lords were cooperating to bring destruction to the humans, but now, even their biggest objective might be facing a downfall.

At the time when their objectives change and they face in new directions, will the Demon Lords be able to maintain the same grouping?

“.....”

“?” “What’s the matter, Michael?”

Reacting to their leader that had suddenly stopped in mid-air, Gabriel and Uriel also stop.

“I was thinking about meeting you. It is fortuitous that you are the one that came to meet us.” (Michael)

““?””

Michael looked straight at an empty space, and then, from that one place, something appeared.

Many small points took shape, and those points became uncountable in no time, moreover, they were whirling like a storm.

“Uh?!” “This is...!”

That intensity made Gabriel and Uriel protect their eyes as they follow it with their gaze, but in the instant when their vision was obstructed by it, a new strangeness appeared.

A steel armor that covers the whole body. From his back, colorful butterfly wings were spread.

“Raphael?!” (Uriel)

“What, so it was you? Don’t scare me.” (Gabriel)

The last of the four Demon Lords that came together under the banner of human eradication.

His whole body is covered in full body armor and doesn’t show a single bit of skin, which makes his appearance a step more unique than that of the other Demon Lords that are unique to begin with.

A suspicious look is directed at the dark gap in his helmet.

“...Raphael, the three of us have found a new possible path for us monsters to walk in.” (Michael)

The Fire Demon Lord speaks with the Wind one.

“Instead of fighting humans, we should walk together and better each other. I think that, in this way, we will be able to go even further without stopping because of wounds we have done to each other. I am beginning to feel like seeing what this path will bring about.” (Michael)

“Culture is the best! Culture is necessary in the development of monsters!” (Gabriel)

“I don’t have that much freedom of choice as them, but I don’t want to fight humans anymore. Especially with that super scary hero!!” (Uriel)

The other Demon Lords chime in on their approval to coexist with humans.

It was as if a cold ditch had been made between Raphael and the other three.

“We are planning on going to Lucifer-sama to ask about his will once again. Ask him if fighting the humans is truly the only path. Raphael, I want you to accompany us as well.” (Michael)

“That’s a great idea. We four are practically together all the time after all.”
(Uriel)

“The four together is what makes us the four Demon Lords. Let’s go, Raphael.” (Gabriel)

The three Demon Lords invited him, but the Wind one answered bluntly.

“I refuse.” (Raphael)

“““?!”””

This clear refusal surprised the three and confused them.

“You three really have been corrupted and have had your thoughts crooked. In order to climb to the summit of all living beings, we have to kick out the current ones at the summit. In other words, the humans.” (Raphael)

“And we are saying that, instead of having one side stand at the summit, we can coexist and—!” (Michael)

“That can’t happen. The summit is always one. Humans are enemies we *must* destroy. If you guys are not going to eradicate the humans, I will. That’s all there is to it.” (Raphael)

“Explain yourself, Raphael!” (Michael)

Even the leader Michael couldn’t read the intense emotions that were hidden in the words of Raphael.

That’s because those three still don’t know about that emotion.

“If you guys have lost the will to do so, I will be doing it myself. Slaughter the humans, prosperity to the monsters; those goals will be achieved by the Wind Demon Lord Raphael on his own. I simply came here today to announce this.” (Raphael)

As if saying there’s nothing more to speak of, Raphael turns around.

“The four Demon Lords are now disbanded. You three can go choose a new name for your group now.” (Raphael)

“Wait, Raphael!” (Gabriel)

The bitter voice of Gabriel stopped her brethren who was leaving.

“Why are you saying something like that?! Aren’t we comrades that have acted together since the time we were born?!” (Gabriel)

“Comrades? Don’t go joking.” (Raphael)

Raphael says coldly.

“There hasn’t been a single time you guys have thought of me as a comrade. Did you think I hadn’t noticed?” (Raphael)

“““?!”””

No one could refute those words immediately.

Without giving the time to break that silence, Raphael once again rides a gale and disappears from sight.

A storm’s coming.

WR – Chapter 358-360: Celebrating with friends

It has been ten days since I -Kuromiya Haine-have come to Rudras Metropolis. I am now here for a completely different reason than the time I arrived here. We had come here to prepare for battle, prepared for the possible arrival of the Demon Lord.

We actually suffered from a hard battle, but it wasn't a battle with the Demon Lord, it was because of a battle called preparations for the wedding.

In this time when there was only ten days before the wedding, they understood that the preparations were not proceeding to an extent they didn't expect.

The reason was because of the workaholic levels of Juo and the current head that is Shiva.

Moreover, the people in question think that being buried in work is natural, so it was truly troublesome to drag them out and make them participate in the preparations of the wedding.

Of course, the preparation itself is being done by specialists of the trade, but there will be things that only Shiva and Juo themselves can decide on, so they have to participate as well.

Hyue was the one who dragged Juo out, and I -an outsider-dragged Shiva out. "Aniue-sama obediently hears what Haine-dono says after all." (Hyue)

Hyue said as if that were a matter of fact.

And so, when we received requests of support from the ones in charge of the preparations, we would look for Shiva. It is not as if he is always shut in his

office, there are times when he leaves to do inspections and visits, so it was common to search for him and drag him back.

In the free time, Karen-san, Doraha, and I enjoyed touring Rudras Metropolis, and in no time at all, the day came.

Day of the wedding.

The festive mood of Rudras Metropolis, that has been enveloping the whole city since ten days back, was now at its highest peak.

Everyone was already so high in excitement that I felt as if deaths might even appear from all that.

Well, celebrations are kind of like that, so it should be okay as long as they are careful.

And so...

“It is great to see you here. Can you please show me your invitation? ...Yes, yes. Then, please head to the ceremony hall. This is the pamphlet. There’s precautions you have to take written in it, so please read them before the ceremony begins.” (Haine)

For some reason, I am doing receptionist work.

It is not as if I am not thinking ‘why?’, but I do understand that we are lacking in personnel, so it can’t be helped.

“At the time of leaving, we will be giving out a commemorative present, so please do come to accept it..... Well then, enjoy the ceremony.” (Haine)

Even so, I have attended a good number of guests and am beginning to gain some leeway.

“Haine-san!!” (Karen)

And when I was doing this, Doraha and Karen-san approached me.

The girls had dressed themselves to participate in the wedding ceremony and looked like high-class ladies.

“Do you want to go to where the bride is before the ceremony begins?”

(Karen)

Is what she said.

It is apparently okay to leave my reception job, so I headed to the waiting room of the bride with Karen-san.

And what about the groom, you ask? Who cares.

When we arrived at the waiting room, there was already quite the density of people there.

“Juo! Congratulations on your marriage!!”

“I have come to celebrate.”

“Ya can now make babies with yer head held high up. Make sure to do it like crazy tonight.”

The ones surrounding the pure white Juo-san were women that were around their twenties.

When looking only at that, it would be a simple group of friends having a pleasant talk, but when looking at it carefully, the members of it are quite the big deal.

Previous fire hero, Abi Kyouka-san; previous water hero, Ra Sarasa-san; previous earth hero, lemon Yoneko-san.

And the bride Juo-san is basically the previous wind hero, so it would be a gathering of the previous hero team.

“Ah...so you girls were also invited to the wedding?” (Haine)

When I ask, they made a cheerful expression befitting of this great day.

“Of course. We have to stand witness to the best day in the life of my friend, or it would bring to shame my name as a previous hero!” (Kyouka)

Kyouka-san declares.

She had received a heavy wound from the fight with Michael, but it looks like she has completely recovered.

“We did receive a polite invitation after all. No matter the case, this is the wedding of the Wind Founder, so the other churches sending envoys to celebrate this is a matter of course. If I am the one to go, it would be two birds with one stone.” (Sarasa)

Sarasa-san says with a big proud face.

“I have left Sasae-chan defend the fort~. Those girls been leaving and having us defend the fort all the time lately, so this be the time for us ta spread our wings.” (Yoneko)

Yoneko-san says with a bright smile.

Hearing this pained the ears of Karen-san as the previous light hero was still missing and, even with that, she was out in another nation.

“Ha...haha...” (Haine)

I could only make a bitter laugh.

“Well, even if we didn’t have anyone ta protect the fort in our absence, we would have still come here today.” (Yoneko)

“That’s right. We have to celebrate the important day of our important friend after all.” (Sarasa)

“Juo-san is a comrade that fought in the same team as us. We have to share the happiness with everyone.” (Kyouka)

Is what the three said in good will.

“Everyone...!” (Juo)

Hearing this, Juo was teary.

“I am glad that I participated in the hero match...! To think I would be able to meet such great friends as you all...! I will treasure these connections the rest of my life...!” (Juo)

“Yeah, go ahead and do that. Of course, second to your groom, that is.” (Kyouka)

“No need to throw the bouquet at us. We are already married after all.” (Sarasa)

“I want everyone to have babies, so that my children can get more friends~.”
(Yoneko)

Everyone speaks out their mind as they hug.

...What a sight.

When they were first introduced, the previous heroes hated each other's guts so much, but now, none of that is left.

I am surprised how humans can have such sudden changes, or more like, there's nothing difficult when humans get along with each other.

As I thought...

“This is proof that the world is changing. Even humans and monsters are beginning to get along with each other! It is obvious that heroes would get along as well!!” (Karen)

Karen-san was incredibly moved.

In this heartwarming view, something disturbing caught my eye.

A gaze that was peeking from the small opening of the door.

I can only see a part of it, but that face that can be seen from the opening, it is that of Hyue.

Hyue, why are you doing that and not entering the room?

In the end, Hyue left just like that, leaving the young bride team and Karen-san.

I left the room and chase after Hyue.

- 359: One other stage

“Hyue!” (Haine)

Chasing after her in a corridor where there's no one, I was finally able to confirm the figure of Hyue.

Seeing her outfit that I couldn't see from the door's opening, I was shocked.

“That appearance...!” (Haine)

Isn't that a battle costume?!

The kind that a hero wears to fight monsters. Clothes that prioritize movement and defense.

It is an appearance I am used to seeing her in, but today was a day where it was abnormal.

Today is a day to celebrate the wedding of Shiva and Juo. There should be a dress for such occasions.

Even Karen-san has taken off her usual armor and has come in an evening dress that matches her age to attend the ceremony.

If Hyue who has the biggest connection with the bride and groom is looking like that, could it be...

“Haine-dono, I won’t be attending the wedding.” (Hyue)

She directly said that.

And she did so without stopping her steps, so I hurriedly had to follow after her.

“Not attending?! Why?!” (Haine)

“I have already told Aniue-sama. Even if this is a festive day, we can’t neglect the defense of our nation. There’s the need to station the minimum of security and someone to command them.” (Hyue)

“And the one commanding them will be you, Hyue?” (Haine)

“A hero is one that stands at the front of the military force. This is natural.” (Hyue)

That might be the case, but...

“Isn’t there anyone else? Shiva and Juo-san would be happy if you were to attend the wedding though.” (Haine)

From the series of conversations I have had since coming to Rudras Metropolis, I have grown certain of something.

Shiva, Juo-san, and Hyue get along incredibly well.

Hyue may show unbecoming jealousy as a sister and would look like she hates Juo at a glance, but Hyue and Juo actually acknowledge and respect each other.

That's why this decision is probably not from negative emotions like not wanting to congratulate the two or things like not wanting to make the mood bad.

I also don't think this is because of a sense of duty like Hyue had said just now.

To use a reason like that to not attend the wedding of his actual brother, there's no way Hyue is such an unsociable person.

"As I thought, I can't escape from Haine-dono." (Hyue)

Looks like we have arrived at the destination as we did this exchange.

We were continuously walking as we went on after all.

I was simply following Hyue, but...isn't this the laboratory of Juo?!

And the thing in front of us is the divine tool robot that she made together with Juo, the Wind Mobile Gun, Kukulkan!

"We made time in between the preparations of the wedding and finished it-de gozaru. The Wind Mobile Gun, Kukulkan." (Hyue)

"But why today of all days did you come here?" (Haine)

"Because it is needed-de gozaru. I have to bring out the full potential of this guy when fighting!" (Hyue)

Hyue swiftly enters Kukulkan, activates it, and flies away from the storage.

"Uwa?! Hyue! Wait!" (Haine)

I was flustered for a moment, but the exit of the storage was linked directly to the outside of Rudras Metropolis.

If I were to report this to Shiva or someone to that effect, there's the possibility I will lose sight of Hyue.

I have no time to be hesitating.

"Kugh... [Dark Matter, Set]!" (Haine)

I used the repulsion of the dark matter to fly, leaving the laboratory to chase after Hyue.

Kukulkan easily surpassed the mobility of a normal ethereal car and quickly advanced through the barren wasteland.

Even so, this wasn't a speed that I couldn't keep up with, so I followed her from her back, and in time, she stopped.

"Haine-dono! To think you would be able to follow me all the way here, as expected of the ally that Aniue-sama acknowledged!" (Hyue)

No, it isn't such a big deal though...

We were quite a few ways away from Rudras Metropolis. It is at a distance that one can see the moving city whole. With this much of a distance, no matter how much of a ruckus is made, they wouldn't notice.

"What are you planning on doing all the way here, Hyue?" (Haine)

Weren't you supposed to be taking command of the security of the city?

"Now that we have come this far, I can't hide it from Haine-dono anymore. If possible, I want you to not interfere. This was my agreement with that person." (Hyue)

"That person?" (Haine)

"That person said that they would be keeping the agreement. That's why I want to keep my part of the agreement too." (Hyue)

"That's a good attitude."

Suddenly, a whirlwind occurred in front of us.

It rose up a cloud of dust and completely blocked my vision for an instant.

"Ugh! What is going on?!" (Haine)

The whirlwind soon subsided and there was one abnormality floating at that same place.

Colorful butterfly wings and full-body armor covering his whole body.

"Wind Demon Lord...!! Raphael?!" (Haine)

To think he would appear at the day of the wedding!

“It has been a while, Kuromiya Haine. Whenever I appear in front of humans, you would almost always be there. You and I may have quite the annoying fate tying us.” (Raphael)

Is what the full-armored Demon Lord said with a sarcastic tone.

The first Demon Lord I met was also the moment humanity first encountered a Demon Lord.

At that time, he had a different kind of fantastical look. He had the look of a child with butterfly wings.

The reason why he is wearing that full-body armor is because he was about to be killed by me, so he is now in that armor to compensate for it.

“Now that I think about it, it was my mistake to be convinced that I had given you the finishing blow there.” (Haine)

Now that the enemy has shown himself, I have to seal my agitation and concentrate on the matter at hand.

“If you are planning on making a mess of Shiva’s wedding, if you haven’t forgotten your animosity towards humans, I have no choice but to erase you without leaving a single remain of you.” (Haine)

“Just what I want. Kuromiya Haine, you are the biggest threat in eradicating the humans. Overcoming that is basically the same as achieving our objective. Fighting you now and fighting you later would be the same thing.” (Raphael)

...As I thought, this guy doesn’t plan on stopping his battle with humans.

I thought that if Michael, Uriel, and Gabriel had joined the side of coexistence, he might have had a change of heart seeing those comrades of his, but...it looks like that was just a hopeless dream.

“Please stop, Haine-dono.” (Hyue)

I was about to take a step forward, but Kukulkan’s giant hand blocked my way.

“I asked you just now-de gozaru. To not interfere at all. That’s the agreement

we had-de gozaru!" (Hyue)

- 360: Duel

"Agreement... What agreement are you speaking of?" (Haine)

An agreement between Hyue and Raphael that a third party can't intrude in had already been sealed.

"Kuromiya Haine, you know of my power already, right? The power I inherited from my mother, Beelzebub. The ability to divide my cells into insects." (Raphael)

That's exactly the ability that made it so I couldn't kill you after all. Moreover, the insects he is divided into are the size of cells, so there's no way for a human to notice that one of them has flown off.

...Ah.

"I have already had several of my selfs infiltrated in the city. In order to gather information for the most appropriate time to attack." (Raphael)

"How unscrupulous!" (Haine)

"My bugs should have been able to infiltrate without being noticed by anyone. But that didn't happen." (Raphael)

"?"

"There was someone who noticed my supposedly unseeable selfs. That wind hero over there." (Raphael)

Hyue could?!

"You underestimate me way too much. My sharp senses that were trained with the Wind Long Gun technique can easily catch that presence of yours that I already know too well of." (Hyue)

"Because of that, I had a better opinion of her and got motivated to do my move. That's why I had an agreement with her." (Raphael)

He used the fact that he was detected in his infiltration to his advantage and made contact with Hyue, exchanging this agreement.

“I challenged Raphael to a one on one duel.” (Hyue)

“So she told me to come today to do exactly that.” (Raphael)

A formally issued duel?!

“Hyue! Why did you do that?! Confronting a Demon Lord on your own is not a sane thing to do!!” (Haine)

“Killing Raphael for certain is not something easy-de gozara nu. And in reality, not even Haine-dono managed to completely kill him, and the root of evil has lasted till today.” (Hyue)

Ugh.

Can’t say anything against that.

“In order to defeat him, there’s the need for proper preparation-de gozaru. Thus, it was necessary to have a fixed date for the battle.” (Hyue)

“Meaning, you have a plan?” (Raphael)

Raphael adds in with a provoking tone.

“Are you telling me that trump card is Kuromiya Haine himself? It is certainly true that if he were to have another chance, he might be able to kill me for sure. You could even call it the most effective of moves. But I wouldn’t say this abides to the agreement of a one on one duel.” (Raphael)

“Don’t misunderstand. Haine-dono is an unexpected intruder. An unwanted third party-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

How rude!

What a terrible way of putting it!

“The one who will be killing you is none other than me. It is the duty of I, the wind hero, Toreido Hyue. Defeating the Demon Lord is the job of the hero!!” (Hyue)

Hyue makes the engine of Kukulkan roar.

“I will have Haine-dono act as the witness of this duel. I once again ask of you, do not interfere!!” (Hyue)

“But, Hyue...!” (Haine)

“If you are to participate, please do so after I have been defeated and die. That’s my stand as a hero-de gozaru!” (Hyue)

I could tell from her expression that there was unbending will.

The kind that, if I were to not listen to her request here, she would never forgive me.

“.....”

Of course, I have no obligation of accepting her request.

Even if the other Demon Lords have become friends, the Demon Lords themselves are still a threat to humanity.

In order to avoid the danger for sure, we should crush them with our all when there’s the chance.

Then, it would be best to have the two of us fight Raphael.

But...

“...Understood.” (Haine)

I couldn’t answer with anything else -faced with such resolve.

“I am in your debt.” (Hyue)

Hyue gives me a short sign of gratitude.

She was already locked onto Raphael, not allowing him to escape.

“Sorry for the wait. Then, just as agreed, let’s have a one on one.” (Hyue)

“It won’t change anything though. I will be killing all the humans in that city. This simply means you will be the first one... And so... What’s with that over-exaggerated outfit you have?” (Raphael)

Raphael says with a scoffing tone as he looks at Hyue.

Looking at the metallic robot that Hyue is riding in.

“It is ugly and exaggerated. You thought that if you were to cover your whole body with such a thick shell, you would be able to protect yourself from me? You look like a turtle who has withdrawn its limbs!” (Raphael)

“Don’t misunderstand. This Wind Mobile Gun, Kukulkan, is not something made for the sake of allowing me to survive, it is something that was made to kill you. Human’s tenacity, human’s wisdom; learn that with your body as you travel to the realm of the dead!” (Hyue)

The signal to start was a gunshot.

Gunfire that the Wind Mobile Gun of Hyue spewed out.

“[Wind Gun, Gatling]!!” (Hyue)

The several gun barrels in a ring-shaped bundle, equipped at the right arm of Kukulkan, began to revolve.

Wind bullets were scattered at terrifying speed matching the revolutions.

What was shot from the wind divine tool were all compressed wind bullets.

That’s why there’s no moment where it would run out of bullets, and in theory, it is possible to shoot infinitely.

But...

“How stupid! You think something like that will work on me?” (Raphael)

It is just as Raphael says.

The Demon Lords are the summit of monsters born from the four Base Elements, and the strength of the divine power they possess is one that wouldn’t lack at all with their title.

It is on a level that would completely overwhelm humans.

As proof, the tornado that Raphael created with a single flap of his wings had repelled all the bullets of the gatling gun and was now heading towards Hyue!

“Guuuugh!!” (Hyue)

Hyue was hit by the tornado, but she somehow managed to resist it.

Kukulkan.

The armor of the robot she is riding is not just for show, and because of its weight, it wasn’t send flying by the tornado.

“Nuuuaaaa!!” (Hyue)

On the other hand, she used both arms to rip the tornado apart.

“Oooh!”

WR – Chapter 361-364: Turbulence

It really started.

Hyue vs Raphael.

A one on one between the wind hero and the Demon Lord.

But as expected, Raphael has been on an overwhelming advantage since the beginning.

“[Calamity Storm].” (Raphael)

The tornado that Raphael created with one flap of his butterfly wings was tormenting Hyue who was driving Kukulkan.

“Guaaaaa!!” (Hyue)

She is able to resist as of now because of the thick and heavy armor of Kukulkan, but if she were to receive that in the flesh, it would be over in one hit.

The divine power of a Demon Lord is truly out of norms.

“Hahahaha, what’s the matter? Is the only trait of that big thing its weight?” (Raphael)

“Keep barking! Fine, bear witness to the power of the Wind Mobile Gun, Kukulkan!!” (Hyue)

The left arm of Kukulkan is directed at Raphael.

This left arm has a big gunport equipped to it.

“[Wind Rippling Gun, Nobel]!!” (Hyue)

At that instant, the air between Hyue and Raphael exploded.

It didn’t shoot a bullet of wind, but made the air itself exploded in the area between them to deal damage to the target. This is a technique that resembled the one Shiva used in his time as a wind hero, the wind dual gun technique.

It is an attack that explodes the air in the target's surrounding with no time lag, making it impossible to avoid or defend.

But...

"[Vacuum Blade]" (Raphael)

Raphael had nullified it as if nothing.

"Wa?!" (Hyue)

"What a stupid technique. You can easily block this attack by cutting off the air in the surroundings." (Raphael)

And then, Raphael made a sudden descent from the sky, at close range to where Hyue is —to where Kukulkan is.

"By the way, I have already found the weakness of that big thing." (Raphael)

Raphael stands at the feet of the robot.

Kukulkan's size is enough to have one human inside, so its body is pretty big, and it had to look down at Raphael, but...

"It covers its whole body with thick metal to protect itself, and has several types of wind guns installed to it. As a result, it has this big of a body..... But it is exactly because of its big frame that you can't do anything when approached like this." (Raphael)

It is as Raphael says.

In the first place, the arms of Kukulkan are not made as dextrous as a human's arm, and it takes its all to use it as a battery.

If he were to enter into the inside range of those arms, Hyue would lose all means of attack.

"Kuh!" (Hyue)

Hyue revved the mobility engine of Kukulkan and was thinking of retreating at high speed, in order to create distance.

But there's no way the Demon Lord would allow this.

"Too slow!!" (Raphael)

From each of the five fingers of the gauntlet of Raphael, tightly compressed air claws were shot.

“[Kamaitachi]” (Raphael)

Their sharpness made it hard to believe that it was air, and it easily cut the metallic armor of Kukulkan.

“Guaaaaah!!” (Hyue)

Hyue took a defensive stance, and thanks to that, both of the arms of Kukulkan had been cleanly cut.

With that, there's no way she will be able to use the weapons installed in them, and won't be able to defend herself with that same move anymore.

If he were to do the same attack, it would be the end.

“Didn't even think of the possibility of me fighting you in close range? Well, the first time we fought, I did leave all the job to the size of my divine power and was attacking crudely after all.” (Raphael)

“Guuuh...” (Hyue)

“It just means I have also grown. Even if you guys were to try struggling with your schemes, I will always be walking ahead of you humans. One of the proofs that monsters are superior to humans.” (Raphael)

It is true that Kukulkan wasn't made with plans of fighting a Demon Lord in close combat.

In the first place, the Wind techniques themselves are not suited for close combat. That's the territory of the Earth techniques.

That's why, Kukulkan not being suited for close combat is not the fault of Juosan and the driver Hyue...

“Now then, let's leave the playing around. How about fighting seriously now? Show your trump card.” (Raphael)

“W...What?!” (Hyue)

Hyue dragged the feet of Kukulkan and took a fighting stance.

“Are you playing dumb? Did you think I didn't know?” (Raphael)

“What are you talking about?” (Hyue)

“God Hero. God-He-ro.” (Raphael)

Those words made not only Hyue gulp her breath but me as well.

This guy...!

“Is it something to be so surprised about? Michael, Gabriel, and Uriel were defeated by the God Heroes, right? There’s no way I wouldn’t know.” (Raphael)

That’s true, but that’s not the problem here!

“It means that, in the end, humans have received power from the Gods and have finally managed to be equal to Demon Lords. Now, go ahead and turn into a God Hero as well. No need to hold back. In your case, you would be the Wind God Hero, right?” (Raphael)

“.....”

Hyue kept silent inside Kukulkan.

“You guys finally managed to fight equally with us after becoming God Heroes. If I don’t crush you in that state, there would be no point in this fight. In order to have you taste true defeat...turn into a God Hero.” (Raphael)

“I refuse.” (Hyue)

What came out from Hyue was clear refusal.

Hyue refused turning into the Wind God Hero.

“I have decided. This fight is one that I will overcome with my own strength. By defeating you with my own strength, I will be able to become a true hero.” (Hyue)

“...What?” (Raphael)

“Line up, Demon Lord Raphael! I will be the one to defeat you! No God Hero, or anyone else; it will be this wind hero, Toreido Hyue!!” (Hyue)

- 362: Point of no return

Why are you so stuck in fighting alone, Hyue?!

A Demon Lord is originally not an opponent that a single human can do something about.

In the fight of Michael and Mirack, the confrontation of Celestis and Gabriel, the overwhelming of Uriel by Sasae-chan; it is not as if they overcame those difficulties by themselves.

Humans and Gods, humans and humans, and even humans and demons; with those many connections, they changed it into strength and managed to overcome those things that strength alone wouldn't be enough.

That's supposed to be a strength of the humans.

Why are you throwing that strength away and challenging the Demon Lord?!

“...What. So you won’t be turning into a God Hero huh.” (Raphael)

Raphael was showing a truly bored expression.

“In that case, I have no further business with you. I will kill you quickly and go after the next prey.” (Raphael)

His gaze is directed at me.

“First, it will be you, Kuromiya Haine. Since you are already close by, I will be having my revenge for the first time we fought.” (Raphael)

“...”

Being directed clear hostility, I got on guard.

“The next would be that man called Shiva. I will never forget the humiliation this Demon Lord Raphael received from you and him. Once I settle that, I will be beginning the humanity eradication plan at full.” (Raphael)

“Fine then. Before fighting, tell me something.” (Haine)

Dark matter was already being released minutely from both of my arms.

If Hyue won’t turn into a God Hero, I am the only one here who can defeat him.

“Do we really have to fight each other?” (Haine)

“Hoh?” (Raphael)

"I thought at first that there was no other way but having only one side survive. That there was no way but to fight and decide by the erasure of the other. That's how I thought." (Haine)

But the ones who taught me that this was a flawed way of thinking were the humans that look weak at a glance.

They placed their all in their fight and made the impossible possible.

What brought this about was the strength that's deep inside the heart of humans, the ability to belief.

This surpassed races and even reached the lord of monsters; they changed them.

The coexistence of humans and demons that even Gods didn't believe in, the humans were trying to make it true.

"Your comrade, Michael, said that he accepted walking alongside humans. Gabriel and Uriel as well." (Haine)

Not a future where you step on someone else to gain glory, but a future where everyone shares the glory.

"Raphael, can't you also walk alongside us?" (Haine)

If he does that, there's no need for us to fight here.

"Hmph, every single one of you people, wasting time with such stupid things." (Raphael)

But my expectations were betrayed by those simple words.

"It is true that Michael said something like that too. That instead of eradicating humans, we should walk alongside them...!" (Raphael)

So Michael is really trying to fulfill his promise with us.

And Raphael is trying to go the completely opposite path.

"Why?! Why can't you walk the same path?! Even when you are a Demon Lord like Michael and the others!" (Haine)

"Right... If I had to say a difference, it would be..." (Raphael)

I could feel a deep deep dark gaze from the opening of the helmet that covers the whole face of Raphael.

“That we have already begun our battle.” (Raphael)

...?

What does he mean by that?

“My fight with you people has already begun. Thus, it won’t be stopped until it reaches a conclusion. And that conclusion will be either me dying or you guys dying; those are the only two possible conclusions.” (Raphael)

“I don’t understand what you mean. Michael and the others overcame their battles with the humans and reached an understanding with them.” (Haine)

“Those can’t be called battles. They didn’t fight humans at all. The only one who has experienced a battle between humans and demons is me, this Raphael.” (Raphael)

“Explain yourself clearly!” (Haine)

“Don’t you understand? We Demon Lords were born from our mothers the Mother Monsters almost at the same time, but the only one who had to fight immediately after being born was me. Even now, I can still remember it. You guys were there when I broke out from the Demonic Green Imperial Egg my mother Beelzebub gave birth to.” (Raphael)

“Yeah...?” (Haine)

“And so, we fought. At that time, you said this: ‘if we can’t coexist, we have no choice but to fight until one side is gone’. I clearly remember this. My fight with you humans was exactly that kind of fight.” (Raphael)

Even now, I still couldn’t see clearly what Raphael was trying to say.

Just what is it Raphael is looking for in our fight?

“...It is exactly as you say, Demon Lord Raphael.”

And there, a voice resonates.

It was Hyue.

“I remember it too. The day you first appeared in front of us.” (Hyue)

“Good grief. You still want to fight? I am not interested in you who can’t turn into a God Hero though.” (Raphael)

It is true that it was impossible to ask for further battle with Kukulkan missing both arms.

“It is just like that time...! You didn’t see me as a threat at all and completely put me out of your peripheric. While Haine-dono and Aniue were fighting with their all, I couldn’t do anything...!” (Hyue)

In the first battle with Raphael, Shiva and I cooperated to try and erase all the cells of Raphael without leaving a single one behind.

Hyue was indeed there as well.

...And she was almost completely on the receiving end.

“I don’t want to taste that feeling of worthlessness anymore. This time, I will surely defeat you with my own hands. ...As a hero. In the name of this title of wind hero that I succeeded from Aniue-sama!!” (Hyue)

“Your spirit is nice, but if it isn’t accompanied with power, it just looks unsightly. If you are not going to turn in a God Hero, elaborate in how you plan on defeating me with that piece of scrap that’s close to breaking.” (Raphael)

“And as I said, you underestimate us too much. Just like in the past!” (Hyue)

“Wa?” (Raphael)

“You haven’t seen all the wind guns equipped in Kukulkan yet!” (Hyue)

At some point in time, a large amount of spheres were surrounding Raphael.

Black spheres that had a propeller-looking thing coming out from their top that was rotating.

They were flying in the air with that.

With a glance, I could tell that there were tens of them. They were flying around as if surrounding Raphael.

“Wind Gun Rebellion, Koumei!! This is the first piece that will be driving you to checkmate!!” (Hyue)

- 363: Ultimate blow

Wind Gun Rebellion, Koumei.

This is supposed to be the wind divine tool of the proxy wind hero, Juo-san.

It is a specially unique one even within the many divine tools.

By having these things that are apparently called bits fly in the air at every direction desired, you attack with the small wind guns equipped in them.

Moreover, it is not only one, there are several. It is a weapon that can attack from all directions and instills fear in not knowing from which direction it will be coming next.

But obviously, Juo-san is not here.

Then, the one controlling those wind guns is...

“Hyue...is it you?!” (Haine)

“The Wind Gun Rebellion, Koumei, is a divine tool that requires a grasp on the space and high processing ability which the genius Juo possessed. Making this divine tool impossible to master by anyone else. It is normally not something I can master-de gozaru..... But...” (Hyue)

The robot she is riding makes a low growl.

“With the assistance of Kukulkan, I can somehow utilize it as well. All thirty bits! Right now, they are all my imperial guards-de gozaru!!” (Hyue)

“And what of it?” (Raphael)

Even when surrounded, Raphael was calm.

“Don’t tell me you seriously think that with ten or twenty of these pebbles, you will be able to defeat me. If that’s really the case, I might have to reevaluate my view of you. To that of an idiot that surpasses my wildest of imaginations.” (Raphael)

“No matter what you say, this is my trump card. If you couldn’t notice that, then you are the one that’s an idiot!” (Hyue)

“Interesting. Then test it out. Test if these pebbles can really injure me.”

(Raphael)

“No, I won’t be doing that.” (Hyue)

Raphael tilts his head in puzzlement.

“The Wind Gun Rebellion is only an encirclement to stop your movements!”
(Hyue)

“Wa...? Kugh, what?!” (Raphael)

Raphael’s voice suddenly began to show unrest.

But it was only his voice, his body didn’t budge a bit. When agitated, your limbs would normally move to show it as well.

It looked as if Raphael couldn’t move even if he wanted to.

“...You...what did you do to me?! Why is my body not moving?!” (Raphael)

Can you really not move, Raphael?

“The ones flying around are not wind guns used for normal attacks. They are speakers that emit a special sound wave-de gozaru!” (Hyue)

“?!”

“A stiffening sound wave that Juo discovered in her researches. By mixing in sound and divine power, it hardens the wind divine power, and makes it possible to stop movement!” (Hyue)

“Impossible! Even if there’s logic to it, there’s no way an idea of humans would be able to stop me, a Demon Lord! Me who has several tens of times more divine power than you people!” (Raphael)

“That’s exactly why...-de gozaru!” (Hyue)

Hyue showed a ferocious smile that felt as if fangs could show.

“This stiffening sound wave only works on wind divine power. The bigger the divine power, the stronger the restrain-de gozaru! And more so since monsters are pure masses of divine power. The Demon Lords that stand at the summit are giant masses of divine power themselves. Truly a trump card exclusive for the Wind Demon Lord!!” (Hyue)

And...

“With your movements sealed, there’s no better moment to hit you with this!!” (Hyue)

The gun barrel that’s installed at the back of Kukulkan came out and is placed on its shoulder.

“That’s...!” (Haine)

What I saw at its test drive.

If I remember correctly, the Wind Main Cannon, Beethoven.

The strongest wind gun that’s installed in Kukulkan!

“With this, I will blow every single cell of yours! This will seal the battle! Demon Lord Raphael!!” (Hyue)

“You bastaaaard!!!” (Raphael)

Doooon!

Without a single bit of hesitation, the huge cannon roared.

The one shooting it is Hyue, so there’s no way it would be missing. The cannon that’s hailed to have the strongest firepower had impacted accurately where Raphael was.

It created a giant explosion of wind in the area of impact and mowed down everything in the place.

Even I had a hard time staying on my feet from this distance.

Just the blast of when the wind shell was shot had created a massive gale that raised stones and dust in the area, making it hard to even see.

But once the actual explosion came, it created such a strong wind that just keeping my eyes open was painful. I had to cover myself with both arms and a thin veil of dark matter.

Firepower that could blow off a mountain.

Raphael had his movements sealed with the special sound waves, so he shouldn’t have been able to evade or defend.

It is certain that it hit him directly.

And the result is...

“There’s...nothing?” (Haine)

At the place where Raphael was supposed to be restrained, there was not a single fragment left behind.

It was completely empty.

“Was he really blown off? Without leaving a single cell behind?!” (Haine)

Raphael can escape by changing his cells into insects, so if it weren’t for that special sound wave, it would have been impossible to catch him.

To think she would have such an effective trump card!

“Hah...! Hah...!” (Hyue)

And that Hyue was breathing in a fashion that seemed as if every breath she took was painful.

The spheres flying around have all fallen to the ground as if saying they had run out of energy.

“Hyue, are you okay?!” (Haine)

“...As I thought, the recoil of using the Wind Cannon is rough-de gozaru na. Juo said that she increased the resistance around the cockpit, but it is far from perfect.” (Hyue)

Even with that, it is a lot better than the test drive where she was knocked out by it.

But...

“You really managed to defeat Raphael!” (Haine)

“Indeed. With this, we can enjoy Aniue-sama’s wedding without worries...” (Hyue)

The voice of Hyue, even when exhausted, was filled with a sense of accomplishment.

At the same time, I thought this. What will Michael and the others think when

they learn about this?

To think I would be worrying about something like this. I already can't tell what's right or wrong anymore.

"...Without worries huh? Then, how about I help out in making that wedding even grander?"

?!

What's that voice just now?!

"I will make it so bright red flowers sprout in the whole city."

This voice is from Raphael?!

He is alive?!

Did he escape from that restrain or somehow managed to endure the attack?!

"Haine-dono! Look at that-de gozaru!" (Hyue)

Hyue was also at her wit's end.

"The ground...!!" (Hyue)

Ground?

When I look at the surroundings as pointed out, at this wasteland where the grass was growing here and there, there were metal glints.

"Metal... Armor!" (Haine)

The full-body armor of Raphael.

It had been dismantled and dispersed here and there.

- 364: Unprepared Demon Lord

Raphael, in order to compensate for his body that was mostly destroyed in the battle before, had covered his body in full-body armor.

The kind that covers his whole body without leaving openings.

That has now disassembled and was scattered far apart on the ground.

I can tell that the inside is empty when straining my eyes. There's nothing

inside.

What is the meaning of this?!

Then where did Raphael go?!

“If it is me, I am here.” (Raphael)

And then, an abnormality occurred.

The armor parts that were scattered on the ground had flown up into the sky all at once.

They flew in the sky as if they were living beings, as if they had a will of their own.

“Wa?!”

“What is happening-de gozaru?!” (Hyue)

The flying armor parts were dancing in the sky as they piece each other like parts of a puzzle.

The forearm and upper arm joined together, and the hard thighs join as well. Furthermore, they assemble together with the trunk area, and in the end, the head settles at the topmost part.

Then, colorful butterfly wings spread from the back, and the Demon Lord had completely regained his previous form.

“Wa... Wa...?!”

I couldn't understand what was happening.

At the time when the armor was in pieces, I couldn't see anything inside of it, in other words, it was hollow.

Does that mean that even when it has reconstructed itself to its previous form, the inside is empty?!

“I see...! So that's how it was!!” (Hyue)

Looks like Hyue had noticed something.

“Remember-de gozaru, Haine-dono! That armor is supposedly to compensate for the lacking state he was in after being almost completely erased by Haine-

dono... But!" (Hyue)

But he couldn't restore enough cells to the point of reconstructing his body.

The most he would be able to manage is to form those butterfly wings at his back.

Even so, Raphael wanted to look the part of a Demon Lord, so he desired a humanoid appearance.

That's why he utilized that armor.

...Is that how it is?!

"That armor was actually empty, and it was simply being controlled with wind divine power-de gozaru. In other words, it was a papier mache puppet-de gozaru yo!!" (Hyue)

"That's right... I will at least give you that." (Raphael)

Raphael answers calmly.

But that presence he gave off was exuding silent anger.

"It was truly a troublesome thing, you know. Kuromiya Haine, because you erased most of my body, I ran late compared to the other three and felt as if I was being looked down on. In order to escape from that humiliation, I wanted a body no matter what. That's when I met this guy." (Raphael)

Raphael hits his metallic armor.

...No, I don't even know if I can call that the main body of Raphael anymore.

"I found this guy at the ruins of a residence. Maybe because the owner was missing for several decades, the residence had lots of dust accumulated in it and lots of weed growing in it too. What was abandoned in it was this guy here." (Raphael)

Must have been a decoration from a prosperous noble.

It is human-shaped and has at least enough space for the joints to move.

And so, the few insect cells remaining took residence inside the armor like a hermit crab.

“Well, the attack just now was truly dangerous. We monsters are beings of pure divine power, so I didn’t have any techniques to escape from that sound wave. If I was purely in my monster body, that is.” (Raphael)

But right now, Raphael is in his temporary shelter that is the armor.

Even if Hyue were to mix divine power in the air to release stiffening sound waves, it wouldn’t have any effect on it.

“I hurriedly withdrew my cells inside the armor and tried lowering my divine power to its utmost limit. Thanks to that, I was able to escape the restrain, and the gravity brought the armor down to the ground. The shockwave of the shot helped in dispersing the armor outside the blast range. It was a close one.” (Raphael)

He managed to pull off something like that?!

“If I was in my normal state, it would have been impossible to do. If I were to hold back too much of my divine power, I wouldn’t be able to retain my self, and I would vanish. By maintaining my existence in the shell that was this armor, I was able to keep my divine power to almost zero without vanishing, and managed to protect myself... How ironic, don’t you think? It is exactly because I ended up in this pathetic look that I was able to avoid your attack.” (Raphael)

“Kuh...!” (Hyue)

Hyue grinds her teeth hearing Raphael’s triumphant voice.

That move was her sure-kill plan to defeat the Demon Lord after all. She definitely took a lot of time making plan after plan and making sure it would take form.

And to think that all of it would be broken in such a way...

“It looks like you exhausted a heavy amount of divine power by shooting that wind cannon. A mere human wouldn’t be able to shoot twice of those in a row. In other words, your plan has completely misfired, and it is impossible to do the same thing twice.” (Raphael)

“Ugh!” (Hyue)

“By the way, I have thought of a new technique thanks to what happened just now. I will show it to you now, so enjoy it to your heart’s content.” (Raphael)

Right after he finished speaking, Raphael’s body scattered as if it had exploded.

“Wa?!”

In reality, each part of the armor disassembled.

Each part of the armor was flying sharply like a swallow, they flew around around Hyue and I.

“Hahahaha!! See that?! I grasped the ability to completely control each part just now! It means that I have managed to change trouble into a chance for growth!” (Raphael)

“So fast!” (Haine)

The speed in which the armor parts were flying around in was more than expected, and I could tell that this was bad.

That’s because it wasn’t just one armor part after all.

If I were to concentrate on the movements of one part, the others would attack in that opening! Moreover, it is metallic, so it might even lead to fatal injuries if they to hit parts like the cranium!

“Hyue! Sorry, but I will be assisting here!!” (Haine)

Hyue has poured all her divine power in her plan, so she can’t resume battle anymore.

Now that it has come to this, I will be fighting Raphael!

“Don’t-de gozaru!!” (Hyue)

“Wa?!” (Haine)

I was suddenly blown away by a strong power.

The broken arm of Kukulkan had pushed me away.

Because of that, I rolled to quite the distance away from Hyue, and Hyue was left alone in the middle of the flying pieces of Raphael!

“Hyue! Why do you go to such lengths to fight alone?!” (Haine)

I couldn’t understand.

What is she getting so hung up over?! Why is she so stubbornly trying to be alone?!

“Even if you were to fight alone! Even if you were to win alone! There’s no pride as a hero in that! A hero’s duty is to protect the people! Mixing in pointless stubbornness, that in itself would make you a failure as a hero!!” (Haine)

“I am fully aware of that-de gozaru...! But, I just can’t not be stubborn about it-de gozaru...!” (Hyue)

Hyue answers with lack of breath.

There’s no doubt that she is practically out of stamina.

“I can feel it-de gozaru..... Raphael, that’s the same for you as well. You are the same kind as me-de gozaru!!” (Hyue)

WR – Chapter 365-366: Lacking in ability

“Hahahaha!! Die die die!!” (Raphael)

The battle was already in its climax.

It is safe to say that Hyue has already used all her cards.

The metallic robot she appeared in, Kukulkan, had both of its arms broken and in the state of barely working.

Gatling, Nobel, Koumei, Beethoven; all of them are destroyed, or lacking in energy, so the only one that remains is the small machine gun that was equipped at its waist.

Even with that, she continuously shot as long as she could, creating distance with the enemy, and showed tremendous resilience.

Because the engine in its chest is still running, she could continue running around and didn't allow her opponent to target her properly.

But all of these only served to endure and she simply can't wish for anymore results than that.

In other words, she doesn't have the strength to push that status quo and make it into a victory.

“What's the matter?! You can't win against me by just running around, you know?!” (Raphael)

The armor parts that had disassembled were chasing the running Wind Mobile Gun at high speeds.

Raphael was in a good mood after obtaining a new technique.

“But this is nice! Struggle more! Writhe pitifully!! That pathetic look of yours is truly pleasant! Show me even more amusing looks and entertain me!!” (Raphael)

“Kuuugh!!” (Hyue)

Hyue rotated Kukulkan herself as she spread wind bullets around with her machine gun, but she didn't have the leeway to accurately aim, and she couldn't hit the parts of Raphael which were flying around violently.

“Is that even an attack?! This is what an attack is!!” (Raphael)

High pressure whirlwinds were shot from each flying armor part of Raphael.

“Uaaa?!” (Hyue)

This attack that felt as if it were the ‘Holy Light Line’ of Karen-san but in wind version had been shot from the many armor parts at different directions, attacking Hyue like a volley of bullets.

The whirlwinds hit Kukulkan directly, and the steel armor was being cut with the fierce stream of wind.

“Suffer more! Raise more screams!! That's your role! Suffer, cry, and sooth my heart like so!” (Raphael)

The whirlwinds that were released from the armor parts were more than ten in total.

They were attacking Kukulkan from all directions, and finally, the last weapon that is her machine gun and her lifeline that is her engine had been destroyed as well.

“Guua?!” (Hyue)

“This time for sure, it is the end.” (Raphael)

Maybe he was now sure that his victory was assured, Raphael combines the parts again and returns to a humanoid shape.

“With this, I have destroyed all the abilities of that big guy. Can't attack or move anymore. That thing is now just a metallic coffin.” (Raphael)

“.....”

“With this, you have finally understood, right? Humans can't win against Demon Lords. The strength of our existences is on a different plane. That's why the monsters that are ruled by Demon Lords are the most suited to be the next

superior race.” (Raphael)

“.....”

“You humans are a race that must be eradicated. Seeds that must be destroyed by the Demon Lords. Accept this and disappear as you struggle pitifully!” (Raphael)

.....Guh!!

I can’t take it anymore! I can’t silently watch over it!

I have to save Hyue. I can’t just let her die like that!

I don’t know why she is so stuck in fighting alone, but she has already fought plenty enough.

She should pass the baton to me already!!

“Don’t come, Haine-dono!!” (Hyue)

I tried to run to her, but Hyue stopped me.

“If you get any closer, I won’t forgive you! I won’t forgive you for eternity!!” (Hyue)

“Hyue...!” (Haine)

Why are you going so far for this?!

“Listen well, you can’t win against me anymore. You have no other way of survival but to ask for the help of Kuromiya Haine, you know?” (Raphael)

“.....You sure?” (Hyue)

Hyue speaks within Kukulkan that now has less use than even a coffin.

“It is true that a mere human confronting a Demon Lord is foolhardy. A human alone would never be able to defeat a Demon Lord.” (Hyue)

“That’s what I have been telling you. You are a woman that doesn’t learn.” (Raphael)

“A human would never be able to defeat a Demon Lord..... that is, the other Demon Lords aside from you.” (Hyue)

.....At that moment, the air froze.

That frozen air was created by Raphael.

Being hit right in the nail, his heart alongside the place around him had frozen.

“You have weakened. You are a lot weaker than the time when you first appeared before us!” (Hyue)

“What are you saying... What nonsense do you speak?!” (Raphael)

“I did have a vague feeling, but it changed into certainty when I saw that. That moment when you used such an unsightly method to escape from my Wind Cannon.” (Hyue)

Raphael has gotten weaker? A lot more than when we first met?

“Most of your body had been destroyed by Haine-dono. But because a few of your cells remained, you managed to escape complete erasure. However, that brought heavy damage. It was impossible for you to completely recover!!” (Hyue)

“.....!!”

“And in reality, you were unable to return your cells to their previous numbers, and had no choice but to don such an armor! It is impossible to recover the damage you have taken! And your strength decreased along with the damage you received!” (Hyue)

The direct attacks that Raphael made against Hyue.

The tornadoes, wind fangs, and the whirlwinds that were shot from the divided armor parts; all of them were strong enough to overwhelm Hyue. They were indeed strong, but...

“All of them were enough to overwhelm me, a single human. However, the power of a Demon Lord should be even more incredible than that. And in fact, the first time you appeared, you had strength that felt as if you could destroy Rudras Metropolis with a single finger!” (Hyue)

Michael, Gabriel, and Uriel; all had strength that surpassed the imagination of humans.

Compared to that, the strength of the current Raphael is definitely strong, but

it is not one that surpasses imagination.

He looks inferior compared to the other Demon Lords?

“That’s why I was able to hang on until now without becoming a God Hero, in my normal state... The because reason for that is because you are weak. You became weak! Isn’t that right?!” (Hyue)

“...That’s right. It is exactly as you say.” (Raphael)

Raphael answers.

That voice of his was shaking little by little -with anger.

“I am already in a state where I can’t recover anymore. After most of my body was erased by Kuromiya Haine, I am unable to completely recover to my previous state. My body...doesn’t remember how to return to its original shape...” (Raphael)

Before he was erased by me, his figure looked like that of a child.

Time has passed since then, so if he were in a regular state, he would have grown by now, just like the other Demon Lords.

But his body had been erased before that happened and he doesn’t know how his grown body looks like.

“My ability as well. It looks like my regeneration had its limits. When divided to a certain extent, I can’t increase anymore than that. With such a small amount of cells, I can’t use as much power as Michael and the others. Entrusting my existence to this armor is the most I can do in order to maintain looks.” (Raphael)

The more Raphael speaks, the more his voice shakes in anger.

Anger that’s filled with humiliation and hatred.

“Do you understand?! The first time the Demon Lords gathered...they were clearly looking down on me. A loser that was defeated by humans the very moment he was born. A weakling that isn’t worth the title of Demon Lord! The resentment of my heart when I was bathed by that shame! The sorrow!! Could you understand that?!” (Raphael)

“.....”

Hyue didn't react at all.

“This prided Demon Lord Raphael...the honorable Wind Demon Lord!! I will never forgive the humans that drove me to this unfinished state!! The humans themselves, and Kuromiya Haine who was the direct perpetrator! Especially that guy called Shiva!! And also you!!” (Raphael)

The armor finger of Raphael points at the unmoving steel giant -at Hyue who is inside it.

“You who has seen through a secret that can't be known! You can't be forgiven either!! Pointlessly touching into my humiliation, and making me remember my pain; I will have you regret it plenty for doing that!!” (Raphael)

Raphael once again divides in parts, flies, and charges towards Kukulkan.

They went at high speeds akin to those of shooting stars, and they all hit Kukulkan's body, driving into its armor.

“You won't be coming out from that hard shelter anyways, right? In that case, you will be killed in due time! I will pierce through you as a coward that is shut into her shell!!” (Raphael)

“I wonder about that.” (Hyue)

At the same time she says that, the cockpit cover flies out with an explosive sound.

“Emergency escape! I was waiting for this moment!!” (Hyue)

And then, without leaving a single second in between, Hyue herself flies out from Kukulkan.

“Not only have you gotten weaker, your intelligence is also lacking! Didn't you notice I was provoking you?!” (Hyue)

“P-Provoking?!” (Raphael)

“You have been provoked successfully and ended up attacking Kukulkan directly! The last weapon left of Kukulkan; taste it with that body of yours!!” (Hyue)

Raphael had sunk into Kukulkan with the intention of piercing through Hyue who was inside, so he couldn't come out immediately.

"The Divine Ore that is installed inside of Kukulkan, if send into an overload state with the assistance of the ethereal power...!!" (Hyue)

.....Self-destruction?!

- 366: Tying to hatred

An overwhelming explosion occurred in front of me.

My face was unable to withstand the heat of the gale hitting my cheeks, and I had to cover my face with my arms.

"Uwa?!"

That was the last attack of Kukulkan.

Turning itself into a bomb and perishing with the enemy.

Hyue was aiming for this.

By pathetically running around, she made her opponent think he was in the advantage and lower his guard plenty enough. On top of that, she stabbed onto the trauma of her opponent and made him lose his ability to make calm decisions.

By doing that, she induced him into a sloppy attack, and when she had made her opponent close enough to a point he can't escape in time, she would activate her last trump card.

"Waaaahh!!" (Hyue)

Hyue managed to escape before the explosion, but because of the gales, Hyue was flying in the sky.

Even if she had drawn him in plenty enough, in order to not give enough time for him to avoid it, she made it explode before she herself could escape to a safe distance.

I felt fearsome tenacity for victory in that action of hers.

"Hyue!" (Haine)

I obviously couldn't just silently watch that and, by calculating her drop point, I safely catch her, dampening the impact of the fall with dark matter.

I managed to avoid her splatting onto the ground.

"Seriously, what a reckless thing to do! If you were to fail by a step, you would have been caught in the explosion!" (Haine)

"I am in your debt...! But I had to go that far. In the end, Raphael is still a fearsome opponent. After all, see there...!" (Hyue)

Hyue moves her gaze.

I follow that gaze of her, and inside of the burning hellfire, I was able to confirm two shining eyes.

Raphael had combined his armor again and appeared from within the hellfire?!

"That guy...still didn't die even after being hit by that explosion?!" (Haine)

"Even if he is broken, he is still a Demon Lord, it seems-de gozaru. However, it looks like he didn't escape unscathed. If that weren't the case, the sacrifice of Kukulkan would have been in vain." (Hyue)

Hyue lowered herself from my arms and heads towards her opponent.

Those steps of hers were unsteady, and I could visibly tell that she had no strength left.

And there's Raphael. It looks like the damage he received from the explosion of Kukulkan was serious.

The armor that was his shelter had been crooked by the heat and impact of the explosion, and there were even cracks here and there.

His right arm was gone.

It was most likely at the centre of the explosion and was blown into pieces.

"You are a mess..... How was it? The feeling of being ripped a new one by a mere human." (Hyue)

"Don't get conceited, human...! It is true that I was injured, but I can still fight. The damage you have should be far higher than mine.....!!" (Raphael)

That's exactly right.

Even if Hyue has received the attacks of Raphael within the thick armor of Kukulkan, she is by no means unscathed.

On top of that, because of the Wind Cannon Beethoven and the self-destruction, her divine power must be expended to its limits.

She should be lacking in energy by a lot compared to Raphael.

"...I also have...something to tell you." (Hyue)

Even with that, the fighting spirit of Hyue didn't waver.

She takes a stance with her wind long gun, En no Ozuno, which she probably already had by the time she entered Kukulkan.

"Do you think you are the only one who was left unable to cure?Aniue-sama was also...the Wind Founder Shiva had also received wounds that will never disappear..... He now has a body that can't fight!!" (Hyue)

Right.

Shiva is the Wind Founder and was even a wind hero at the same time in the past.

The first Demon Lord to appear in front of humanity, Raphael, was the reason why he had to retire as a hero.

Shiva released divine power that surpassed his limits in order to restrain the overwhelming divine power of Raphael, to the point that it would injure his own body, and in the end, he ended up receiving damage that was impossible to recover from.

That's why he had to step back from the frontlines and give that position to Hyue.

"That Aniue-sama that was said to be strongest out of everyone since the beginnings of the Wind Church...! Has ended up with a pitiful body that can't even fight...! You know, I learned wind techniques in order to help Aniue-sama. I gained strength. And yet, the back of Aniue-sama I pledged to protect, is not there anymore...!!" (Hyue)

She said herself before that the reason she learned wind long gun techniques, that are originally made to assist from the backlines, was because she wanted to help out Shiva who had entered the path of battle within the Kazama Shinobis.

For her, battling and Shiva were her everything. Assisting Shiva was her reason for battle.

“I can’t fight together with my brother anymore. It is because of you, Raphael! You broke Aniue-sama!!” (Hyue)

Raging fighting spirit and words of resentment gush out from Hyue.

Those were emotions. Emotions of hatred that were difficult to hold back.

“I won’t forgive you.....! Defeating you with these hands of mine...is the duty that I have been entrusted upon when I was given the title of hero by Aniue-sama! I won’t let anyone have this!!” (Hyue)

“Don’t joke around...! Who cares about breaking a single human? I am planning on destroying all humans. And yet, you guys...!” (Raphael)

From the beaten up body of Raphael, from the openings of the cracks around the whole armor, an aura of hatred was gushing out.

“Pushing me down to such a pathetic look...!! Someone like you wouldn’t be able to understand the humiliation I felt. The pain of being the only loser within the Demon Lords, and be looked down upon by the others..... I will never forgive you humans who made me pass such a bitter experience!!” (Raphael)

Hyue hates Raphael.

Raphael hates humans.

Due to that circle of hate, the exhausted bodies of the two were moved forcefully with strength.

“I...!” (Hyue)

“I...!” (Raphael)

““Will never forgive you!!”” (Hyue+Raphael)

After all this, I have finally understood...the meaning of this fight.

In this moment when humans and monsters as a whole were about to enter a phase of reconciliation, these two wanted to fight no matter what.

The reason for that is...hatred.

Disregarding things like race, the two simply fought because of their own personal hatred, and were unable to throw away the option of fighting.

Without putting an end to it; without settling things; it wasn't possible for Hyue and Raphael to join hands.

WR – Chapter 367-369: Once something has already been broken...

Three winged people descend at my surroundings.

“...What’s happening?”

Fire Demon Lord, Michael.

And there’s also Gabriel and Uriel.

The Demon Lords have all gathered here.

“The one fighting is... Raphael?!” (Gabriel)

“Why? Isn’t it already unnecessary to fight humans?!” (Uriel)

The battle still continued to unfold in front of us.

After losing Kukulkan, Hyue had no choice but to rely on En no Ozuno, and Raphael had disassembled his body again to fly around and attack.

But the battle was already at its climax.

Both sides are completely exhausted and their speeds are already quite lower than at the beginning.

But the wind long gun techniques that Hyue had trained for long years are still sharp, and she managed to accurately shoot down the armor parts.

“Raphael! That idiot! Isn’t he getting beaten up?!” (Uriel)

“If both sides have run out of divine power and it turns into a battle of wills, the humans who have overcome many difficulties are in the advantage. Raphael doesn’t understand that!” (Michael) “It is because he underestimates humans that things have turned out like this! We are stopping this before they can deal the finishing blow!! Geez, that broken Demon Lord really causes trouble at every step!!” (Gabriel) Michael, Gabriel, and Uriel try to jump into the middle of

that maelstrom in order to stop the battle.

There's no doubt that if these three world-class powers were to go there, they would be able to restrain those two that are lacking in breath.

But I lifted my arm and stopped the Demon Lords.

"Kuromiya Haine! Why are you stopping us?!" (Michael)

Michael was confused, but I ask.

"Why did you guys come here? How did you guys notice something like this was happening?" (Haine) "We Demon Lords have a kind of instinct that allows us to sense the other Demon Lords. Thanks to that, we were able to sense that Raphael was in some sort of danger." (Michael) I see.

We Gods have a similar kind of thing between us, so I could accept it pretty easily.

In that case, these guys are the only ones who noticed. I don't have to worry about whether Shiva and Karen-san have also noticed at Rudras Metropolis.

"Don't interfere." (Haine)

"What?" (Michael)

"You can't get involved in that fight. That fight is a fight for only Hyue and Raphael. No other people can get involved." (Haine) The Demon Lords looked like they couldn't accept my words.

The same as me a few moments ago.

"What are you saying?! We Demon Lords have already decided not to fight humans!" (Gabriel) "Since this has been decided, there's no point in fighting anymore. Pointless things should be stopped at once!" (Michael) No, there's meaning.

"It is too late already. Raphael is different from you guys. He already began his confrontation with humans. Once something has begun, it can't be stopped midway. There's no choice but to do it till the end." (Haine) "What are you saying?! Michael, Uriel, and I have also fought the humans at first! But at the end, we understood each other, isn't that right?!" (Gabriel) I said the same thing as them. But now, I can tell that it is different.

Something that one can't go back from.

Because something like that happened, you can say that the battle had truly begun.

"Raphael was the first Demon Lord to meet humans and fight them. And in all that, he broke a human and drove him into an unrecoverable state." (Haine) It cannot be taken back.

"And Raphael himself as well. Most of his body was erased by me and it is now in a state where he can't regenerate completely. Even if he is a Demon Lord, there was apparently a limit." (Haine) It cannot be taken back.

"When there's things that can't be taken back. Hatred is the only choice to fill that space that has been lost. There's no other way to fill that space than to hate the one that stole it, that broke it. That's why those two have to fight. Until the hatred that seeps into the cracks of the heart are withered without leaving a single bit behind." (Haine) That is what I have understood as a spectator.

That's why the two wanted to fight on their own.

"Hyue, and most likely Raphael as well, are fighting on their own and have rejected assistance. That's probably because they don't want their hatred to leak to the outside." (Haine) "Hatred...to the outside?!" (Michael)

"It is true that there are times when fighting can allow the parties involved to understand each other. In order to win, they analyze their opponent, and they learn about their strengths and weaknesses that go beyond friendship, and that changes into a connection." (Haine) But in the end, by fighting, there will always be hatred rising up as well.

After hurting and breaking each other, it is a matter of fact that they would end up hating each other.

"Michael, Gabriel, Uriel; if you guys were to participate in that fight as well, you would definitely end up hating humans." (Haine) "Impossible! Something like that is just..." (Michael)

"Hate can transmit to others." (Haine)

When a loved one is hurt, hatred is born.

Just like how Hyue couldn't not feel hate when her brother Shiva had been gravely injured.

There's only one way to be unrelated to that. To not participate in the battle.

"Those two most likely understand this instinctively. Now that there's hatred in their hearts, they can't simply not fight. They can't let that hatred leak to the outside, that's why, they are fighting on their own." (Haine) That must be the reason why they chose this day for their fight.

In order for Shiva to not notice, she thought that there was no other day than in the day of his wedding.

"This is to settle things. Something that only they can end. For the sake of ending the circle of hate, they have to fight by themselves!!" (Haine) Even by going to the lengths of refusing the help of Gods —refusing the power of a God Hero.

"If they understand that much...! Then why don't they stop fighting?! If they are intelligent, why don't they think of a different way?!" (Uriel) Uriel says this as if he were raising a scream.

True, he does have a point.

"Even with that...they just can't not fight. They most likely have a reason that is estranged from matters of intelligence or foolishness." (Haine) ****

"Raaaaaaaah!!"

"Kiiiieeeeee!!"

The two fought in order to spit out the emotions they couldn't do anything about.

Flying armor, and wind bullets shooting them down.

It was truly a battle akin to a storm, lacking all sense of order or anything else. As spectators, we had no choice but to silently watch over it.

In time, there were the sounds of a bell ringing at the direction of Rudras Metropolis, and big loud cheers that reached all the way here echoed.

The wedding of Shiva and Juo-san must have started.

Hatred with hatred, happiness with happiness; they were being divided as if being two completely unrelated matters.

- 368: Friend of mine

Then, the battle finished.

It wasn't a clear thing like one winning against the other.

It was just that both of them ran out of strength.

Their stamina had long ran out, and there's a limit to how long one can fight with willpower alone.

They continued fighting even when that limit was reached, and the two ceased fighting at the same time.

The power of the two is wind.

The surroundings have turned into a mess because of the windstorms that raged in the fight of these two, and they were in the centre of that.

Even with that, there was proof of who was victorious.

The Wind Long Gun of Hyue.

A sharp wind blade extended from the tip of the gun, and piercing Raphael with it was what decided the end of the battle.

The gun was still stabbed in the torso of Raphael.

“Hyue!” (Haine)

“Raphael!” (Michael)

Unable to stand it any longer, we all run to their sides.

I went to Hyue, and the Demon Lords went to Raphael; each side separated them and pulled some distance.

First, how's Hyue!

“I...I am in your debt...” (Hyue)

She is quite exhausted, but it looks like she is okay.

There doesn't seem to be any danger to her life.

On the other hand, Raphael was...

“Raphael! Get a hold of yourself, Raphael!” (Michael)

The agitation of Michael was not normal.

The wind gun pierced in Raphael had already been taken out, and the hole that was at the trunk of the armor was hollow.

But that shouldn't be related at all to the life or death of Raphael.

That's only the shell that Raphael uses as shelter after all.

The few remaining cell insects simply reside within it.

No matter how much the armor is destroyed, Raphael himself should be safe and he can just move to another shelter.

That's how it is supposed to be, but...!

“Why?! Why is the divine power of Raphael thinning?! If it thins even more than this...!” (Gabriel) “Oi, get a hold of yourself! Concentrate and stop the dying out divine power!! If you don't...!!” (Michael) Michael, Gabriel, and Uriel were unable to say the words that came after.

Death.

Demon Lords can die.

All living beings in this world are destined to die at some point in time. All things that have a beginning also have an end; this is how the world works.

But these guys that have just been born are not prepared to accept that natural thing.

“.....It is fine... I will die.” (Raphael)

Raphael easily says.

He was accepting the fate that was approaching him.

“I understood this since a while ago. Looks like there really was a minimum amount of cells required in order to maintain my existence. I passed that limit after my body was erased, so even if I didn't disappear immediately, I would disappear slowly as time went on.” (Raphael) “.....Because of me?” (Haine)

I ask him while holding Hyue's body.

"...That's right, Kuromiya Haine. You defeated this Demon Lord Raphael and saved many of your people. That's something to be proud of. Isn't that right?" (Raphael) "....."

"If we can't coexist, there's no choice but to fight until one side or the other disappears'. Those were the words you spoke. That wasn't wrong." (Raphael) The shine of the armor covering Raphael was rapidly losing luster —as if his life was escaping from it.

"Hyue...! Wind hero, Hyue...!" (Raphael)

Isn't this the first time...Raphael has said the name of Hyue?

".....What?" (Hyue)

"You said it, right? That we are the same. It is true that we both held hatred within, and we had to fight in order to put an end to it..... However, there was a part that was slightly different." (Raphael) ".....And that is?" (Hyue)

"In the end, I could only hate you guys for my own wounds. But yours wasn't for yourself. You felt anger for the sake of another, and directed that hatred." (Raphael) Get angry, not for yourself but for someone else, and hate someone for it.

"That's most likely the foolishness of a human, and also a strength of them." (Raphael) In the remaining time of Raphael that felt as if it would end anytime soon...

"But Michael, Gabriel, Uriel; if you guys are to walk together with humans, make sure not to be engulfed by hatred. Don't be like me. That idealistic idea of coexistence cannot be spoken about without overcoming hatred." (Raphael) "That's a lie! There's no way you would die! You are the most stubborn out of all the four Demon Lords!!" (Gabriel) "You disappearing is some kind of joke, right?!" (Uriel)

The Demon Lords were crying.

Being in the face of an unimaginable farewell from a comrade, their hearts were breaking to pieces.

“Even if you guys are sad, you must not change that into hatred. The empty space that is created after losing something, it should be possible to fill it up with something that’s not hatred. I was unable to do that, but if it is you guys who aim to coexist with humans, you must learn how to...!” (Raphael) Raphael’s gaze connects with Michael’s.

“...My friend.” (Raphael)

“Yeah, we are friends. We are without doubt friends!!” (Michael)

“I am satisfied. Even if my heart was imprisoned by hatred, I could to put an end to it. Thanks to that aggressive hero over there.” (Raphael) Raphael’s gaze was directed over here now —more precisely, not me but Hyue who was in my arms.

“Wind hero, Hyue.....I have one last request to make you.” (Raphael)

- 369: Returning on dry wind

The ceremony continued without any problems, and the figure of a man and woman appear from the main gate of the Wind Church headquarters.

One was the Wind Founder that was wearing the formal outfit of Founders, Toreido Shiva.

The other one is Brastor Juo-san in her pure white dress —no, from today on, she will be Toreido Juo, the wife of the Founder.

The wedding has ended and they are now officially married so, in order to have everyone in the Wind capital know, there’s plans of having them ride a convertible ethereal car to have a parade in Rudras Metropolis.

“Congratulations!!”

“Congratulations on your wedding!!”

“Let there be good blessings for the husband and wife!!”

“May you both have a happy married life!!”

The people that were surrounding them from the sides of the parade course were sending them their blessings and applauses without holding back.

The confetti was dancing in the sky, and Rudras Metropolis, that normally gives out an impression of having a heavy atmosphere, was now lively as if they had been reborn.

Everyone was smiling.

Everyone was in joy.

The new married couple were waving their hands from the convertible ethereal car.

Everytime they do that, cheers rose up.

Today is without doubt a day of celebration.

“How is it?Can you see it?”

“Yeah.....”

Hyue and Raphael were at the roof of a building in Rudras Metropolis that was faraway from the parade.

“I can’t show up at the parade with this beat-up look, so this is as close as we can get. Forgive me.” (Hyue) “It is fine. I can see it plenty well.” (Raphael)

With the wind long gun technique of Hyue, she is able to bend the wind and amplify objects to see clearer from afar.

Even in a distance where you would normally only see specks, they were able to clearly see the joyful smiles of the people.

“Why are they making such a content expression? Even though his body was destroyed to a point of not being able to recover, just like me.” (Raphael)

“Aniue-sama has a treasure that surpasses that. That’s why.” (Hyue)

Hyue was also looking at her happy brother and the woman that was at her side.

The two that will be walking together forever from now on.

“In order to protect that, Aniue-sama threw away his body. Even if he were to break, if what’s truly important for him is safe, he wouldn’t feel remorse.” (Hyue) “I see..... So that’s the difference between him and me huh...” (Raphael)

Raphael already only had the head of the armor left.

It would have been impossible for the exhausted Hyue to carry the whole armor to Rudras Metropolis and move it all the way to where they are.

Hyue refused to have someone take her place in carrying him.

Saying that this is a duty that only her as the person that fought Raphael is allowed to do.

“It is because he has things that are more important than himself that he doesn’t worry about he himself breaking. I didn’t have any other thing aside from me that was important.” (Raphael) That’s why, when he broke, he was caught by hatred.

“When seeing it from that perspective, that guy was the winner and I was the loser.” (Raphael) “That’s right...” (Hyue)

‘I want to see the state of Shiva’, that was Raphael’s last wish.

And Hyue fulfilled that wish.

“You have my thanks, wind hero Hyue. You were the most fitting opponent for my last fight. More than Shiva, and more than Kuromiya Haine.” (Raphael) The end of Raphael was already arriving.

He had already lost his remaining strength, and the helmet that served as his head had lost its shine and was rotting.

“You accepted my heart that was trapped in hatred. By fighting you, this ending of mine...well, it won’t be that bad.” (Raphael) “I feel the same. I also brought out everything that was lurking inside of me and struck you with it. If I hadn’t brought all of that out, I wouldn’t be able to become a true hero.” (Hyue) In order to separate from her past self, that was simply chasing after the back of her brother, into a hero that walks forward on her own in order to protect the people.

“There was no other way than settling the anger and hatred, that I felt when I couldn’t save Aniue-sama at that time, by fighting you.” (Hyue) “And so...did you manage to do that?” (Raphael)

“Yeah, if it is now, I can say this without any worries in my heart.” (Hyue)

Hyue says this to her two important people that are faraway.

“Aniue-sama, Juo.....congratulations on your wedding.” (Hyue)

“.....Congratulations on your wedding.” (Raphael)

The helmet that Hyue held said the same thing.

Hyue asks while making a wry smile.

“Why are you saying it as well?” (Hyue)

“Who knows. I simply felt like saying it. Maybe because, thanks to my fight with you, I was able to settle my anger and hatred as well.” (Raphael) His heart was empty now.

That's why any kind of emotion can come out.

“You accepted my hatred by fighting me. You allowed me to take out the pathetic sides of my heart.” (Raphael) “It goes both ways.” (Hyue)

“As I thought, I am glad you were my last opponent. I admit it.....” (Raphael)

The light of life dimmed...and disappeared.

“You are a true wind hero...” (Raphael)

Death arrived for the Demon Lord.

This is a natural thing for all living beings.

“Heroes...are the ones...to defeat...the Demon Lords...” (Raphael)

Within the arms of the hero...the Wind Demon Lord made his last breath.

I left the matter of Raphael to Hyue and I -Kuromiya Haine-stayed at the place where the battle took place.

I cannot leave these guys alone after all.

Michael, Gabriel, and Uriel were broken by their first experience of losing a comrade.

“Lies...! This is a lie...! There's no way Raphael would die. The most stubborn within us...!!” (Gabriel) “Why...! Why couldn't I be more kind to him! I couldn't notice the pain he held. If I had encouraged him, this wouldn't have...!!” (Uriel)

Their hearts were currently in a state they couldn't do anything about.

I can't leave them on their lonesome, and it is also in case they go out of control.

“.....I end up thinking stupid things.” (Michael)

Michael was trying to comfort his comrades together with me, but even so, he couldn't hold back his own feelings.

“At that time, if I had been more attentive to Raphael’s state of mind...if I had used better words when interacting with Raphael...would things have ended up in a different manner? Truly foolish. Even though I can’t change the past no matter how much I think about those kind of things.” (Michael) “Everyone is like that.” (Haine)

I stand by his side.

“Everyone lives by while shouldering those regrets. There’s not a single living person that has died without experiencing this at least once.” (Haine) “Regret... Death...” (Michael)

Michael raises his head as if he noticed something.

Of course, his expression was not cheerful.

“It means that gaining a heart comes with having to face such scary things huh. Raphael has taught us that. And Raphael himself faced that straight-on.” (Michael) That’s right.

That’s exactly right.

“In that case, we also have to face what’s in front of us. Kuromiya Haine, the reason why we were late here was because we were heading to the castle. At the Cocoon Castle where the Great Demon Lord Lucifer sleeps in.” (Michael) He did say something like that when we separated last time.

“Raphael disappeared and, unless he releases a big stream of emotions, we had no means to find him. Thus, we prioritized the audience with Lucifer-sama. I do feel some regret in whether that was actually the right choice, but we are in the present now. Anyways, we returned to the castle of Lucifer, however, we saw something unbelievable.” (Michael) Unbelievable?

“There was nothing...!” (Gabriel)

Gabriel exclaimed, still unable to stop her overflowing tears.

Uriel as well.

“At the place where Lucifer-sama’s castle was...there was nothing, and only a leveled ground remained. Everything disappeared like smoke. Lucifer-sama, the castle around Lucifer-sama, and obviously, that woman as well...!!” (Uriel) That woman?

They did say that before in between lines but, just who in the world are they referring to?

Does that mean there are other monsters that have obtained a will of their own aside from the Demon Lords?

Or maybe...!!

“She said that she was a proxy to relay the will of Lucifer-sama. That she was ‘Lucifer-sama’s priestess’. She took the side of the monsters even though she was a human, and offered to help in eradicating humans. If I remember correctly, her name is...” (Uriel) When I heard that name, I was shocked.

Is that even possible?

Calling herself as Lucifer’s priestess and approaching the Demon Lords...

Sunnysol Ates.

The previous light hero...

WR – Chapter 370: Only four

“...Tch, useless pieces of trash.”

I -Sunnysol Ates-was biting my nail in anger.

Every single one of them doesn’t move in the way I want.

The Great Demon Lord Lucifer should have been in his perfected form by now.

All the puzzle pieces are inside my hands, and I thought what was left was only to put those pieces together.

But this part was moving slowly.

To think the idiot Michael, the dullard Gabriel, and the coward Uriel would reconcile with humans without fulfilling their duty.

I didn’t expect this to happen.

In the end, the only one who brought out results was Raphael.

He was the only one who fought till the end with the humans, died, and became a puzzle piece on his own to be placed in its correct place.

But it was only one.

With just one, it is just not enough at all.

Six pair of wings, twelve in total; all of them combined are what makes the Great Demon Lord “Pitiful child of mine! To think that the parts have moved on their own whim and you haven’t been able to reach completion yet...!” (Ates) I look up at the shining towering figure.

Those useless Demon Lords were showing signs of returning, so I hurriedly changed locations.

Thanks to that, I have no choice but to forcefully activate Lucifer that I was

thinking of having it sleep until it was perfected.

How pitiful my child is.

To think I would have to awaken you in such a crooked figure before reaching beautiful perfection.

I am the half of the Light Goddess Inflation, as well as the human Sunnysol Ates.

The Light Demon Lord Lucifer that I have created will be the first and only light element monster in the world.

But I was planning on making it not only that, but a completely invincible and unique monster.

Because of that, I sought everything.

Lucifer had to have not only light but all of them.

That's why I deceived the Demon Lords of each element and set them to fight the humans.

The Demon Lords were supposed to have a fierce battle with the humans.

With the sacrifice of several millions of humans, the Demon Lords would fall, and the residual four base element divine powers will lose their owner and float in the sky.

I was planning on having Lucifer use that.

The Demon Lords born from lower Gods like Nova, Coacervate, Mantle, and Quasar would at most serve as puzzle pieces to perfect my Lucifer.

But the results of inferior Gods would obviously be inferior.

They were all idiots that couldn't even properly move in the rails I had prepared.

Raphael was the only one who died according to my plans, and yet, he couldn't even bring down a single human along with him. A pathetic death.

Well, fine. It is a whole lot better than the other three idiots that couldn't even die.

The Demon Lord class wind divine power that separated from Raphael had safely arrived to Lucifer as planned and became part of it.

Currently, there's now colorful butterfly wings at the back of Lucifer along with its light wings.

A total of four wings.

With this, there's four.

Only four.

Lucifer should have had twelve wings when it was completed.

This is all the fault of Michael and those idiots for not dying.

It would be one thing if they were way too weak to kill the humans, but to think they would reconcile and stop the fighting. On top of that, they didn't kill humans.

Why is it that every single pawn of mine doesn't move as I want them to and are all braindead?

"...Now that it has come to this, there's no other choice." (Ates)

If they won't move as I want, I just have to move directly.

Lucifer is currently incomplete, but it has plenty enough power after obtaining wind. It should still be able to easily crush those three even if they were to fight Lucifer together.

There's no need to hide its presence in case something happens.

Idiots that don't have the will to fight are basically trash. I will have the Light Demon Lord dispose of that trash, and change them into wings that will decorate its back!

"Light Demon Lord, Lucifer; you are currently not the Great Demon Lord yet. When you obtain all the elements, all the powers, you will truly be the Great Demon Lord!" (Ates) Sorry for waking you up before that.

But it looks like, in order to reach the perfect strength, you will have to obtain it with your own hands.

"Now go, Lucifer. In order to become perfect, and with that perfected

strength, destroy this unsightly world!!" (Ates) The mountain moved.

That itself is the figure of my creation, Lucifer.

A big build that doesn't fall short to the Mother Monsters that the four Base Elements created.

I provided a human-like upper half to this child, and a snake-like lower half.

What will be destroying the humans, is the foolishness of the humans themselves.

This design is a metaphor of this.

The unsightly and disgusting snake lower half is the selfishness that lies deep inside all humans, and their cruelty given shape.

At its back, there's only the shining light wings and the still new butterfly wings.

Adding to that, there will be the fire wings, transparent wings, and the tree wings.

And then, the last ones will be...

"Go, Lucifer!!" (Ates)

This is the time to sound the trumpet of the end!!

WR – Chapter 371-373: Looking back

“I...might be the most evil God of all.” (Shiva)

Toreido Shiva said.

“From the four Base Elements...no, from the six Gods of Creation.” (Shiva) He was speaking as his other soul that resides in himself, the Wind God Quasar.

This God that rules over wind had trained in order to climb up to being the top of all Gods.

For the sake of that, he got involved with humans and learned from them.

He wondered if by having a God take in the potential of humans, that God would be able to become the top of the Gods —the way to get closer to the Dark God.

To achieve that, he incarnated as a human, moreover, he repeated that several times as he experienced life.

As a result, the Wind God incarnation, Toreido Shiva now exists.

“But as I repeated that, I ended up being charmed by the humans.” (Shiva) Shiva speaks with a grave expression.

“That brave standing of the humans. Living their lives modestly. The simple smiles that come out from them at incidental things. The many small happenings that one would think are pointless, I began thinking that maybe that’s where the greatness of the humans lies in.” (Shiva) Even when he is a God, he aimed to surpass Gods, and in a sense, Quasar was the more serious one out of them all.

“How ironic. Even though I got closer to humans seeking for strength, the humans taught me that the pointless is the strongest. And so, even as of today, I am residing in the body of a human, and enjoying the life of a human.” (Shiva)

Being born, growing, falling in love, have children, and raise them.

Shiva had a wedding the other day, and has reached the very definition of the pinnacle in human life.

“But...was that truly the correct thing to do?” (Shiva)

Shiva says while looking down at the helmet he was holding.

The beaten up and hollow helmet.

There's obviously no signs of life in it.

“The Wind Demon Lord Raphael is the compilation of the wind element monsters that I as a God had created. Just like the other Base Element Gods, even if they were created at first as tools for the Gods, they should have been able to find their own reason to live.” (Shiva) But he couldn't.

Raphael is already completely gone. Only the helmet remained as if leaving a corpse.

“I enjoyed my life as a human so much, got so absorbed in my own enjoyment, that I might have neglected my duty as a God. Maybe I should have accepted the existence of the Demon Lords just like Nova, Coacervate, and Mantle did.” (Shiva) But the Wind God had the duty of protecting his brethren from the Demon Lords as the human Shiva. And he even went so far as to destroy his own body to achieve this when he fought stubbornly against the Demon Lord.

Before he himself could be threatened by them, he threatened the Demon Lords.

“That's why I might be the weakest within the six Gods of Creation. I got so absorbed in my own enjoyment that I forgot my side as a God...” (Shiva) “You said ‘duty of a God’ before. But that duty is...” (Haine)

I -Kuromiya Haine-spoke.

I was the only one allowed to visit this sickroom, as a brethren of his, the Dark God.

“To create worlds. Create a world, create life, and that's where the job of the Gods is over.” (Haine) That's why, at the moment when the world creation is

over, the Gods are no longer needed.

“From there on, it is a matter of each Gods’ pride. How will you maintain your stance as a God? In what way will you act towards the living beings that you have created? All of those would just be the self-satisfaction of us Gods.”
(Haine) “But...!” (Shiva)

“There’s no duty for us Gods to love the lives that we created ourselves. And within that, you -Wind God-loved the humans more than anyone else. That’s why I respect you from the bottom of my heart.” (Haine) And this love of his is reaching out to monsters as well.

“I think that loving more than two at the same time is incredibly difficult, you know. Especially when you are not only a God right now but a human as well.”
(Haine) Toreido Shiva has a family, a wife, and comrades that he loves deeply.

Because of that, he couldn’t avoid a battle with the Demon Lords as his human self.

“The decision you took at that time was correct. If you continue worrying like that, it would mean that you are also complaining about this girl’s fight, you know?” (Haine) Both Shiva and I look down at the bed in front of us.

Sickroom.

The one currently residing in this sickroom is Toreido Hyue.

She was lying in the bed to rest her exhausted body and treat the wounds after a hard fight. She is currently in a deep sleep as if to heal her wounds as fast as possible.

“To think she would fight without telling me.” (Shiva)

Founder and hero, and also brother and sister.

In order to settle matters with the Wind Demon Lord, she didn’t attend the wedding of Shiva that happened right around the same time.

“That was her resolve. Hyue and Raphael fought by themselves so that the hatred that comes out from the battle won’t leak out.” (Haine) Shiva learned of this after everything planned in the wedding was over already.

Shiva, surprised by the fight that occurred against the Demon Lord and his

death -which Shiva himself was unaware of-made him run to the place in question while still in his groom outfit.

“Even though I was prepared to make her a God Hero anytime...she even refused that.” (Shiva) “That’s what resolve is about. The resolve from Hyue...and also from Raphael.” (Haine) That’s right, resolve.

The only way to cut off the cycle of hatred that stretches infinitely. The need to cut the emotions that rose up without limit.

That’s what it means to put an end to things.

Hyue thought of her own way to put an end to it, and acted on it.

“This is something that only she could do, because...” (Haine)

The Hyue lying here is...

“She is the wind hero after all.” (Haine)

“Right. Hyue is a true wind hero.” (Shiva)

Shiva’s words felt as if he were also telling himself that.

“I thought she would stay as my cute little sister forever, but she has become quite the reliable one without my knowing. There’s already no need for Juo or I huh...” (Shiva) “Not only Hyue. That’s how it is for all humans.” (Haine)

Humans are strong.

They are not so weak that they would need the help of Gods for everything.

On the contrary, there are times when humans have helped us Gods, and have made us learn and understand new things.

“Don’t get so worked up -as a human, and as a God.” (Haine)

“To think you would encourage me in such a way. I wouldn’t have been able to imagine that 1,600 years ago.” (Shiva) Time changes everything.

Humans, Gods, monsters, and all other things.

“...Now that I think about it, what happened to those guys?” (Shiva) Hyue asked about them as if he had just remembered.

“Ah...” (Haine)

He is referring to the three Demon Lords that came to Rudras Metropolis chasing after Raphael.

- 372: Within disappointment

Michael, Gabriel, and Uriel.

In the past, Gods created monsters to trouble humans, but after the long time of a century, they evolved.

They obtained a heart and a will.

As a result, the Lord of monsters was born, the Demon Lords.

That's the same for the three here, and...the now gone Raphael.

“.....”

“.....”

“.....”

And Michael, Gabriel, and Uriel were simply silent.

Even when we moved to the Wind Church headquarters and had them sit at the reception room, they had their heads down without saying a single word.

.....The atmosphere was incredibly heavy.

It felt as if I had all-nighters for a whole week.

“...Ah, Haine-san.” (Karen)

When I entered the room, the one who noticed me immediately was Karen-san.

She kept the Demon Lords company while I was together with Shiva, but it looks like her expression was already showing exhaustion.

“This is not good! I can't do anything about this atmosphere!” (Karen) “Looks like that's the case!” (Haine)

The atmosphere tormenting Karen-san was all coming from the Demon Lords.

It is heavy, gloomy, and damp.

It is the kind of atmosphere that could crush you if you were to try fixing it.

That's definitely something that was created from the sadness, regret, and loss of the Demon Lords.

“I should have...” (Uriel)

The first one to speak was Uriel.

“I should have payed more attention to Raphael. I was the one that hung out the most with Raphael within our group. And yet, I couldn’t notice the worries of Raphael...!” (Uriel) Those words were filled with self-condemnation and regret.

“I as well, you know!” (Gabriel)

The next one to speak was Gabriel.

“I was going all culture this culture that... I was unable to see the ones closest to me. I can’t even notice the state of mind of my comrade. There’s no way I have the qualifications to talk about culture!” (Gabriel) As expected, she was also filled with self-condemnation.

“...The leader of the Demon Lords huh.” (Michael)

And the last one is Michael.

“There was no higher or lower within us Demon Lords. That’s why I thought that it was presumptuous to be called the leader. But if I had taken that role more seriously, and had acted as the one who put order within the group, Raphael might not have ended up like that.” (Michael) They were always filled with vigor, but now, they are weakened to a pitiful state.

“It was basically as if I had let Raphael die...!” (Michael)

“No, if I had been more level-headed...!” (Gabriel)

“No, it was I that...!” (Uriel)

And then, the three Demon Lords return to silence.

“....It has been a repeat of this for a while now.” (Karen)

Karen-san said with a disheartened expression.

“They fall silent, say self-deprecating words every now and then, let out sighs, and fall silent again. It is a complete negative spiral.” (Karen) It is true that

anyone caught in this atmosphere would be dragged down as well with its heaviness.

“But to think they would be this discouraged. Looks like the Demon Lord-sans truly thought of each other as comrades and important existences.” (Karen) It is true that it is unexpected.

At first, the Demon Lords were born from different elements, making them clashing existences.

I could tell that they were only in a temporary cooperation in order to eradicate humans.

“But camaraderie must have been born towards the partners they grouped with for the first time.” (Haine) It happened so naturally that even they didn’t notice.

That’s why, when they lost one in their group, they noticed the camaraderie, and must have gotten even more hurt by it.

Noticing the importance of that something after losing it is sad, but it happens often.

“When thinking of it in that way, the Demon Lords are truly pitiful. I don’t know what to say to them...” (Karen) Karen-san is easy to get influenced by nature, so she was on the verge of tears right now.

She also learned of everything after it was already over. Until then, she was in the wedding of Shiva and Juo-san, and she apparently had bloodshot eyes trying to catch the bouquet.

At that time, they got the report of Hyue and Raphael having a duel, and made strenuous efforts to clean up.

Karen-san was obviously really worried about her friend Hyue, but it was better for her relative Shiva-san to see her, and she herself would be caring for the Demon Lords.

“...Now that I think about it, where’s Juo-san?” (Haine)

Where’s the recently married Juo-san?

“She went to the battle’s location to retrieve the robot, and while at it, gather

the armor parts..." (Karen) ...Well, she is a scientist, so she might be thinking something that we regular people can't understand.

We should put our all in the problem in front of us.

In other words, how to make the broken Demon Lords stand up!

"Well, looks like it will be impossible for us." (Haine)

"Haine-san?! Please don't give up all of a sudden!" (Karen)

Even if you tell me that, healing the heart of someone requires quite the experience and technique.

And I only know one person who has reached that professional level.

"No other choice but to leave it to that person." (Haine)

"?"

Is what I mutter when a new person enters the room.

"Haine-sama, Karen-sama."

Doraha.

The girl that came together with us from the Light Church.

"Reporting. The objective is at sight." (Doraha)

"Eh?" (Karen)

Karen-san was confused by the report.

But the place we are currently in is Rudras Metropolis. A moving city that has the most advanced ethereal technology.

Even when we were standing by here, the city as a whole was heading towards a certain place.

This was a request from me to Shiva.

"So we finally arrived." (Haine)

A nostalgic place.

Apollon City.

- 373: Dear Light capital

Apollon City.

The city where one of the five Grand Churches, the Light Church, is using as their base.

I am technically affiliated with the Light Church, so it is also my base as well, but since I have been quite absent from it lately, I felt pretty nostalgic about it.

“This is as far as we can bring you.” (Shiva)

After arriving at a place quite close to Apollon City, Shiva told us this.

“This was an agreement within the five Grand Churches. Our Rudras Metropolis can’t get more close to the other cities than necessary. I will bring out an ethereal car to send you guys there.” (Shiva) “Sorry for the trouble.” (Haine)

“Even so, we plan on staying around here for a while, so if something happens, we will come help immediately.” (Shiva) “No no, giving us a ride all the way here is plenty enough.” (Haine) Giving our farewells, Shiva and I exchange a strong handshake.

“Uhm...! What about Hyue-chan?” (Karen)

Karen-san was still worrying about her friend Hyue.

“She is still sleeping, but there’s nothing threatening her life. I will have her greet you when she recovers.” (Shiva) “Ah, yes!” (Karen)

And so, we left the Wind capital in this way.

We rode the car, but...

“.....”

“.....”

“.....”

The ones who were inside first, Michael, Gabriel, and Raphael were keeping their silence.

Because we are inside a pretty cramped space, the heaviness increased by a

lot.

“Uwa...” (Haine)

“Oooh...” (Karen)

Karen-san and I were at a loss for words.

We have to endure this atmosphere until we arrive at Apollon City?

“.....”

And there's another one in the Light Church team, Doraha.

“You guys are depressing.” (Doraha)

“Stop it! Doraha, stop it!” (Haine)

“Right now, a straight ball is way too dangerous!!” (Karen)

As expected, Doraha can't read the mood.

And so, we finally returned to Apollon City.

How many days have I been absent?

I don't think it is more than half a month, but for some reason, it feels as if I haven't returned for years.

Even though it hasn't been a year since I moved from my hometown to Apollon City, I already feel like this is my second home.

“Oh, Haine! So you finally returned!!”

When we arrived at the Light Church's headquarters, the first one to instantly welcome us was the Aurora Light Corps General, Grades-san.

He is a strong man that climbed his way to General, and his head lacking a single strand of hair was shining conspicuously.

“General Grades, I am truly sorry for being absent so long.” (Haine) “It is fine! Your job is to get special designated work and go around here and there after all!” (Grades) Ah.

So that's really how I was being seen as.

Well, can't be helped.

I really have been leaving the Light capital almost all the time without even notifying after all.

"But you know, Haine, even I had it tough this time." (Grades)

General Grades says as he places his arm around my shoulders.

Is this...the preliminary preparations for preaching and complaints?!

"The outside is dangerous with how the world is and the Demon Lords, right? In that sense, we had not only the hero-sama, we also had you and Doraha-chan, so our layers of protection were pretty tough. If they were to attack us, we would have peace of mind with you guys here..." (Grades) "Sorry." (Haine)

Normally, the current and previous heroes are the ones commanding the military force of each church.

The retired previous heroes were brought back to duty temporarily for this emergency state, for the sake of dealing with situations that might occur.

"But you know...the previous hero Ates is missing, and you and the Founder-sama were missing together as well. Not only that, Karen-sama, Doraha, and you went to assist another city, so you guys didn't return for a good while...!" (Grades) Ah.

The voice of General Grades is gradually growing more nasal.

"By the time I noticed, I was the one with the highest standing. The responsibility was crazy high. Just thinking about what would happen if a Demon Lord were to attack us in this state, I couldn't sleep at all. Even so, I couldn't show fear in front of my subordinates...!" (Grades) Looks like, in the time we were gone, the stress he was under was incredible.

"I am already bald so there's no hair that can be loss, but if I had hair, I would have certainly lost a hell lot from the stress. My pillow would be filled with hair. You can understand, right? Right?! I was in a middle-class position not that long ago, but I suddenly had the fate of the city resting on my shoulders!" (Grades) "But...I heard that Grades-san was the one who had Doraha accompany Karen-san?" (Haine) I was moved when I heard from hearsay of the decisiveness of

General Grades when saying 'If we are going to send reinforcements, we will be reinforcing with our all!'.

"That's cause I had no choice but to do that at that time! I actually didn't want her to go! I wanted someone I could share the responsibility with!!" (Grades) As if releasing all the stress inside of him, Grades-san cries on my shoulder.

Sorry.

Taking all the fighting force when we don't know when a Demon Lord would attack.

There's no helping that you would be worried.

"Where did you go?! Don't leave me alone~!!" (Grades)

"Yeah, good work, good work." (Haine)

I soothe Grades-san who has regressed to an infant after being released from his responsibilities.

"Ah~, with this, I am finally released from my daily worries. If the Demon Lords attack us, we can have you guys confront them as well." (Grades)
"Speaking of that, I want to introduce you to some people." (Haine) "Hm?" (Grades)

"The Demon Lords that came along with us on the way." (Haine)

Close to my back, Michael, Gabriel, and Uriel line up.

"Gyaaaaaa!!" (Grades)

'If I had hair, I would have lost them all at that instant', is what the bald General Grades said after.

WR – Chapter 374-375: Support of the heart

And well, after scraping away the lifespan of General Grades in that way, we moved to achieve our biggest objective.

“Uhm...Haine-san.” (Karen)

“Yes?” (Haine)

“Why did you bring the Demon Lords to Apollon City in the first place?”
(Karen) A valid question from the accompanying Karen-san.

“Karen-san.....the Demon Lords are currently hurt by the shock of experiencing the loss of a comrade for the first time. They may have strong divine power, but they were born recently. They don’t know how to take the sadness.” (Haine) “I see...” (Karen)

“It is because they are in that delicate of a state that there’s the need for fitting skill or it will be impossible to heal them. We need a specialist in handling the heart.” (Haine) And from the people I know of, the one who is the best at this is this person —the Light Founder, Yorishiro.

The three Demon Lords and her were having an audience at the altar of the Light Church.

“WAAAAAAAAAAIT!” (Karen)

Karen-san was conspicuously agitated by this.

She closes in on me who is spectating this together with her.

“What’s going on?! Why are you having Yorishiro-sama face the Demon Lords?!” (Karen) “Didn’t I tell you already? We need someone to treat the heart of the Demon Lords.” (Haine) The one most fit to do this is Yorishiro.

“A specialist in evaluating the heart, diagnosing the wound, and has the best technique for it; don’t you think that’s basically Yorishiro, Karen-san?” (Haine)

“Well, yeah...” (Karen)

After all, religion is specialized in filling the openings of the heart.

And Yorishiro who rules over the Light Church is the best heart controller.

“Mind control is a necessary skill in religion after all.” (Haine) “This is not a cult!!” (Karen)

But I have already brought them before her.

Now then, Yorishiro, heal the wounded hearts of the Demon Lords with that silver tongue of yours that brought you all the way to the top of the Light Church at a young age!

“.....I have a rough idea of things thanks to Haine-san.” (Yorishiro) Yorishiro speaks in an austere stance.

A voice that could pull even us in. And for the spiritually wounded Demon Lords, this had great effect.

“Gugh...” (Michael)

“What’s with this voice?! I feel as if I am being drawn in...!” (Gabriel) “The divinity is...!” (Uriel)

The Demon Lords were all ears now.

“The first taste of separation. It must have been painful to even describe in words. Saying ‘I understand your feelings’ here, would be hypocritical. Your pain is yours only after all.” (Yorishiro) “Ugh...”

The Demon Lords endured the words of Yorishiro that felt, at a glance, as if she were pushing them away.

“The death won’t resurrect. What’s lost cannot return. Even if you were to say ‘if I had done those things at that time, it might not have turned out this way’, time will still not rewind. No one can change what has happened in the already gone past.” (Yorishiro) “We already know that!!” (Gabriel)

Gabriel rebutted as if she couldn’t endure it any longer.

“But that’s all we can do! We can’t stop thinking about how there might have been a chance to save Raphael!” (Gabriel) “And what if there had been a

chance?" (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro asks cool-headed.

"We would only be carving that uselessness of us for letting that chance escape." (Michael) "That's right." (Yorishiro)

Michael mutters heavily.

"We are incompetent. No matter how much divine power we are overflowing with, or how big it is, we couldn't even save one comrade. We are useless people that are only flung around by our own strength!" (Michael) "That's right, but..." (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro stops her words for a moment and says.

"That's how everyone is." (Yorishiro)

"?"

Uriel raises his head.

Like a sinner that had noticed the existence of God in the middle of their prayer.

"The longer one lives...the more regrets one will surely shoulder. They painfully think 'if I had done this' while regretting a past that they can't do anything about. This is something that everyone who has made decisions would experience." (Yorishiro) Yorishiro spreads out her arms as if accepting their faults.

"Like you people right now." (Yorishiro)

""""!!""

The Demon Lords gulp their breath.

"The ones that don't have regrets, the ones that haven't failed, are people that without exception have not fought, have not struggled, at all. The ones who don't fight, ridicule the people that do." (Yorishiro) That's why, the people that fight, don't laugh at other people that fight as well.

They know the pain of fighting, and they also know the grief of fighting as well.

“That’s why I won’t ridicule you people.” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro brings back the spread out arms of hers to her chest, that simple action of hers felt as if it were bringing everyone before her into her embrace. Even from where I was, I could feel a warmth inside of me.

Everyone that knows that same pain...

“As people that know that same pain, we can understand each other as well. You can make decisions that won’t make you repeat that same pain. We call that wisdom.” (Yorishiro) Because...

“That’s the only thing that serves as comfort in our loss after all.” (Yorishiro)
What has been lost won’t return.

In that case, if at the very least you can use that unbearable pain as a lesson for the future, that pain would have had meaning, and you can comfort yourself with that.

“I see...” (Michael)

“That’s right. For the sake of Raphael as well, we can’t just stand idly...!”
(Gabriel) “Founder-sama!” (Uriel)

The three Demon Lords kneeled.

As if the chain of pain had been released.

“Please don’t kneel. From now on, we will be having an equal standing as comrades after all.” (Yorishiro) And Yorishiro properly strengthened the connection!

She doesn’t let a chance escape!

“...Uhm, Haine-san, it is true that Yorishiro-sama has managed to bring back the spirit of the Demon Lords, but...” (Karen) Karen-san was showing slight signs of escapism.

“Aren’t we taking advantage of the opening in their hearts?” (Karen) I also felt that way.

Maybe leaving it to Yorishiro was a mistake?

I began feeling regret as well.

- 375: The identity of the one acting in the shadows

And in this way, the Demon Lords managed to at least get back on their feet after the loss of their comrade.

“Hey hey! Now that I look closely, this building has quite the dignified style!

The walls and pillars are filled with carvings, I feel a lot of culture in it!!”

(Gabriel) “But, doesn’t it instead make it suffocating with that many decorations? It surpasses the ‘muhyaaa’ feeling and ends up being overwhelming instead.” (Uriel) Gabriel is in high tension with the city that’s brimming with culture.

Uriel has...increased his skills as a connoisseur?!

“Apollon City is also called as the City of Scholars. It is the city that has the most developed ideology culture.” (Yorishiro) Yorishiro acts as the representative and explains it.

“History, philosophy, literature, psychology; those kind of things are what this city specializes in studying and polishing. The biggest library of the world, natural history facilities, academic conferences, documents of the world’s mysteries; this city is filled with those kind of things daily.” (Yorishiro) “So the study of how to better yourself huh. How hot-blooded.” (Michael) Michael mutters with his arms crossed.

“It is the kind of knowledge we need the most. What are we? We have to properly decipher this first. We have to move forward for the sake of Raphael who has departed before us as well.” (Michael) “That’s right, Michael!” (Gabriel)

“We can’t stay idle looking back! Walking forward is the path to repay Raphael’s friendship!” (Uriel) The three Demon Lords held hands.

Wow...

These guys get along well...

“But before that, there’s a problem we have to solve.” (Haine) Is what I add in.

“The Great Demon Lord Lucifer is still thinking of eradicating humans, right?”

(Haine) That's right.

I didn't bring these guys to Apollon City only to have them stand back up.

I want them to tell us something important.

The Demon Lord that is still shrouded in mystery and threatens the world as a whole...

Lucifer.

And also the one behind that.

"And about the other person..." (Haine)

I was told about her by Michael and the others.

But before I could ask in more detail, the sadness of losing Raphael had sunk into them, and they were not in a state where I could ask them about it.

That's why I wanted them to get back on their feet even if I had to use the silver tongue of Yorishiro that was borderline brainwashing.

"Sunnysol Ates." (Haine)

In order to ask in more detail about this woman that is deeply connected with Lucifer.

"The Priestess of Lucifer. That's how she called herself." (Michael) Michael answers me.

"She told us that she is the one who will speak the will in the stead of the still unawakened Lucifer-sama. The representative that will hear out the words of Lucifer-sama for the sake of accomplishing Lucifer-sama's objective. That's how she explained herself." (Michael) "And in reality, her ability to take action was good. She managed to find our hiding without any difficulty, and brought us to the castle where Lucifer-sama was sleeping." (Gabriel) "When I actually saw Lucifer-sama sleeping, I was flabbergasted. At that time, we were still looking down on humans from the bottom of our heart, but it was because we saw that that we were able to accept that woman." (Uriel) The testimonies of the Demon Lords were coming out one after the other.

The more they say, the more agitated I got.

She is definitely not a woman we don't know of.

That's because she was the previous light hero.

But just before the fight against the Demon Lords, she was defeated by Yorishiro, and fled from the Light Church.

After that, her whereabouts were unknown.

We didn't know where she was, but no one imagined that she would be at the side of the Demon Lords.

"I can't believe that!!" (Karen)

Karen-san shouts as if speaking out the feelings of everyone.

"It is true that Ates-sama...no, Ates is a person that possesses something that we can't gauge. That she would be perpetrating something that we wouldn't be able to predict...!" (Karen) True.

I was unconscious at that time so I wasn't present personally, but Ates apparently acted in a way that would make one doubt their eyes in the battle that would trigger her escape.

Using a lost art of the light divine users —swinging a divine tool that governs over the shadow divine power.

Not only that, she had a level of light divine power that rivalled that of Yorishiro without the need of a divine tool.

They finally managed to defeat Ates by having Karen-san become a God Hero, but that in itself makes her abnormal among abnormals within the humans.

"But even with that...! To think that she was the one pulling the strings in the Demon Lord battle is just...way too abnormal. It surpasses the limit of what a human would be able to scheme!" (Karen) It is just as Karen-san says.

No matter how good of a schemer Ates is, managing to control the Demon Lords to destroy the world is just not on the level that a single human can manage in terms of method and objective.

"What if she is not just a mere human?"

Those muttered words gathered the attention of everyone.

Yorishiro was the one who said this.

“Yorishiro...?” (Haine)

“Ate-san was a person that gave out an abnormal aura since before she left us. Resourcefulness that can't normally be seen in humans, divine power impossible for a human to possess; it is as if she was something that surpassed humans.” (Yorishiro) “What would that be?” (Karen)

Karen-san couldn't help but question.

“Are you saying Ate is not a human? Then what? A monster? A Demon Lord?” (Karen) “Karen-san, I have heard that in your fight with the Demon Lords, you have met people that were the same as her.” (Yorishiro) Wait...

“In Muspelheim, Phalaris as the incarnation of the Fire God Nova; at Hydra Ville, the Water God Coacervate; and Mother Earth Mantle that became one with Sasae-san. Didn't you speak directly with them?” (Yorishiro) “That's...!” (Karen)

“The Gods that were far away and were the object of worship in the five Grand Churches. They have all been approaching humans one after the other. And the personage that we light devotees worship might have been right close by.” (Yorishiro) Oi, wait, Yorishiro.

What are you trying to tell her?!

“That's right. Sunnysol Ate is the incarnation of the Light Goddess, Inflation.” (Yorishiro)

WR – Chapter 376-377: Whereabouts of Goddess

TLN: Wew, a really weird timing for a sponsored chapter. But ya know, Tsuki took all the sunday.

No worries, I will manage to release the next batch of WR in thursday!

Thanks to the donators! 😊

Sponsored Chapters

The conversation had been temporarily stopped and the Demon Lords, the hero, and I had separated.

Because of the many shocking revelations, there was the need for a break in order to arrange the information in our heads.

The Demon Lords had gone to the room prepared by the Light Church, and Karen-san went on her way to manage the work that has accumulated after being absent for a long time.

The ones remaining were...

“Doraha, I’m glad to see you back.” (Yorishiro)

In that group, Yorishiro showed happiness at the return of Doraha who wasn’t in the Light capital for a good while.

This welcoming of Yorishiro’s treasured Doraha had been postponed till now because, the moment we returned, we immediately had to heal the mental state of the Demon Lords, and we were in a hurry to obtain information regarding Lucifer.

Yorishiro hugs tightly the small body of Doraha.

“I was a little bit lonely with you away from my side for this long, but I am incredibly happy to feel your growth.” (Yorishiro)

“I am Yorishiro-sama’s shadow. From now on and ever, I will follow you.”
(Doraha)

In this journey, Doraha has understood that she is an extreme case of xenophobic.

As expected, Doraha is thoroughly courteous towards the person she acknowledges as her master, Yorishiro, and shows deep affection.

After hugging like mother and child, and rubbing their cheeks together, she then turned her gaze towards me.

“Sorry for the wait. It looks like you still have something to say to me-desu wan?” (Yorishiro)

Now that I think about it, Yorishiro and I haven’t seen each other since the time we brought back Mantle at the Nameless Desert.

It wasn’t that long of a space compared to Karen-san, but right now, I can’t understand Yorishiro’s thoughts to the point that I feel as if that space of time was several centuries.

“...Why did you say something like that?” (Haine)

(Wait, please.)

A voice reverberates directly in my head.

This is a voice that comes from the waves of the soul.

Words that can only be transmitted towards only a selected few souls that share a characteristic.

(Doraha is still here. It would be better to keep what we are going to be talking here between ourselves, right?) (Yorishiro)

(...Fine.) (Haine)

Yorishiro does have a point, so I accepted.

Maybe the hug of Yorishiro is quite comfortable, Doraha had fallen asleep within her arms.

After thinking she really is a child in this kind of moments, I continue the conversation.

(Why did you say something like that?) (Haine)

(What do you refer to by 'something like that'?) (Yorishiro)

This woman...playing the fool at this point.

The conversation won't progress if you go making pointless remarks.

(The nonsense about Ates being the incarnation of the Light Goddess Inflation.) (Haine)

(Why do you think it is nonsense?) (Yorishiro)

Obviously because...!!

(If Ates-san's identity is the Light Goddess, all the pieces will fit. More so, with the existence of the Light Demon Lord Lucifer.) (Yorishiro)

(Ugh.) (Haine)

(How was it created? Monsters were created by Gods. Or the other possibility is that a God gave that function to what's known as a Mother Monster, but a Light Mother Monster doesn't exist.) (Yorishiro)

She is hitting me with logic!

(In that case, there's no other possibility than her being the Light Goddess who created the Light Demon Lord Lucifer with her own hands.) (Yorishiro)

(Are you saying Ates was the one who created Lucifer?) (Haine)

(Yes.) (Yorishiro)

It is true that this is really convincing reasoning.

I don't know why, but Ates is planning on eradicating humanity, and her specific method to do that is the creation of Lucifer.

And then, she shared that plan with the four Demon Lords that were born at around that time.

Even if Ates had that kind of conspiracy in mind, it is hard to connect it with the evolution of the monsters into Demon Lords, but the theory itself does

indeed make sense.

(But there is a bigger problem than that!) (Haine)

(What is it?) (Yorishiro)

(There's no way Ates is the incarnation of Inflation! No way! Because Yorishiro, you are the incarnation of the Light Goddess, aren't you!!) (Haine)

Yeah, that's why we are able to do soul transmission with each other.

I am the incarnation of the Dark God Entropy, so we are able to establish this communication method between Gods.

(You are the very Goddess herself, so you should know better than anyone that Ates is not Inflation! And yet, you went and said that nonsense yourself!) (Haine)

Hearing that Ates, who is scheming on eradicating humanity, was the Light Goddess...you should understand how Karen-san felt at that moment.

(Karen-san is the light hero. A member of the Light Church, and that's why she worships Inflation deeply!) (Haine)

Why can you so easily tell a lie like that that betrays the belief of Karen-san?!

(Karen-san wasn't that shocked about it.) (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro says as if a matter of fact.

(She has already been personally acquainted with the polluted Coacervate and the unrelenting Mantle after all. She has learned that Gods are not as perfect as humans think, and has overcome it. Karen-san is stronger than you think.) (Yorishiro)

(Even so...) (Haine)

(Also, I didn't lie. Ates-san is without doubt the Light Goddess Inflation.) (Yorishiro)

?!

(She is my half.) (Yorishiro)

(That's...!) (Haine)

(You have seen how Coacervate was divided after being distilled, right? Gods are intangible beings that are not tied by a body. They can freely change into anything. They can also change from one to two.) (Yorishiro)

Then...! Is Inflation saying that she herself had something like that happening to her?

(Entropy, at one point in time, I truly hated humans. The humans that had taken you away from me!) (Yorishiro)

At the battle of Gods 1,600 years ago, the other five Gods and I were fighting over the treatment of the humans.

I wanted to protect the freedom of the humans, and the other Gods wanted to enslave them.

I was defeated in that fight and was sealed till this era.

(You went as far as going against me to protect the humans. You took the side of humans rather than mine. I couldn't forgive that. But in the time I incarnated as the human Izanami, and lived my life with the people of the Underworld country, I should have forgotten that anger and hatred. I thought that I had learned about the greatness of the humans and my unsightly emotions had disappeared.) (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro grabs her chest tightly in pain, biting her lips as she transmits the voice of her soul to me.

(The hatred of the Light Goddess has changed form and still exists. That's the other Inflation. It has incarnated in the form of Ates. My sister.) (Yorishiro)

Is that even possible?!

The loving emotions and the hating emotions towards humans within the Light Goddess had rebelled, and finally, separated to become individual existences.

The loving emotions became Yorishiro...

The hating emotions became Ates...

And pushed by that hatred, Ates created Lucifer to destroy the humans?

The pieces fall so in place that I could only agree with it.

(You...knew about that from the very beginning?) (Haine)

(No, I learned about it pretty recently. Right before Ates-san left, she revealed her own identity. She must have intended it as a challenge.) (Yorishiro)

She herself didn't even notice until then that she had divided in two.

(Ates-san is my very sin. And that sin is trying to turn its fangs towards humanity...) (Yorishiro)

And that was hurting the Light Goddess herself.

Yorishiro has been hanging her head down this whole time she was revealing this.

It must have taken a lot of courage to break this out.

(Thank you, Yorishiro. For telling me.) (Haine)

Those words rang out from my soul.

Yorishiro apparently learned of this when Ates escaped. She had many chances to tell us, but the reason it took her this long to actually tell me was most likely because she didn't have the resolve yet.

(...I really am no good. Even though, not that long ago, I spoke about how 'if's' won't change the past...) (Yorishiro)

I sit by the side of Yorishiro.

(Isn't that fine? That just means you have learned from humans and have grown as well. In my eyes, your radiance is greater than 1,600 years ago.) (Haine)

Yorishiro most likely heard me, but she just continued to brush the head of the sleeping Doraha with a wry smile and a flushed face.

(Is that because I am basically a distilled Inflation?) (Yorishiro)

(...Let's search for a better comparison.) (Haine)

Yorishiro and I laugh lightly.

It felt as if something in the room had gotten slightly lighter.

I finally have a picture of the core of this battle.

- 377: Exchange between human and demons

After that, I left the room and walked aimlessly around the headquarters.

Sunnysol Ates is the half of the Light Goddess that had divided due to hatred.

That soul had incarnated into a human.

Being hit by that shocking truth, I was unable to say anything and had no choice but to fall in contemplation.

I can understand why Yorishiro couldn't speak about it until now.

From what Yorishiro said, Ates is basically the stains of Inflation, the ugly side that you wouldn't want others to see.

Revealing that side to others without any fear is not something that even a God can do readily.

“Humans are still being dragged into the troubles created by Gods...” (Haine)

When thinking about it, this battle with the Demon Lords is practically the compilation of all the troubles that the Gods have caused to the humans.

But in hindsight, it is because of the Demon Lords battle that the Gods have closed the distance quite a lot between them and the humans.

Just when I thought that humans, Gods, and demons wouldn't fight anymore, the existence of an evil Light Goddess has been made clear.

The world hasn't escaped danger yet.

That feeling got heavier.

“Oh, oooi~, Haine, oooooi~!”

While I was spacing out thinking this, I heard a voice calling me from afar.

“What are you pondering about at a place like this? It doesn't suit you, you know? A man must charge forward with their youth!!”

“.....You are drunk, aren't you, General Grades?” (Haine)

As proof, his bald head was bright red.

Drinking alcohol when it is still daytime, maybe I should report you for misconduct, Knight General.

“What’s so bad about drinking? I am off duty today!!” (Grades)

“Eh? Really?” (Haine)

“I finally got a break after you guys came back, you know! Before that, I would have to be on full attention for the Demon Lords that who knows when they would attack, so I didn’t have a single moment to rest. I couldn’t sleep at all with you guys gone, you know?” (Grades)

Uwaaa...

Now that he mentions it, Grades-san was truly having an endurance battle while we were gone.

I changed my mind. He is finally free from the tension, so it should be fine to drink!!

“How many tens of bottles have I drunk already? At any rate, the taste of beer is proportionate to how long you work! Isn’t that right, Uriel?!” (Grades)

“Really! Alcohol tastes the best after a hardship!” (Uriel)

Why are you here?!

“Uriel, weren’t you supposed to be at the specially designated room at the church’s headquarters?!” (Haine)

“Cause you know, even if you tell me to take a break, I was bored. And then, I encountered this bald guy by coincidence, and ended up getting along with him quite well!” (Uriel)

Wait!

“Oof, I thought that the Demon Lords were all scary guys, but they are unexpectedly nice! Anyone that understands the taste of beer can become friends!” (Grades)

Even General Grades?!

He is one of the guys that made you go through a hell of stress not that long ago, you know?!

“Alcohol is truly a nice thing! It tastes good, and the more you drink, the more you feel as if the worries and stress you have inside you melts!!” (Uriel)

“Good good. Right, Demon Lords should also have things piled inside them. Okay! This old man will hear you out today, so spill your heart out!!” (Grades)

“There’s the matter with Raphael... but there’s also the scary earth hero that catches me and doesn’t let go! She is smiling. She is smiling, but it is scary!” (Uriel)

“In that case, I will teach you how to deal with scary female superiors! You know, in this Light Church, there’s a lot of scary women as well!” (Grades)

The drunks are bonding.

I wanted to retort about what the hell they are doing...but before I could, I heard the sounds of an uproar from another place.

“Celes-tan!”

“That’s culture!!”

“Oi! Captain Vesage and Gabriel!!” (Haine)

Even without confirming their figures, I could tell with what they said!!

“Oh, assistant Haine! I was in the middle of teaching this lady Demon Lord about culture!!” (Vesage)

The idol otaku Captain Vesage said.

This idiot is a big fan of the hero and idol Celestis.

And...

“To think that Celestis-chan’s popularity would transmit in this way! This must be a type of culture! Postcards, trading cards, hugging pillows! All of these is culture I have never seen before!!” (Gabriel)

There’s Gabriel elated in trying to greedily absorb the culture of humans.

“Don’t go transmitting bad culture towards other races as well!” (Haine)

“What are you saying? The only bad culture is the gacha.” (Vesage) <Amen>

Gacha?

“Umu. It is a mobile phone business that’s trending in idol shops lately. Well, it is like a lottery of sorts.” (Vesage)

I only get bad vibes from it.

“For a set price, you get the right to pull the lot, and if you manage to hit jackpot, you can get a super rare good of Celes-tan!!” (Vesage)

“And what are the chances of getting that jackpot?” (Haine)

“.....”

Vesage didn’t say anything.

“You...just how much did you spend in that?” (Haine)

“.....”

“Answer! Answer, damn it!! You were finally promoted and got a raise, and yet, you can only use your money in such useless things?!” (Haine)

I grab the shoulders of Vesage and shake him, and Gabriel who was looking at the side was once again pleased.

“Incredible! This must be the joys and sorrows of the economy! This must be part of culture, isn’t it?!” (Gabriel)

This woman connects way too many things with culture!

Or more like, aren’t Uriel and Gabriel getting too used to humans?!

What in the world is going on here?!

“We are trying to learn from humans.”

This time, Michael was the one who appeared.

“The feelings of humans, their thoughts, their emotions; they are things that we demons must take in and absorb. That’s the path we should take from now on.” (Michael)

“Michael?” (Haine)

“We don’t think about eradicating humans anymore. If humans permit it, we want to walk the path of mutual prosperity with them.” (Michael)

From what I heard after, Michael had been participating in the training drills

of the Aurora Knight corps, apparently to learn about the training that humans do.

He supposedly carried a mountain of Aurora Knights as if it were nothing.

Training with the strongest of monsters in a drill that is for the sake of fighting monsters.

This is already in a state where I can't put my head around anything.

WR – Chapter 378-379: Wicked Snake Fiend

Sponsored Chapters

And so, in this way, the exchange between Demon Lords and humans deepened gradually to the point that made me question ‘what the hell is this?’, and finally, we faced a big change.

There were few things we could do to approach the matter.

The most direct way to solve the problem would be to find Ates and capture her, but we don’t know where she is at all.

We could make her a world wanted person, but if we are going against a God incarnation, it definitely won’t be easy to find her location.

It was the same when the Demon Lords hid to avoid me after all.

What we can do would be to harden our defenses with our respective heroes, and make it so we are not hit in any opening.

“Hero-sama!! Assistant!!”

We were thinking about passing the day hanging out with the Demon Lords, but a Light Knight came flying to report to us.

“Emergency call!!”

Emergency call?

In this era, we can exchange information with other nations in an instant thanks to the ethereal wireless technology.

Even if one of our places gets attacked, we can immediately fly to their aid, and we will be able to provide fast assistance with the use of the flying machines.

“Emergency call from Rudras Metropolis!”

“Rudras Metropolis... That’s pretty close.” (Haine)

The moving city of Rudras Metropolis is currently at standby in a place close by to Apollon City in case of any unexpected events.

Karen-san and I ran to the communication room and faced the mic.

“This is Kuromiya Haine speaking! Wind Church member, can you hear me?!” (Haine)

{Haine... Is that Haine?!}

This voice.

Isn’t it Shiva?!

For the Founder himself to make a call, moreover, from how he is speaking, I can tell he is in pain.

“What’s the matter?! What happened?! Explain the situation!” (Haine)

{That monster...! We weren’t even in its sight.....! It treated us as pebbles at the roadside...! A whole city...!}

The speaker was relaying the voice of Shiva that was faraway, and it was reproducing the pained voice of his.

“Oi! Oi! Is Rudras Metropolis okay?! What about the damage?!” (Haine)

{Don’t worry. There’s not much damage on our side..... It didn’t give us any attention, so the damage was kept at a minimum..... How laughable.} (Shiva)

His voice was filled with regret and self-derision.

{It was so sudden that we didn’t have the time to bring out the hero or the Kazama Shinobis. That guy only shot one divine power attack. However, that one attack blew away Rudras Metropolis and made it bounce three times.} (Shiva)

Bounce?!

The whole Rudras Metropolis?!

It may be the smallest out of the five Great Cities, but the city is basically a

moving fortress, and yet, with one attack?!

{The reason we didn't flip upside down was thanks to the balancer that Juo invented. But because of that, Rudras Metropolis' moving engine has completely stopped. Many buildings inside have been destroyed. We can't head out to provide assistance. We have our hands full in the rescuing inside the city.} (Shiva)

What?

"What are you talking about? We are the ones who should be going to help. We will send Aurora Knight corps with relief goods, so—!!" (Haine)

{DON'T!!} (Shiva)

"?!"

The agitated shout of Shiva made me gulp my breath.

To think Shiva would lose his wits to this extent.

{There's no need to send help to us! You guys should strengthen the defenses of the city! That's why we called you!!} (Shiva)

"?!"

{That thing's objective is you guys! The place where you guys are, Apollon City!! Our Rudras Metropolis was only coincidentally in the way, so it pushed us to the side!!} (Shiva)

Just what in the world...!

{I will be the one sending reinforcements! When the situation has stabilized, I will immediately send Hyue as well! That's why, resist until then, please!! Listen well, survive!!} (Shiva)

With the call of Shiva that left no opening to speak back ending, I immediately left from the Light Grand Church. And then, I look at the direction where Rudras Metropolis is.

"What is happening, Haine-san?" (Karen)

Karen-san seemed to be uneasy as well.

I don't know either. I don't know, but I can clearly tell it is something incredibly bad.

"...? A mountain range...?" (Haine)

Was there a mountain range at that direction.

No, there's no way.

The moving city of Rudras Metropolis cannot traverse properly through mountainous terrain, so it would always choose flat ground.

That's why, there's no way there would be a mountain range at the direction of Rudras Metropolis!

"?!"

Another mystery occurs.

That mountain range began to swerve.

"The mountain is...moving?!" (Haine)

"That's not it, Haine-san! That's not a mountain!!" (Karen)

The other members of the Light Church began to come out after hearing the uproar and were equally flustered.

"It is not a mountain, but a snake! An incredibly big snake is slithering!!"
(Karen)

It is exactly as Karen-san says.

A giant snake that can be mistaken for a mountain was slithering towards us!

"That's...what blew away Rudras Metropolis?!" (Haine)

Where is the head and tail end of that snake?

The body of the snake is so big that it was impossible to find it.

—No, I found it.

The giant upper body of the beast that was slithering its way towards us.

"The head of the snake...is actually a human body?!" (Haine)

Upper body is human, lower half is snake; moreover, its whole body is as big

as a mountain.

Could it be, this is...the strongest and last Demon Lord?

The Demon Lord that reigns over light, the Great Demon Lord Lucifer?!

- 379: Leader Inauguration

This is...the Great Demon Lord Lucifer?

A giant beast that one could mistake for a mountain, and instead of a snake head, it has a human upper half.

Truly strange-looking.

To the point that would make me have goosebumps.

Its rough reptilian skin brought about a feeling of disgust in a physiological level.

I don't know the reason, but it is probably an instinctive ability that snakes scatter through species that are several times smaller than it.

Moreover, a part of it looks exactly like a human.

That upper half of a robust man combined what a human is used to seeing with that of a beast, making the picture even more grotesque.

“Akakakakakakakaka!!”

The roar that pierced the air and cut apart the eardrums further increased the disgustingness.

It is a mass of repulsiveness.

That's the last threat of the Demon Lord battle.

Lucifer.

“What in the world is going on?!”

People came out one after the other from the Light Grand Church where one can see the abnormality that is the new Demon Lord.

And within that group, there's Michael, Gabriel, and Uriel.

They were holding a philosophy book, idol poster, and an alcohol bottle

respectively. I could tell that they were fully enjoying the human culture in Apollon City.

“Hiih?! What’s with that disgusting thing?!” (Gabriel)

Even Gabriel had gotten scared by Lucifer’s atypical appearance.

“Could it be that’s...!” (Uriel)

“Great Demon Lord, Lucifer...sama?” (Michael)

Uriel and Michael were dumbstruck by what seems to be the first time they see their ruler Great Demon Lord.

“This is the first time I see him in action! Is that really Lucifer-sama?! I only saw his cocoon so...” (Uriel)

“I couldn’t see him directly when he was sleeping in the castle, but to think he would be this big! Isn’t he a lot bigger than the castle that served as his cocoon?!” (Gabriel)

“No, that’s not it! That castle itself was Lucifer-sama! So we were using the inside of Lucifer-sama as our base?!” (Michael)

Voices of agitation were leaking out from the Demon Lords.

And within them, there was one who had his fists tightly gripped and trembling.

No, his whole body was trembling. The one who was trembling as if trying to hold back his raging stream of emotions was Michael.

“...What ‘Great Demon Lord’...!!” (Michael)

Wa?

“That thing is not a Demon Lord. It is just a giant monster. It is true that it is gigantic, but I can’t feel intelligence or a soul! It is just a giant monster that brings about destruction by the orders of its God!” (Michael)

“N-Now that you mention it...!” (Uriel)

Monsters repeated a cycle of life and death for a century long, and at the end of that accumulated experience, is what brought about the Demon Lords who have a will and soul.

They are truly worthy of being the rulers of monsters. In order to get the best out of the intelligence they have gotten, a trait of them is that they possess a physique similar to that of humans.

But the Great Demon Lord that's supposed to stand at the summit of Demon Lords doesn't fit any of those traits.

A size that far surpasses that of humans, an abnormal lower half that can take up the whole vision of someone, and that way of acting, that roar didn't have a single shred of intelligence from it. It is basically a beast.

It is just like the Hydra Serpent we fought before; a puppet with no will controlled by a God.

"We were worshipping that thing as our summit?! We called that the Lord of Monsters?! Don't joke around!!" (Michael)

The roar of Michael echoed powerfully within the whole structure of this Light Grand Church.

"This made it clear! As I thought, that woman...Sunnysol Ates, she was deceiving us Demon Lords!! Lucifer already isn't worth respect!!" (Michael)

And then, as if showing the anger in his heart, the Fire Demon Lord spreads out his fire wings.

"From now on, I -Michael-will take command of us Demon Lords. Gabriel, Uriel! Entrust your lives to me!!" (Michael)

Michael shouts loudly.

"I maintained equality because we were under Lucifer, and because I neglected giving order to the Demon Lords, we lost Raphael! I won't let the same mistake happen! From today on, I -Michael-will lead you guys as the leader of the Demon Lords!!" (Michael)

"Good grief, finally the leader is going to act as the leader huh." (Uriel)

"I don't really mind. There's no other than Michael who would take a troublesome role like that anyways." (Gabriel)

Uriel and Gabriel accepted the resolve of their comrade lightheartedly.

“.....Kuromiya Haine.” (Michael)

“Ah, yes?!” (Haine)

I was surprised by the sudden mention of my name.

“Leave the job of dealing with that Lucifer to us Demon Lords.” (Michael)

“Eh?!” (Haine)

“The trouble that us monsters have created, will be put to an end by us monsters. That is the true order of this world.” (Michael)

“”We gotta pay you guys back for putting up with us after all.” (Uriel)

“You guys help out that Wind capital that seems to have received damage. I want to learn the culture of that nation one of these days.” (Gabriel)

And then, the three Demon Lords spread out their symbolic divine power wings and fly into the sky.

“Wa?! Wait! Do you mean that...!” (Haine)

Karen-san and I had no choice but to absentmindedly see off the Demon Lords that were leaving.

Could it be that what is about to begin now is...a direct battle between the three Demon Lords led by Michael against Lucifer?!

WR – Chapter 380-381: Demon Lords frontline

But we can't just let them go like this on their own. That's what I thought for some reason.

And whether I want it or not, I have already moved to action.

“Hyaa!” (Haine)

I make a big jump.

I somehow managed to jump onto the Demon Lords that were still not that far from the ground yet.

“Kyaaaaa?!”

But...it looks like I coincidentally jumped onto the only female Demon Lord, Gabriel.

...It really was a coincidence, okay?

I jumped on the spur of the moment and ended up latching on her, but from an outsider's perspective, I am without doubt a degenerate?!

“Kyaa! What's with this guy?! Hugging a lady out of nowhere without permission! That's not culture!” (Gabriel)

Give me a break!

You have been getting completely dyed in the color of Celestis lately! At first, the only difference you had from the other Demon Lords was your appearance, but now, your personality has been completely changed!

“Haine-san?! What are you doing?!” (Karen)

Karen-san calls me in a reproachful and agitated tone from the ground.

I am grabbing onto a Demon Lord that is thinking of heading to where Lucifer is, so Karen-san is steadily getting further and further away.

“Sorry, Karen-san! I will be accompanying the Demon Lords!!” (Haine)

““““?!””””

This declaration surprised not only Karen-san but the Demon Lords as well.

“What is the meaning of this, Kuromiya Haine? I told you that the problem of monsters must be put to an end by us monsters.” (Michael)

Michael also comes out with a reproachful tone.

“There’s the need for a witness to the battle between Demon Lords, right? I will take that role. Bring me along!” (Haine)

“.....”

The real reason might be something else though.

I heard about the real identity of Sunnysol Ates, and now that I know about it, I have to meet her again once more no matter what. That’s how I felt.

“...Fine. Even so, there’s no need for you to get involved.” (Michael)

“Thanks. I will by no means throw cold water at the resolve of you Demon Lords.” (Haine)

And in this way, I ended up being a spectator to the battle of Demon Lords.

“H-Haine-saaaan?!” (Karen)

And Karen-san had no choice but to see us off in a flustered manner.

I raise my voice towards the girl down.

“Karen-san! Please command the Aurora Knights and harden the defenses of the city!! And also make sure to refuse the aid of Rudras Metropolis!!” (Haine)

Leaving those words behind, I left towards the sky with the Demon Lords.

By the way, it was only after a while later that I remembered I could fly with my dark matter.

The heat of the moment is a truly fearsome thing.

And then...

We finally made it.

To where the monster that makes the earth tremble is; the Great Demon Lord Lucifer.

“This is...!” (Haine)

What Michael, Gabriel, Uriel, and I were witnessing down from the sky was truly like a picture of hell.

There’s a fiend covering the ground.

The long long snake tail of Lucifer was wriggling, slithering, and coiling around as it covered the whole ground.

It is not only long but also gigantic, so the trees and small hills were mowed down and there was boundless destruction and cruelty spread around.

And then, there’s also the snake’s scales that can be seen everywhere.

“This truly...looks like hell...” (Gabriel)

Even Gabriel faltered at the tragedy below.

“What are you guys gonna do? This thing covers the whole vision, so even with eyes closed, you could hit the target.” (Haine)

I gave out my opinion as a spectator.

“Silence, you degenerate.” (Gabriel)

“No mercy?!” (Haine)

Gabriel is completely on guard of me now.

I have already left her side and used my own dark matter to float.

“Let’s search for what’s...supposed to be its head. We saw it from afar after all.” (Michael)

That upper half that looks like a human huh.

“Even if we were to blindly attack a big body like this, we wouldn’t get much

results. More so when the size made us believe it was a mountain range and can cover the whole ground. If we were to shoot divine power without any thoughts, even us Demon Lords might run out of energy before we can deal a fatal wound." (Michael)

An accurate decision from the now official leader Michael.

"When talking about a weak point of living beings, it would be the head. Fine then. Let's find the tip of that guy." (Uriel)

"But shouldn't we attack with a plan in mind first? It is this long after all. Even if we were to randomly trace it, we might even take several years if we don't do it well enough." (Gabriel)

Gabriel does have a point. This fiend is long to an unbelievable extent, moreover, its slithery body is akin to a labyrinth. Tracing it and finding the head would be one hell of a job.

But...

"Welcome, useless trash."

The person we were looking for appeared before us.

We were only looking down, and a voice came to us from up.

"That voice...!" (Haine)

At some point in time, at a place even higher than us, a monsters with a crooked head was there.

It was like a cobra aiming for its prey.

So high up that it might reach the clouds.

"Lucifer!" (Michael)

"Looking down on us all high-and-mighty!!" (Urie)

The giant looking down at us, now that I have a better look, that upper human half had an heteromorphous look.

Reptilian eyes and mouth split all the way to the ears. The teeth that peek out from that mouth were all sharp like saws. The thin tongue flickers in and out of the mouth rapidly.

And most of all, a single woman stands at the top of Lucifer's head.

A charming woman.

There's no way of mistaking that figure.

"So you really came out! Sunnysol Ates!" (Haine)

The evil Light Goddess has appeared in front of me in her true mask for the first time.

- 381: Reunion with the Goddess

"I am impressed you all had the gall to appear in front of me without any shame." (Ates)

A voice filled with heartfelt disdain poured out from Ates' mouth.

"Even when you were holding up the standard of human eradication, you betrayed your own convictions and ended up flattering your enemy on the other side of the fence!" (Ates)

"Shut up, deceiver! Your trickery has long been exposed!" (Michael)

Michael refutes without faltering a single step.

"Light Goddess, Inflation!!" (Michael)

The finger was pointing straight at Ates without doubt.

"So you learned of my identity huh..... How did you notice?" (Ates)

"The Light Founder Yorishiro saw through you!!" (Michael)

"That woman..... Fufufu, she is unexpectedly loose mouthed." (Ates)

Even when the true essence of her soul has been seen through, Ates didn't get flustered and simply laughed as if nothing.

"You are a God, and yet, you plotted on destroying the humans! For that sake, you utilized us Demon Lords!!" (Michael)

"Even though you are a God, you planned on destroying the very humans you created; you must be quite crazy! All the Gods we have met until now were all weird, but the only truly evil one was you!!" (Uriel)

“Really, I feel bad for the humans that worship a wicked God like you! It is an insult to culture!!” (Gabriel)

The Demon Lords hurl out abuse towards Ates.

Since they understood that they had been deceived by Ates, their way of speaking naturally turned severe as well.

“Goddess... Before being born, we heard this from inside our mothers: ‘Destroy the humans and stand at the summit of the world’.” (Michael)

“What about it?” (Ates)

“We believed that that voice was from the ruler of all monsters, the Great Demon Lord Lucifer. But now, after seeing the true Lucifer with these eyes of mine, that thought was blown away.” (Michael)

The reptilian eyes of the giant Lucifer that one can’t feel any intelligence within.

“This beast...there is no way it would have the wisdom to guide us monsters. Those words were spoken by you, the Goddess, right?! And you set it up so that we would fight the humans!!” (Michael)

“Fufufufu!!” (Ates)

A scorning laugh.

“Even if that’s the case, you were the ones who decided on destroying the humans. Not being able to push through your own decisions, what feeble resolve. In the end, the title of supreme race was too heavy for a bunch of animals huh.” (Ates)

Ates didn’t refute the accusations of her being the one deceiving the Demon Lords under the name of Lucifer.

“Like hell I care!!” (Michael)

Michael says as he pushes his fist forward.

“Straying from your original intentions is certainly unsightly. But not fixing it up after realizing it was a mistake is even more unsightly! Within actual battle, we realized the greatness of humans, and we found a better path!” (Michael)

“Whatever the case, a thought that was induced into us before we were even born, in a stage where we didn’t have any ability to decide for ourselves. When we gained that ability to think for ourselves, for the first time, we noticed that it was a mistake.” (Uriel)

“Culture and love are indivisible; love and humans are indivisible; thus, in order for monsters to obtain culture, the humans have to continue existing. Also, I want to talk a lot more with Celestis.” (Gabriel)

Not only Michael; Uriel and Gabriel were showing their opposition towards Ates.

The Demon Lords that were feared as the strongest existence and the humans felt their survival threatened, moreover, those three are all facing her.

However, the scorning smile on Ates’ face didn’t go away.

“...Seriously, you mere parts, don’t go talking like you are some big deal.” (Ates)

Even when she was smiling, her face was overflowing with disgust.

“Well, fine. I will teach you pitiful puppets. It is exactly as you guys say.” (Ates)

“?!”

“I spoke to you guys when you were about to be born from the inside of the Mother Monsters, and I indeed induced you guys to massacre the humans. For I -the Light Goddess-it was of no difficulty.” (Ates)

“Then you...!!” (Michael)

So it has been confirmed that the wire puller of this Demon Lord conflict was Ates.

“I was thinking of making you people into the limbs of the Lucifer I created and have you guys help out in the eradication of humans, but... you all ended up being unbelievably useless. Looks like the thought of the four Base Elements about how monsters shouldn’t have a will was the correct one.” (Ates)

“Don’t talk anymore!!” (Michael)

Michael shouts with a voice filled with rage that could make even the earth

tremble.

“No matter our origins, we are now moving with our own wills. The same as humans and Gods; as members of this world, we will bring judgment to the ones that bring harm to the world!” (Michael)

“If I don’t protect peace, that scary earth hero might scold me after all. Let’s act the role of a good Demon Lord trying to protect the world.” (Uriel)

“I won’t let you destroy culture!!” (Gabriel)

Declarations of war were being made one after the other.

The Demon Lords were already a part of the comrades that protect this world.

“Haine-san, what about you?” (Ates)

But Ates ignores the high-moraled Demon Lords and speaks to me.

“I am happy to meet you again, Haine-san. You left that Yorishiro and that hero brat, and prioritized me, right?” (Ates)

Ates is an incarnation of the Light Goddess Inflation, just like Yorishiro.

The spirit of a Goddess that should have originally been one had been divided into two by the love and hate of humans.

If she is Inflation as well, she must know of my identity.

“Haine-san, what do you think? Do you think humans should perish?” (Ates)

“Are you really asking me this?” (Haine)

If I were someone who would say ‘yes’ here, I wouldn’t have caused the battle of Gods in the Genesis era.

But this is a story that only the ones involved know of.

“...Right, you are that kind of person.” (Ates)

Ates smiled in a lonely manner.

“Ates...! So you are really...!” (Haine)

“Then, at the very least, spectate until everything is over please. I will present you with an ideal world where there’s no worries and pain.” (Ates)

The same time she says this, there was a change in the giant snake.

From its back, shining wings sprouted out.

“Light wings?!” (Haine)

“Wings are the symbol of Demon Lords! For a giant monster to have them, how presumptuous!” (Michael)

Those wings were quite different from the wings of a normal bird, and stretched out like thin lines. And then, they draw a big curve up, and before long, the ends of the wings of each side connect at the top.

Both wings had drawn an arc and had connected at the top, drawing a big circle.

The big shining circle that Lucifer carried on his back was like...!

“A sun?!” (Haine)

From that sun, a dazzling light was released.

To the point of making me cover my face.

“This is light divine power! Not good!” (Haine)

My dark matter is...!

“Uwaaaa?!” (Haine)

In due time, the dark matter that I was using to maintain myself in the sky had been dispersed by the light divine power.

And with that gone, I had no way of going against the natural gravity and was dragged down to the earth.

“Please stay outside the mosquito net for a while, okay? Until the time when the preparations for the destruction of humanity are finished.” (Ates)

WR – Chapter 382-384: Battle of the Demon summit

Hiyurururu...

“Gue?!” (Haine)

Having lost the repulsion effect of the dark matter, I fall upside down.

The place I fell on is the giant snake in question. Its scales are unexpectedly soft, so my fall was safe.

“But it hurts a bit. Ouch ouch ouch...” (Haine)

Damn it.

The advantage light has over darkness really is absolute.

An enemy with light element has not appeared until now, but one has finally appeared at this time, the light element monster, Lucifer.

.....

If Michael and the others don't do something, it might actually be bad.

After I had fallen straight down, I was able to confirm that Michael and the others stayed in the air as if natural.

“Oi... Kuromiya Haine has fallen. What should we do?” (Uriel) “Doesn't matter. In the first place, he came here as a spectator. Just think about it as the spectator taking its rightful seat.” (Michael) “Then that means it is finally the sole stage for us Demon Lords, right?” (Gabriel) Michael's fire wings, Gabriel's transparent wings, Uriel's branch wings; each of them is filled with thick and ferocious divine power.

Even if they have become easier to get along with after mingling with humans, each one of them has enough power to wipe out all humans, so a

Demon Lord battle won't be a simple matter.

"Then..." (Haine)

The Great Demon Lord Lucifer is certainly different from the other Demon Lords -it is just a giant monster.

As proof, with just the gesture of its creator, Ates, it immediately acts on the order -as if stressing the fact that it has no will of its own.

"Now, go ahead. The strongest of the strongest monsters, the Demon Lord of Demon Lords; Great Demon Lord, Lucifer, show the half-baked ones who can't do their job how perfect you are." (Ates) "Makes my stomach churn!!"
(Michael)

The three Demon Lords charge as if saying the first to move wins.

...But that rush was repelled by dazzling light waves.

"Unuuu?!"

"Gueee!"

"Kyaaaa!!"

Michael, Uriel, and Gabriel had been hit by that light torrent and were pushed away.

"That's...!" (Haine)

That's something that was released from the shining sun on Lucifer's back - from the light wings.

"Grand Descent'! The light element is slightly stronger than the four base elements. It is not as absolute as the dark element, but light has absolute advantage against darkness.

In that sense, the most stable power is the light." (Ates) Ates says this while controlling Lucifer like her arm and legs.

"That's why the light element Lucifer is the lord of all monsters. Children of the four Base Elements that can only be the slaves of the two Poles, I will allow you the chance to repent and obey Lucifer." (Ates) "Kuh, foolish!!" (Michael)

Even when they were blown away by the 'Grand Descent', Michael and the

others didn't falter.

"Like we will obey anyone! We will be the ones to decide that! The ability to decide, that will itself is what monsters took a century to attain!!" (Michael) Michael once again heads straight towards Lucifer.

But this is way too straight of a confrontation.

"Hmph, truly stupid. —[Grand Descent]" (Ates)

As expected, the stream of light attacked Michael just like before!

I thought that he would be pushed away like before, but...

"Uooooo!!" (Michael)

He is resisting!!

Michael is releasing an even higher amount of fire divine power, and as if showing this physically, the fire wings had increased several times in size.

With that vigor, he is rivalling the 'Grand Descent' of Lucifer!

"...Soft." (Michael)

"Eh?"

"It is true that this light divine power is slightly advantageous against my fire divine power, but it is only a bit. In the end, just a bit. There's nothing that I Michael can't push away when serious!!" (Michael) Michael at full power had broken through the light stream!

"[Phoenix Hammer]!!" (Michael)

And then, with both arms clad in fire that were akin to a hammer, he smashes them onto Lucifer!

"Akaaaaa?!" (Lucifer)

Lucifer itself raised a voice of pain as it retreated.

"Is that all you have, Great Demon Lord?! Kuromiya Haine's darkness power is leaps and bounds scarier than that light of yours!!" (Michael) Michael pushes out his fist and acts as a lord.

From his sides, new elements attack at almost the same time.

“I will be using a new technique I learned!” (Gabriel)

Gabriel had appeared with a graceful spin.

“[Water Beheading – Dance of the Dragon]!!” (Gabriel)

From both arms of Gabriel, a high pressure blade flowed out.

And by spinning with those in her arms, it covers her whole body and a water current drill is created.

This blade that can cut anything it touches had hit Lucifer without any hesitation.

“Atogikikakakakaka!!” (Lucifer)

Lucifer raised a repulsive scream seemingly in pain.

On top of that, Uriel...!

“[Forbidden Dry Dhyana]!” (Uriel)

He stretches his arms like those of a tree’s roots, and pierces the body of Lucifer.

“Kaikaikaikaikai!!” (Lucifer)

Uriel was basically a tree taking human form, so those arms were spreading inside the body of Lucifer.

“‘Forbidden Dry Dhyana’ uses my root arms to crawl into the body of my opponent and cut them from the inside. On top of that, with the absorbing property of my roots, it can steal away moisture! Fall into pieces as you dry up!” (Uriel) The same time he says this, Uriel had spread the roots plenty enough and takes out his own hands.

The roots that had spread heavily inside of Lucifer’s body had surfaced even to the outside.

“Ha! This guy is not a big deal at all! You are totally weak, honestly speaking, a small fry!” (Uriel) “For us who were planning to fight against Kuromiya Haine, this opponent is just a disappointment. The pressure that I felt from that darkness power, I can’t even feel half of that from this guy!” (Gabriel) Yikes!

Why are you guys comparing it with me so much?!

“That’s all for the advantage the light power has.” (Michael) Michael, Gabriel, Uriel; the three lined up were glaring at the plenty hurt half-snake giant.

“Let’s hit them all at once, Uriel, Gabriel! Let’s give them the retribution for deceiving us!” (Michael) “Okay, Leader!!” (Uriel)

“It means that this is the victory brought by the cooperation of us three Demon Lords!!” (Gabriel) Fire, Water, and Earth divine power were rising to critical levels.

They are planning on hitting Lucifer with that and corner it to defeat!

“Goodbye, fake Demon Lord! Disappear from this world together with the wicked plan of your creator!!” (Michael) The three charge at exactly the same time.

Fire’s red, Water’s blue, Earth’s golden were flying like arrows.

If it were to get hit by that, the slight advantage of the light element won’t be of help.

Lucifer would no doubt perish.

It can’t avoid it and it won’t be able to guard against it with the light element.

We won.

The moment I was sure of that...

“Uwaaaaaa?!” (Uriel)

““Uriel?!””

One of the three arrows was easily blown away?

Uriel was knocked down by the counter of Lucifer, and the other two comrades of his made a U turn to save him.

What was shot at Uriel wasn’t light divine power.

Wind divine power?!

“Why?! Lucifer is a light monster, isn’t it?! And yet, it can use the wind element?!” (Gabriel) “It is impossible for a monster to use an element other than the one it has! Just what in the world...!” (Michael) Lucifer used wind

divine power.

No one could hide their agitation at this unbelievable situation.

Except for one, the master of Lucifer, Ates.

“Fufufufu, this is what it means.” (Ates)

Ates laughs as if she were a spider who is spinning the web on its prey.

Reacting to the signal of hers, Lucifer’s giant body trembles and something spreads out.

“Wa?!”

“That’s...!”

Wings spread out from Lucifer’s back again.

Even though he already has its light wings, at the back of the Great Demon Lord, there’s another pair of wings...

Those wings...

Were like colorful butterfly wings...

“Those are...the wings of Raphael?!” (Haine)

- 383: Stolen Wings

“Wa?! Impossible!”

“That’s...!”

“Raphael’s...Raphael’s...!!”

Another pair of wings grew out from the Great Demon Lord Lucifer.

On top of those sun wings it already had, it now also had colorful butterfly wings.

We have seen them before.

That’s because those are wings that one of the Demon Lords, the Wind Demon Lord Raphael had!

“But...”

Raphael should have died after the fight he had with Hyue.

Why does Lucifer have his wings?!

“Ufufu...” (Ates)

Ates as always has her spider expression of playing with her prey as she charmingly waved her hand.

As if in concert, Lucifer waves those butterfly wings.

“Nuguuuaaaaa!!” (Michael)

“Kyaaaa!!” (Gabriel)

“Gueeee!!” (Uriel)

A gale was created from its flap, and the Demon Lords in the sky were blown away.

“T-This really is a wind divine power attack! By using Raphael’s wings!” (Michael) “What in the world is going on?! Why does he have the wings of Raphael?! Why can he use the power of Raphael?!” (Gabriel) “Raphael! Raphael!!” (Uriel)

The Demon Lords were falling into big confusion with the sudden situation.

The loss of their comrade Raphael was a hard to accept reality for the Demon Lords.

By moving to Apollon City and mingling with the humans, they finally overcame their sadness, but...if they are hit with such a thing, it wouldn’t be strange for the wound in their heart to open.

“Fufufu... Lining up such amusing stupid faces. Fine. I will explain to you fools since I pity you.” (Ates) Ates says with a 100% scoffing.

“I said it before but, Lucifer is still not in a complete state. That there will be a moment when Lucifer will be completed.” (Ates) “You meant the time it was sleeping until when it awakened, right?! That guy is already up and acting!” (Gabriel) “No.” (Ates)

Ates easily pushes away the biting response of Gabriel.

“Lucifer is still incomplete. The Great Demon Lord Lucifer I created is the

ultimate existence that will surpass all monsters and also Gods as well. The current Lucifer is far from its perfect form.” (Ates) “W-What?!” (Michael)

“In reality, I wanted to awaken it when it was in its complete form though. But the tools for the sake of that were so crude that I had to move this child personally.” (Ates) ‘Seriously...’, is what Ates adds with scorn in her eyes.

“Useless tools.” (Ates)

“...Kh!” (Michael)

Could it be that...what she refers to as the complete form of Lucifer is...!

“Lucifer is the ultimate and perfect Great Demon Lord. That’s why it must be a perfect being that has all elements. Not only light, but fire, water, earth, wind, and...!” (Ates) “Could it be that’s the reason why Raphael...!!” (Michael)

“That’s right.” (Ates)

Ates looks down at the Demon Lords.

“It is not only Raphael. You Demon Lords are parts to perfect Lucifer, you know.” (Ates) “?!”

“Parts, you say?!” (Gabriel)

The words of unknown meaning that she was repeating until now had finally gained meaning.

“You Demon Lords are the condensation of the four Base Element’s divine power, by being purified for several hundreds of generations, you were expanded. Then, taking in this, Lucifer, who will then have the four ultimate four base elements, will truly become the perfect Great Demon Lord of all elements!!” (Ates) On top of the light, it would also have all four base elements; the ultimate monster?!

“When at its back there are six pairs of wings, the Great Demon Lord Lucifer will be completed. And there’s the need of 3 parts for the sake of this!” (Ates) Ates moves her gaze towards Michael, Gabriel, and Uriel respectively.

“Now, this is the time for you guys to fulfill your raison d’etre. Offer your body for the sake of the Great Demon Lord Lucifer’s completion.” (Ates) “Don’t joke around!!” (Michael)

Michael lets out a roar like never before.

“Our reason for existing is to become an offering to that beast?! This is the first time I have heard such a displeasing joke!! We are the ones to decide our reason for existing!!” (Michael) “You are getting too prideful, you mere parts.” (Ates)

Ates wasn’t affected at all by the pressure Michael was releasing.

“You being parts was decided before you were even born. Accept your fate obediently.” (Ates) The butterfly wings had become a part of the half-snake giant.

The symbol of the Wind Demon Lord’s power had become only his wings and turned into the power of Lucifer.

...Even when dead, his dignity had been trampled on.

“...Kh!!”

Something snapped somewhere.

“Uwaaaaaaaa! Raphaeeeeel!!” (Uriel)

“?!”

“Uriel?! What’s the matter?!” (Gabriel)

Suddenly, Uriel screamed in madness and rushed towards Lucifer.

“Return them! Return the wings of Raphael!! He died with pride! Don’t dirty that! Don’t dirty thaaaaat!!!” (Uriel) Blood had rushed to the head of Uriel for the desecration of his friend’s life.

But Uriel, with your earth divine power...!!

“Wait, Uriel!!” (Gabriel)

“No good, stop Uriel!!” (Michael)

The other Demon Lords chase after their comrade.

Everything was within the plans of that accursed spider.

“That’s right. Come here. This child here is hungry.” (Ates)

- 384: Insatiable

“Uwaaaaa! [Forbidden Dry Dhyana]!!” (Uriel)

Uriel once again stretches his roots and makes it crawl into the inside of Lucifer.

“With this, I can tear up your body from the inside! I will go all out this time around! I will spread around my roots inexhaustibly until that big body of yours crumbles!” (Uriel) “Too slow.” (Ates)

Lucifer once again flaps its new butterfly wings.

Not only did it blow away Uriel, it also dried up and crushed the roots that Uriel was trying to stretch.

“The four Base Elements have their respective weaknesses. Wind dries up earth and weathers it. In other words, Earth Demon Lord-san, you cannot defeat Lucifer anymore.” (Ates) “Shut up!!” (Uriel)

Element affinities.

This rule that controlled a lot the flow of the battles until now is once again standing in our way.

Fire wins against wind, wind against earth, earth against water, and water against fire; that’s the relationship between the four base elements.

That’s why for Uriel, wind is a big weakness.

“Uwaaaaa!!” (Uriel)

Even with that, Uriel didn’t stop his charge.

I thought he was a coward, and yet, to think he would fight against them in such a bold manner.

Was his attachment towards his comrade Raphael so strong to bring such a reaction?

But this will only make the current situation worse.

“Wait, Uriel! Calm down first! Regain composure!!” (Michael) “Geez! You are a coward, so don’t go getting all emotional for your friends!!” (Gabriel) Michael

and Gabriel were desperately trying to calm him down, but the effect was low.

“Ufufu... Well then, let’s smash you with a technique of that important friend of yours.” (Ates) Understanding what Ates wanted, Lucifer spreads out its colorful butterfly wings.

And then, that split apart mouth that resembled a snake had let out clear human words.

“[Four Calamity Whirls]” (Lucifer)

At the same time as it flapped its butterfly wings, four tornadoes attacked Uriel.

“Gugyaaaaaa!!” (Uriel)

““Uriel!!””

Michael and Gabriel were pushed slightly back at the dreadful gales this attack created. And yet, it was as if only Uriel was being sucked in by them.

Uriel couldn’t do anything against the maximum wind divine power that he has the worst affinity against.

Receiving the concentrated attack of the four tornadoes, he was being beaten up.

“Gugh!!” (Uriel)

That beaten up Uriel was caught by the giant hand of Lucifer.

“...Hmm, you didn’t die huh. Looks like the output was lower than expected.” (Ates) Seeing his state, Ates pits out those words.

“As expected, it must be because his death was brought by through the erasure of most of his divine power with the dark matter of Haine-san. The divine power amount that Lucifer managed to absorb was low.” (Ates)

“Guuugh...” (Uriel)

“Well, the wings of you guys serves the purpose of converting divine power, so as long as Lucifer has unlimited light divine power, it should work out some way or another though. But it would be better to have than not.” (Ates) What?

What is she thinking!

“In other words, if we do this, it can engulf your divine power whole.” (Ates)

“...What? Wa? Could it be...?!” (Uriel)

Uriel was inside Lucifer’s hand.

He was shocked and panicking.

Because the hand he was in was slowly being brought to the mouth of Lucifer.

“Stooooop!!” (Michael)

“Urieeeel!!” (Gabriel)

Michael and Gabriel seemed to have caught on in what they were intending to do.

They hurriedly released divine power attacks, but...

“Stop! Wait! Don’t tell me you are going to eat—! No, no! No—Gyaaaaaa!”
(Uriel) *Gulp*

It didn’t make it in time.

Uriel disappeared along with that sound.

Inside of Lucifer’s mouth.

“Uriel!!” (Michael)

“Uriel was eaten?! By that beast?!” (Gabriel)

Michael and Gabriel couldn’t stop it.

That action had no opening or pause, and that unnatural happening had frozen everyone in place.

“If you take them in alive in this way, all the excessive divine power you guys have can be turned into Lucifer’s power.” (Ates) Ates says with a triumphant face.

“I was originally thinking about only taking in your wings, but you could say this is a blessing in injury. Thanks to you guys being useless pieces of trash that won’t fight, I found a way to evolve Lucifer even better.” (Ates) “You...!!”
(Michael)

“You must have noticed already, right? The reason why I went to such lengths

to lower myself and have you guys fight the humans.” (Ates) To have the humans kill the Demon Lords...

At first, the Demon Lords sought the seat of the supreme race and fought the humans.

If that conflict had continued, it would have led to the fall of the Demon Lords or the humans. But it would have without doubt caused heavy damage to both sides.

“In the human side there’s Haine-san and Yorishiro. The four Base Elements would take some action as well. The humans would wipe you guys out even if they had to sacrifice a lot. And then, Lucifer would collect the remaining wings and become complete.” (Ates) She planned all that...

“And yet, you guys cowardly fell into flattering the humans, and stopped fighting. No sacrifices from the humans and Demon Lords is the worst development. You mere parts derailed my plan and I had to activate Lucifer before completion. That sin of yours, I will have you pay for it now.” (Ates)
“Don’t make me repeat myself!” (Michael)

Michael shouts as if grinding his teeth.

“We are not your puppets! We will find our own reason for existing!!”
(Michael) “That’s right! If it is engulfing them alive, it must mean that Uriel is still alive, right?! I will cut open that beast and bring him out of its stomach!”
(Gabriel) The remaining Demon Lords didn’t lose their fighting spirit.

But...

“Can you? Water Demon Lord, Gabriel.” (Ates) A new change appeared in Lucifer.

A single tree sprouted from its back like wings.

“Uriel’s wings have...!” (Gabriel)

“So even the engulfed Uriel’s power has been taken in?!” (Michael) Lucifer now had three pairs of wings.

“The earth wings that possess overwhelming advantage against the water element. Gabriel, this time, it is your turn to be engulfed.” (Ates)

WR – Chapter 385-387: Proof of existence

“Gabriel!!” (Michael)

“No good! Michael, at least you run away!!” (Gabriel)

The battle was already turning one-sided.

The earth wings that were gained after engulfing Uriel are completely dominating the water divine power of Gabriel.

And then, the destiny of Gabriel was the same as her comrade.

The body build of Gabriel that flowed fluidly resembling a fish had disappeared inside Lucifer.

After that, a new change happened.

Once again, wings appeared from the back of Lucifer, this time, transparent films like the fins of a fish. The very same as the wings of Gabriel.

Great Demon Lord Lucifer, the wings that were at its back were eight now.

“With this, water has become ours now. The remaining one is you, Fire Demon Lord, Michael.” (Ates)

“...Kh.” (Michael)

Michael is now the last remaining of the Four Demon Lords.

His fighting spirit is not gone yet, but he is not stupid enough to not understand the disadvantage he is in right now. The bitterness of being unable to break through this situation is clearly showing in his face.

“Now that we have obtained the water power to nullify your fire divine power, there’s not a single spec of possibility for you to win. Obediently offer that body to Lucifer.” (Ates)

“Guh...!” (Michael)

“Just think about it. Becoming a part of Lucifer means that you will become a part of a perfect existence. Don’t you think that’s the highest of honors? The will and heart are pointless stuff. Absolute power is what reigns supreme.”
(Ates)

She was completely pushing her own sense of values...

“Become a part of that supreme being, Michael.” (Ates)

“I refuse!!” (Michael)

Michael shouts with unyielding will.

“No matter what sophistries you try to spit out, I won’t do as you wish! I will definitely defeat that beast and save the captured Uriel and Gabriel!!” (Michael)

“What unsightly pointless struggle. Fine. I was planning on having you get eaten by force from the beginning anyways.” (Ates)

The giant body of Lucifer slithers its way towards Michael.

If Michael gets eaten, Lucifer will have all four Base Elements and will be completed!

“[Flame Burst]!!” (Michael)

Michael released a large scale fire against that Lucifer.

But this fire didn’t directly hit Lucifer, it spread around and exploded in the vicinity. Chain explosions were being created continuously creating a giant smokescreen.

These explosions had spread so far that, even if water was used, it wouldn’t deal completely with it, and even if Lucifer tried to use wind, the fire of the explosions would repel it.

It is slightly different, but that’s the ‘Flame Burst’ of Mirack. When did he learn it?

“Kuromiya Haine!” (Michael)

In the time the explosions were annoying the Great Demon Lord, Michael descended to where I am.

So the Flame Burst was for the sake of this.

“I have a request of you. I want you to help me.” (Michael)

“Wa?!” (Haine)

“It is pathetic after telling you not to interfere, but the situation has deteriorated to a point where we can’t do that.” (Michael)

Taking into account the identity of Ates, there’s no doubt that her final objective is to kill all of humanity.

After devouring all the Demon Lords, there’s no doubt the next aim of hers will be the humans.

“I really do want to help out, but my power can’t do anything against it...” (Haine)

No matter how many elements Lucifer has, its true element is light.

Darkness can erase all elements, but the moment it touches light, it disappears.

“If that wasn’t the case, I would have jumped to action the moment Uriel was about to be eaten. I could only watch...!” (Haine)

“But there’s an exception, right?” (Michael)

“What?!” (Haine)

“The only method to surpass light with that darkness power of yours.” (Michael)

“Are you telling me...!” (Haine)

Is he talking about the Black Hole?

By utilizing the second property of dark matter, gravity control, to its very limits, a bottomless dark matter that can swallow anything can be created.

Not even light can go against the ultimate gravity and, before it reaches the dark matter that serves as its core, it will be imprisoned in its gravity.

“It is true that the Black Hole might be able to do something about Lucifer, but...!!” (Haine)

“Then it is decided. I heard that there’s the need for time in order to prepare

the Black Hole. I will buy that required time!" (Michael)

"W-Wait!" (Haine)

I hurriedly stopped Michael who was about to fly away.

"Are you okay?! The Black Hole absorbs everything and crushes it into pieces. It cannot do something as skilled as differentiating the captured Gabriel and Uriel!" (Haine)

In other words, in order to use my Black Hole to defeat Lucifer, we would have to sacrifice Uriel and Gabriel!

"...There's no choice." (Michael)

Michael says with an expression filled of bitterness.

"I put up a tough front with those guys, but now that it has come to this, it would be best to think that it is impossible to save Gabriel and Uriel. We must not allow this beast to trample down on the world." (Michael)

"But...!" (Haine)

"I won't let them die alone." (Michael)

?!
...What are you planning on doing with that tone filled with resolve, Michael?

"Gabriel and Uriel acknowledged me as their leader. And yet, I am hopelessly going to sacrifice them; truly the definition of unworthy. I will at least fulfill my responsibility as leader." (Michael)

"Don't tell me you are really going to...!" (Haine)

"I will do my best to hold Lucifer back until the very end. When you are ready, hit me together with them without hesitation." (Michael)

No way!

"That's the last path I can take for those guys that called me their comrade." (Michael)

"Don't say such stupid things! No matter what happens, there's no way it is okay to sacrifice yourself!" (Haine)

Especially you guys who are the life that was finally brought by with the many generations of monsters.

To throw that away so easily is just...

“Even so, we have to protect this world.” (Michael)

“?!”

“We were given life, and the one who raised that life of us was this world itself. It is exactly because the world, the Gods, and the humans were here first that we monsters could be accepted as comrades.” (Michael)

Michael is not only seeing his own race as comrades, but also everyone that lives and dies in this world.

It hasn’t been that long since he obtained a will, and yet, he has already reached such heights!

“Even if we are to perish, this world must continue. If not, even our proof of existence will be gone! We existed in this world!!” (Michael)

Michael waves his fire wings and flies.

To protect this world as a member of this world.

“I am counting on you, Kuromiya Haine! I entrust our proof of existence to you!!” (Michael)

- 386: Light and Darkness

I wonder how much time passed after that.

Michael did his very best to hold back Lucifer as he declared himself.

Gabriel had already been engulfed, so Lucifer could control water freely.

For the Fire Demon Lord Michael, just trying to endure that water divine power was a struggle.

He pushed his all and managed to do it.

“Guh...ah...” (Michael)

Wringing out his very last drop of divine power, Michael lost to Lucifer.

But it was a meaningful defeat.

Michael bought time with that very body of his and allowed me to finish the Black Hole I was creating.

“I leave the rest to you...!” (Michael)

With his exhaustion rendering him unable to move a single finger, Michael was swallowed inside Lucifer.

Fire wings spread from the back of the half-snake giant, and finally, five pairs of wings were lined up.

With this, the Great Demon Lord Lucifer has obtained the power of the four Base Elements.

“Now then, the problematic stuff that had to be done before its awakening has all been cleared up now. With my surroundings being filled with incompetent people, I myself had to come out to work. Truly unbelievable.” (Ates)

The one standing at the top of Lucifer, a beauty that, even if bewitching, was nothing but wicked.

“But with this, I am finally able to come all the way to where you are. Without being constrained by anyone; exposing my everything to you.” (Ates)

Ates’ gaze was directed at me.

Her eyes were shining with discernible excitement.

“It has truly been a while, Dark God Entropy. I am the Light Goddess, Inflation.” (Ates)

“Wrong. The incarnation of the Light Goddess is Yorishiro.” (Haine)

“That is also me. The Light Goddess Inflation was divided in two after all. The humans stole away my most important person. The part that forgot about that hatred for humans and turned into a fence sitter became Yorishiro.” (Ates)

‘...And the part that continued holding that hatred towards humans...’, Ates mutters in a clear voice that properly delivered the heavy emotions she felt.

“Incarnated into I, Sunnysol Ates.” (Ates)

“Did you not think about which Inflation I would prefer? Did you forget the reason why I fought the other Gods 1,600 years ago?” (Haine)

“I do. For you, humans will always be number one. Putting me, a Goddess, aside. Compromising with the humans and flattering them like Yorishiro is, basically leaving the number one spot inside of you to humans and permitting myself to become number two or lower.” (Ates)

Emotions of anger...no, jealousy, were flowing out from her.

“Can I really allow that? I who was at your side as one of the six Gods of Creation? Humans must perish. As long as they continue sitting in the place where I should be.” (Ates)

The place of being loved the most by me, Entropy, huh.

She is crazy.

That's the only way I could define her.

‘If I am not loved in the way I want, destroy the reason for it’, that's just selfishness.

It would be one thing if you were to fight for the sake of your loved one, but to hurt others to fulfill your own desires; that is only selfishness.

“Do you think I will allow that?” (Haine)

“I will have you understand with time. The time you understand my yearning love will definitely come.” (Ates)

“Making others understand huh. Didn't even try to understand others yourself?” (Haine)

Even though the other Light Goddess Yorishiro managed to do it.

“The personification of the Light Goddess' evil, Ates, I will never allow you to eradicate humans. If you are trying to accomplish that, it will be impossible unless you defeat me first, you know?” (Haine)

“You are saying you are going to be fighting? Against me?” (Ates)

Her gaze felt as if she had heard something stupid.

“You are the king of Gods that rules over everything in this world. There's

nothing that you can't defeat. Aside from one exception that is!" (Ates)

"..."

"That is me. Because you disliked being an absolute existence, you created me, the darkness killer. As long as I, the Light Goddess, exist, you can't stop me. And this child as well!" (Ates)

The half-snake giant made a disgusting *jururu* sound as it approached me.

"This Lucifer that I put my all in creating is the ultimate monster that surpasses Mother Monsters and Demon Lords. On top of that, it is light element, so there's no way for you to win. Or maybe..." (Ates)

Ates laughs in a meaningful way.

"Are you going to be using that? That trump card that is inside your palm." (Ates)

"?!"

As expected, Ates had already noticed the Black Hole I was creating.

Right now it is still inside my palm and I am counterbalancing its effect with dark matter, but once it is released, I won't be able to stop it with my power and it will become a dark hole that continues swallowing everything.

The core is minuscule, so it can't be seen with the naked eye, but it is a mass of dark matter that surpasses the level of ultimate. If one can feel divine power, no matter how dull-headed one is, they would be able to notice.

"It is true that, with that power, you would be able to erase me and Lucifer. But, will that be all it does?" (Ates)

"...No, it won't." (Haine)

Ates immediately read through my thoughts.

That, in the end, I can't use a Black Hole to defeat them.

"This is not the same as when you eliminated a mere base element like Mantle. Lucifer and I possess the absolute advantage in terms of affinity. In order to erase us, you would have to release a Black Hole several times stronger than the time with Mantle." (Ates)

And what would happen if I do that. A Black Hole that is even stronger and has more range than the time with Mantle will be created, and will swallow, not only Ates and Lucifer, but everything else as well.

It will probably drag a fifth of this world along with it.

“The Black Hole is originally something that exists in order to erase the worlds that don’t fit the criterias of their creators. A reset switch only allowed by the Dark God. It is way too strong to use as an attack against a specific target.”
(Ates)

It won’t destroy the world, but with a fifth of it being destroyed, it would create several chain effects that would definitely eradicate humans. Moreover, a black hole stronger than the one used on Mantle will remain in this world, and that one will be impossible to eliminate with a number of days. It would take years, maybe even millenniums.

“I don’t really mind that though. What I must do is eradicate humanity. It would simply mean that you saved me the trouble. If you don’t care, then go ahead. Please release that Black Hole.” (Ates)

Ates was provoking me exactly because she has seen through everything.

Of course, there’s no way I could do it.

To pull the trigger that would destroy humanity myself...!

“Looks like you have grasped the whole situation. No matter how you struggle, it is my win. The only conclusions left are for humans to be eradicated by me or you..... But...” (Ates)

“?”

“That is by no means my final goal. I can’t forgive the foolish humans, but I am aiming further ahead after giving their proper punishment.” (Ates)

“What else...would you even wish for after?” (Haine)

I am already full with just this.

But Ates, as if not understanding bounds, shows even more wickedness.

“Haine-san, in reality, this Lucifer still hasn’t reached completion.” (Ates)

“Wa?” (Haine)

“Counting the original light element, Lucifer has gained the fire, water, earth, and wind elements after absorbing the Demon Lords. It now has five pairs of wings. But it is still not enough. Haine-san should understand, right?” (Ates)

What more is she trying to gain?

After obtaining all five elements, more would only mean...

?!
The stupid humans don’t understand the ultimate element that stands above earth, water, fire, wind, and light. Six pairs. After obtaining all of them will Lucifer reach perfection.” (Ates)

“Don’t tell me...!” (Haine)

“That’s right, Haine-san.” (Ates)

Ates confesses as if she were a maiden in love.

“By engulfing you, Lucifer will obtain the sixth pair of wings, the Darkness Wings!” (Ates)

- 387: The Snake’s Eden

Darkness Wings.

You are telling me you want to decorate the back of Lucifer with that sixth pair of wings?

“That’s your true intention?” (Haine)

“What do you mean by that?” (Ates)

Hating humans. Even though she prattled about loving me...

“...In the end, what you were looking for was strength huh.” (Haine)

Lucifer’s light and the four base elements of the absorbed Demon Lords, and on top of that, adding my darkness power as well.

If that happens, Lucifer will definitely be invincible.

Ates who controls Lucifer like her limbs would definitely become the almighty

existence of this world.

“Are you planning on governing this world and becoming its monarch after obtaining that power? Is that your true wish?” (Haine)

“I am so sad, Haine-san..... No, Dark God Entropy. To think you wouldn’t understand my true intentions at all!” (Ates)

Ates bites her lips as if she were truly saddened.

“I don’t need the world. Rather, I would like it gone. What I really want is only you. That’s why I will have Lucifer engulf you.” (Ates)

“Huh?!” (Haine)

“Once you enter Lucifer, you won’t have to care about the outside anymore. No need to hear, to need touch; there’s no need for you to see anyone but me.” (Ates)

.....

...Scary.

“The environment to realize this is inside Lucifer. When I invite you to this eden, I will borrow that power of yours to have Lucifer destroy this world. After that, I will also enter Lucifer and we will live for eternity there with just the two of us.” (Ates)

Scary!

“In other words, Lucifer is an eternal cradle for you and I. When Lucifer has both light and darkness, the four Base Element Gods won’t be able to do anything. And with the possession of all four Base Elements, the other Inflation, Yorishiro, won’t be able to do anything either.” (Ates)

“Just for that, you created a perfect existence that can control all elements?” (Haine)

“Is there a problem with that?” (Ates)

...She is crazy.

I can say with confidence that this woman is crazy.

I have seen a number of weird people until now, but now that I look back on

it, it was simply because our ways of thinking didn't match. I have never seen someone with the level of passion to charge at an unbelievably dangerous direction like her.

Trampling on other people's dignity, life, for one's own benefit, moreover, easily beautifying it with 'it is for the sake of love'.

It has already surpassed the plane of way of thinking and has entered the realm of abnormal; the ultimate level of selfishness.

Is this really the evil Inflation that was cut away from Yorishiro?

"I am truly glad that Yorishiro...wasn't someone like you." (Haine)

There's no doubt that the one I should call as Light Goddess Inflation is Yorishiro.

"It is fine for you to not understand me yet." (Ates)

My rejection didn't go through Ates at all.

"We Gods possess close to infinite time. Once you and I live together inside of Lucifer, you will definitely come to understand me one day!" (Ates)

How many thousands, how many millions of years would that be?

... I am getting goosebumps.

"No way. It won't end up with you and me. I won't let you destroy this world either. I will love the people that love the same things as me!" (Haine)

"Loving me is plenty enough! No one else has the qualifications to be loved by you!!" (Ates)

With the fury of Ates as signal, the half-snake giant began acting again.

"You can't go against Lucifer with your dark power anyways! Obediently get engulfed and cooperate with the eradication of humanity and the destruction of the world!" (Ates)

The hand of Lucifer stretches.

A hand that shone like the sun.

Even if I tried to oppose it by releasing dark matter, it was obvious that it

would be nullified by the light divine power that is being released continuously.

The opponent is gigantic.

Even if I were to try to run away now, I wouldn't be able to.

"You won't move huh. Fine. Please let yourself be captured obediently."

(Ates)

Ates probably thought that I had given up. She acted as if I were already in her hands.

Right at the moment Lucifer was about to touch me with that glowing hand...!

"Now!!" (Haine)

I sprung to action.

I released the finished Black Hole that Michael bought time for me to prepare.

The Black Hole that had left my control had immediately acted as its nature dictates. It compressed itself as it absorbed everything.

"You fell for it! There's no way you would have thought I would release my Black Hole this close!!" (Haine)

Because even I myself might be caught in it!

"Ara, if you are using the Black Hole, it must mean that you have resolved to destroy this world yourself, right? That's fine for me." (Ates)

"I wonder." (Haine)

If you are the other part of the Light Goddess, you should notice soon.

"This Black Hole...?!" (Ates)

That's right. This Black Hole doesn't have the power to erase Lucifer.

It is even weaker than the one I used against Mantle.

Thus, a small scale Black Hole like that won't bring fatal damage to the world.

"That's why I had to release it close, to the point I might be caught up in it as well. Because if not, it would have been erased before it was released after all."

(Haine)

“Are you stupid?” (Ates)

Ates’ merciless contempt.

“No matter the timing, that small Black Hole can’t defeat Lucifer. It won’t be able to absorb Lucifer completely and will be stopped in the Schwarzschild radius, after that, it can be released after by slowly sending light divine power to the core.” (Ates)

“That’s fine.” (Haine)

Even if it is the Light Demon Lord, eliminating the core of the Black Hole with light divine power to get released from the Schwarzschild radius will take time.

Just like when we struggled to free Mantle from the Black Hole in the Nameless Desert.

“How much time did it take to break the Black Hole that sealed Mantle? Three days? Five days? That’s how much time you guys will probably take as well.” (Haine)

“You are saying this is to buy time? What can you do with that? This only means that humanity has extended its life by just a little bit!” (Ates)

Ates was also caught in the gravity of the Black Hole and was about to fall in the infinite darkness -together with her puppet Lucifer.

But she didn’t show a single bit of agitation. Even if it takes a bit of time, she is sure that she will be able to return after all.

“That’s fine. It is fine for it to only be a bit. With that bought time, they will definitely manage something.” (Haine)

Because I believe in the humans.

In the end, all I would be able to do is erase Lucifer along with the whole world.

Michael and the others who were engulfed by Lucifer.

These true living beings that were born in this world and had decided to live together with us in this world; I, the Dark God, can’t even save them.

“But if it is the humans...!” (Haine)

Karen-san, Mirack, Celestis, Sasae-chan, Hyue; if it is them, they should be able to protect what they love by themselves.

“I will believe in the humans! The power of humans that Gods don’t have and can’t even describe; those heroes possess that!” (Haine)

For a moment, I felt as if Ates’ expression had warped in fury.

But it soon disappeared from sight. Not only her expression, but everything of her.

“The time that you bought Michael, isn’t going to go in vain.” (Haine)

I raise my head and mutter to no one in particular.

The price of releasing the Black Hole at close range with the resolve of being caught in it as well was beginning to attack me.

I am also destined to be caught in it.

No need to worry. Just have to hold out until Ates destroys the Black Hole.

At that time, the human heroes will definitely have a sure-fire plan in wait.

“Wicked Inflation, I will fulfill that wish of yours for a little while. Let’s continue falling inside the Schwarzschild radius together!!” (Haine)

There was no answer from her.

Sight, hearing, and all other senses were dyed pitch black by the darkness after all.

WR – Chapter 388-389: Confirmation of a despairing situation

“No way! Haine-san has?!”

I -Kourin Karen-was doubting the report that was told to me.

Haine-san was swallowed by the Black Hole he himself created?

“Is that true? Is it true that Haine-san has disappeared, Yorishiro-sama?!”
(Karen)

“Sadly, it is the truth.” (Yorishiro)

The one who revealed this to me was our Founder, Yorishiro-sama.

In the time we were in an hectic state with helping Rudras Metropolis after the damage they received, and with the preparations of the Light capital’s defense, she was apparently using light divine power to confirm the battlefield.

“The Light Demon Lord Lucifer that Ates-san—no, the Goddess Inflation created was a worse monster than we ever imagined.” (Yorishiro)

From what Yorishiro said, Lucifer absorbed the Demon Lords and is now able to use all four base elements.

“With the power of the Wind Demon Lord that died, Lucifer utilized the advantage of affinities to defeat one Demon Lord after another, and stole away their powers. Right now Lucifer not only has light, but can also freely control all base elements.” (Yorishiro)

“A single monster...controlling all elements?!”

“Isn’t that invincible? The guy itself doesn’t have a weak point, and yet, it can hit its opponent’s weaknesses as much as it wants, right?”

The ones who groaned in such way were Mirack-chan and Celestis-chan.

Not only them.

There's also Sasae-chan and Hyue-chan here.

They heard about the emergency Apollon City was in and had all come to help.

"In this time when we finally managed to have Uriel-dono promise to become the new deity-dasu!" (Sasae)

"Did things end up like this because I defeated Raphael?!" (Hyue)

Right now, Sasae-chan has already separated from Mother Earth and has returned to her little girl form.

Hyue-chan has also recovered from the wounds she suffered in the battle with Raphael, but her regrets are heavy.

We five heroes have reunited after a good while, and yet, the atmosphere was heavier than ever before.

"...But no matter how strong the enemy was, that Haine was able to defeat them without any problem!" (Mirack)

"That's right! Isn't Haine-chi the kind of guy that had crazy power making you go 'seriously?' or 'no way'?! Even the Demon Lords were scared of his dark power and made them run away and hide. If it were Haine-chi, he would be able to go against all elements!" (Celestis)

Mirack-chan and Celestis-chan's protests were simply futile.

"It may be Haine-san, but it is not as if he is completely invincible. The darkness power that's supposed to erase everything has one opponent it doesn't work on." (Yorishiro)

""""?!"""""

"That's the light element. Darkness cannot defeat light." (Yorishiro)

This was a reality that all heroes aside from me didn't know.

Only earth, water, fire, and wind element monsters existed until now, and there was no light element monster.

On top of that, the first ones that Haine-san affiliated to after coming to

society were us, the Light Church.

That's why there were no moments where Haine-san had to fight light, so the weakness of the darkness didn't get exposed until now.

That's why it looked like it was invincible.

"But now, the ultimate light has appeared in the form of Lucifer. For Haine-san, the Light Demon Lord is truly his natural enemy. There's truly limited methods he can take against that." (Yorishiro)

"...Do you mean the Black Hole?" (Karen)

The ultimate darkness attack that erased Grandma Wood in Ishtar Blaze.

"By utilizing the second property of the dark matter to its very limit, the gravity that occurs from it can even bend light. That heavy gravity cannot be broken through by light and would be erased by the compressed dark matter that serves as the core of the Black Hole." (Yorishiro)

"Then isn't Haine-chi like seriously invincible?!" (Celestis)

The retort of Celestis-chan was also ineffective right now.

"But in order to erase Lucifer, there would be the need for a Black Hole that's several times more powerful than the time with Grandma Wood. If he were to release something like that, this world itself wouldn't get away safely."

(Yorishiro)

"Eh?!"

"Wouldn't get away safely?!"

"At the very least, it would be enough to destroy humanity." (Yorishiro)

Humanity will perish with the aftereffects?!

"The Black Hole is originally a technique to destroy the world. In order to avoid that, Haine-san released a Black Hole at its minimum force." (Yorishiro)

And that is the current situation.

We are currently in the meeting room of the Light Church's headquarters. At that table, several photos were thrown on top of it.

It is from the scouting unit of the Aurora Knights that had taken photos of the battle between Haine-san's group and Lucifer.

There was a black sphere floating and it was a sight as if out of this world.

"We ourselves have seen the Black Hole in Ishtar Blaze as well, but...!" (Karen)

"This is strange...!" (Celestis)

It wasn't just a simple Black Hole.

From the sphere that's supposed to swallow everything, the tail of a snake was jutting out.

"It is the tail of Lucifer." (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama began to explain.

"Lucifer is basically a giant snake monster. A small Black Hole on a level that can't injure the world wouldn't be able to swallow the whole body and its tail has ended up poking out." (Yorishiro)

It resembled the situation of when a wild snake has swallowed a mouse from the head and wasn't able to swallow it whole and its tail is peeping out.

"It is a Black Hole only on this level after all. It would be no surprise if Lucifer were to slip out in due time. Even without that, we are talking about the Demon Lord that holds the light that has the absolute advantage against darkness. With enough time, it could even destroy the Black Hole itself." (Yorishiro)

"Time... How long would it be?!" (Karen)

"It wouldn't take a month. At worst, a few days." (Yorishiro)

Only a few days?!

The method that Haine-san gave his very body to utilize will return to nothing in just a few days?!

"Karen-san, don't misunderstand." (Yorishiro)

As if seeing through my heart, Yorishiro-sama reprimands me.

"Haine-san accepted to be swallowed by the Black Hole himself in order to obtain those few days. Believing that you guys would definitely overcome this

crisis." (Yorishiro)

- 389: By the hands of humans

"We...?" "Overcome...?" "This crisis...?" "-Dasu?"

The other heroes aside from me were also confused at the words of Yorishiro.

Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, Sasae-chan, Hyue-chan, and I -Karen.

We obtained the title of hero, and we are people that have obtained the qualifications and awareness that we should protect others, but just in this one, my heart is simply not standing up.

"Even if you say that...is that an opponent we can do something about?"
(Celestis)

The first one to voice out her doubts was the most intellectual one in the group, Celestis-chan.

"An opponent that not even that Haine-chi could go against... No, not only Haine-chi, even the Demon Lords were unable to do anything against Lucifer and lost, right?" (Celestis)

In the past when we met the Demon Lords, we were wondering how to defeat such a big opponent like them and despair had filled us.

After that, with the miracle called God Hero, we somehow managed to overcome the battle against the Demon Lords, but...a threat that easily surpasses those Demon Lords arrived, Lucifer.

"Absorbing the Demon Lords means that, at the very least, it has the power of four Demon Lords at once, on top of that, it also has the Light element that stands atop of those. That's the Great Demon Lord Lucifer, right?" (Mirack)

The voice of Mirack-chan was also weaker than usual.

"Even if we were to turn into God Heroes and face them, it would deftly hit our weaknesses and make us crumble in an instant. An enemy that holds all elements is just...!" (Hyue)

"Something we haven't fought before-dasu!" (Sasae)

Everyone was dejected.

The reason is obvious.

Haine-san fought and couldn't defeat it.

That reality was shocking us more than expected.

Haine-san is incredibly strong.

Using a special power that is darkness, he has managed to defeat all enemies easily.

Even though he has that much strength, he didn't step in more than necessary in consideration of us heroes, but we all felt peace of mind somewhere in our heart knowing that he had our backs.

—No matter how dangerous it gets, Haine-san will do something about it in the end.

I thought something like that unconsciously.

And yet, that Haine-san used his all just to seal an opponent together with him for a few days.

That is the Great Demon Lord Lucifer.

The reality that we have to fight an opponent like that was agitating us.

“Why are you all acting like spoiled children?”

“?!”

The sudden strict words made me reflexively quiver.

“Y-Yorishiro-sama?!” (Karen)

To think she would reprimand us in such a direct way...

“Karen-san, what are you?” (Yorishiro)

“Eh?!” (Karen)

“Answer.” (Yorishiro)

Even if you ask me to answer...

What am I? Even if you suddenly ask me...

...Ah.

“U-Uhm...!!” (Karen)

“...”

“.....The I-light hero.” (Karen)

That's right.

Chosen by the Light Church, shouldering the power of the Light Goddess Inflation, and protecting the people; that light hero!!

“What about you, Mirack-san?” (Yorishiro)

It wasn't only me.

Yorishiro-sama made the same question to every one of us here.

“No need to ask. I am the fire hero chosen by the Fire Church!” (Mirack)

“Celestis-san?” (Yorishiro)

“Of course, the water hero. Isn't that obvious!” (Celestis)

“Sasae-chan?” (Yorishiro)

“Incompetent Sasae! The earth hero-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“Hyue-san.” (Yorishiro)

“After fighting with Raphael, I can finally say it with pride. I, Hyue, am the wind hero-de gozaru!!” (Hyue)

We all are the heroes chosen by their respective churches.

Our responsibility is not only to protect the people, but to also stand proud and be an image to others. In order to provide them strength, and at the same time, strengthen humanity itself as a whole.

“Why are you of all people afraid of the enemy? Fighting the enemy that threatens the people and defeating them is the duty of heroes, isn't that right?” (Yorishiro)

“Y-Yes!” (Karen)

“The reason why Haine-san was sealed together with Lucifer was because he

believed that you all could do something as long as there's time. Until now, many threats have attacked you all!" (Yorishiro)

The Fire Cow Phalaris in the Radona mountain range; the Hydra Serpent in Hydra Ville; Grandma Wood's rebellion in the earth capital; the sequential battles against Beelzebub and the Wind Demon Lord Raphael; the heroes match; and then the clash against the Demon Lords...

Just remembering them all makes me feel as if I am losing weight at how many things have happened.

"But you have overcome all of them. Was the reason why you overcame them all solely thanks to Haine-san?" (Yorishiro)

"No, that's not..." (Karen)

"You are all strong. And you also have a strong sense of duty that turns into your own strength when facing danger. That strength of heart, Haine-san believes in it. This is the time for you all to answer that trust once again!!" (Yorishiro)

?!
Right, Haine-san has always trusted us.

He believed that we would all definitely overcome those difficulties.

"Answering that trust is what a hero does, right?" (Yorishiro)

It is not only Haine-san, all the people in this world, no matter the threat, they believe that the heroes will be able to defeat it.

That's what a hero is.

"Looks like we weren't acting like ourselves." (Mirack)

"Now that I think about it, this is the chance to make Haine-chi owe us. Let's save him as a change!" (Celestis)

"Haine-dono be the saviour of Ishtar Blaze-dasu! Imma also save Uriel-dono and have a festival-dasu!!" (Sasae)

"Looks like this is the time to show the true form of the wind hero, Hyue!" (Hyue)

Everyone regained their energy.

Everyone here is used to crisis, so a good push on the back was plenty enough to make us stand up.

“Understood, Yorishiro-sama! You are telling us to use the best of the time Haine-san bought for us to face Lucifer, right?!” (Karen)

“We will also properly save the Demon Lords! I still have a lot of lectures piled up to teach Gabriel about culture after all!” (Celestis)

The mood was completely turned around.

“...What we have to think about is in what to use that time. Training? Should we research for combinations we can use when we turn into God Heroes?” (Mirack)

“We will also have to investigate the enemy plenty-de gozaru. With the scientific power of our Wind Church, we will research Lucifer thoroughly. We might find a new weakness.” (Hyue)

“Cut-dasu! We gonna cut it completely-dasu yo!!” (Sasae)

Vigorous opinions fly around.

But the one who stopped that flow was Yorishiro-sama.

“...No, I want you all to use this time to go somewhere.” (Yorishiro)

“?”

She wants us to go somewhere?

“If you go there, you will definitely find a plan against Lucifer. I will have you five heroes head there immediately.” (Yorishiro)

“A-And that place is...?” (Mirack)

“Is that really okay?” (Karen)

Is what I ask nervously, but Yorishiro-sama said the name of the place I didn’t even expect would come out.

“The Underworld Country.” (Yorishiro)

WR – Chapter 390-391: Five Colored Gloss Fountain

Dark Underworld Country.

I do know that name, but I don't know at all for what reason that name came out at this moment.

That place is the nation that worshipped the Dark God Entropy.

A nation that has already fallen.

They appeared in the daybreak of human history, developed greatly, grew in scale, and became the firsts to form culture.

At present, not even that nation's existence is retained in the memories of the people, and rediscovering this location would affect humanity heavily.

But in this situation where we don't know what will happen to the world due to Lucifer...honestly, I feel like it would be best to push aside academic problems temporarily though.

"Head to the Underworld Country." (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama said this unsparingly.

"Deep in that city, the key to defeat Lucifer should be sleeping there. You five should search for it and find it." (Yorishiro) "Uhm...Yorishiro-sama...why do you—" (Karen)

'Know something like that', is what I was going to continue with, but...

"I received contact from Shiva-san saying that the Wind Church will do their all to analyze Lucifer. The other Churches are also preparing for battle, and the previous heroes are also going to be standing in battle. Our Light Church's defense will be hardened by Doraha." (Yorishiro) There was no space for me to

say anything.

“You heroes will head to the Underworld Country and find what is absolutely necessary to fight against Lucifer. The fate of the world is resting in you people’s hands!” (Yorishiro) And so, we were practically pushed into a journey.

A journey to once again step into the Underworld Country.

But this journey had a big difference from before.

The liveliness of the company. Before, when we were in the journey of searching for the Underworld Country, Yorishiro-sama, Haine-san, and I -Karen-were travelling together.

Because Haine-san, a male, was in the group, Yorishiro-sama and I were pretty meek.

Compared to that...

There’s Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, Sasae-chan, Hyue-chan, and I; a total of five.

People say that three girls is noisy, so it wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that a group of five girls would be boisterous.

The journey was lively to the point that no one would think this is a journey with the fate of the world at stake.

“Wait!! Wait wait, I didn’t hear anything about this! This Underworld Country is in this Nameless Desert?! It is crazy hot here!” (Celestis) “This be the Land of Death-dasu yo?! If ye step in it, ya ain’t gonna come out alive-dasu! I forgot to write a will-dasu yo!” (Sasae) “Aaaahh... Aaaaaahhh...” (Mirack)

“Mirack-dono is on the verge of death-de gozaru?! This person is supposed to be the fire hero, and yet, she is weak to heat-de gozaru yo?!” (Hyue) “Leaving aside the heat...! What are your opinions?!” (Karen)

Ah...so noisy.

At this rate, I can’t concentrate in finding the Underworld Country, so I decided on taking a small pause.

This place is the most prominent danger zone in this world, the Nameless Desert.

This sight of solely sand that stretches all the way to the horizon and has no landmark would confuse the people that enter it, and with the heat and dryness, it will dehydrate people to death.

In the past, several hundreds of people have lost their way in this desert and haven't returned.

That's why people feared this place as a cursed land, and there's no one who would come in here because they want to.

That's why it wouldn't be a surprise if there's a giant forgotten ruin in this desert...

But before going there! Let's take a break!

"Aaah! I am back to life!" (Mirack)

We came to the oasis that we used before as a place to take a break.

The moment we arrived, Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, Sasae-chan, and Hyue-chan took off their clothes and practically dove into the lake.

"!!!"

As they ran there, everything including their underwear was being scattered.

"E-Everyone's lacking way too much shame! Even if this place is a remote region, even if the chances of someone passing by is extremely close to zero...!!" (Karen) We are in a group here, so even if you are going to take off all of your clothes, show a bit of shame at least!

"Eeh? What are you trying to act all elegant for, Karen-chi?" (Celestis) Is what Celestis-chan says as she surfaces slightly from the water while making bubbles.

"In the first place, we all have shown our everything several times already. There's no need to get embarrassed after so long, right?" (Celestis) Well, there was indeed the hot spring of Ishtar Blaze, and the high-class spa of Rudras Metropolis; now that I think back, there were many moments where we have

shown our naked bodies.

“Isn’t this what they call skinship, Karen?” (Mirack)

Mirack-chan had half her face sunk in the water, and was replenishing moisture.

...Like a hippopotamus.

“By showing ourselves to each other and with nothing to hide, our connection will strengthen. It wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that every time we show our naked bodies to each other, the link that ties us grows stronger.” (Mirack)

“Even if that’s truly the case, I feel wicked emotions from the gaze of Mirack-chi though?!” (Celestis) “I feel as if I am being looked at thoroughly by an old man-de gozaru?!” (Hyue) Celestis-chan and Hyue-chan were getting flustered by the gaze of Mirack-chan that was not fitting that of someone from the same gender.

Mirack-chan! As I thought, the people of the Fire Church prefer people from the same gender rather than the opposite?!

“At any rate...when I look at the naked body of Sasae, it really makes me think.” (Mirack) “Hm? What-dasu?” (Sasae)

Without noticing the wavering that was being created in our hearts, Mirack-chan was beginning to extend her hands to even the youngest one here, Sasae-chan.

“Right now, Sasae doesn’t have a mountain or a valley yet with that little body of hers, but when I remember the plumpness of when she became a God Hero... the difference is just...!!” (Mirack) Ah, now that she mentions it...!

The super power-up we get when we receive a part of a God, the God Hero mode; thanks to that, we were able to fight against the Demon Lord-sans, but within them, the time when Mother Earth-sama combined with Sasae-chan, the change of hers was a special one even among us.

“...The little girl Sasae-chi had become a voluptuous dynamite body woman after all. It was my first time seeing boobs that are like watermelons.” (Celestis) “Eh? What happened-de gozaru ka?” (Hyue)

Only Hyue-chan who wasn't there was unable to follow the conversation.

"I thought it might have been because of the high synchro rate between you and Mother Earth, or maybe that you wouldn't be able to return to your former state, but it looks like you properly returned to normal!" (Mirack) "Yes-dasu! The power of Mother Earth-sama ain't something I can monopolize after all-dasu no de!" (Sasae) Is what Sasae-chan while puffing out her smooth plank chest.

"Of course, I can turn into God Hero mode whenever it be necessary-dasu! As Mother Earth-sama says, the earth hero's main trait be physical combat, so it apparently be best for the body to be in their grown state-dasu!!" (Sasae) "And thus that crazy voluptuous body?!" (Karen)

Just remembering makes even a member of the same gender as me have a nosebleed.

"Meaning that there's a high chance that when Sasae-chan grows, she will turn out that way?" (Mirack) "I don't know-dasu ga! But it probably be the case-dasu!!" (Sasae)

Don't affirm something with a 'I don't know' and 'probably'...

"....."

Mirack-chan made a bitter expression for a moment, and then, hugged the body of Sasae-chan silently.

"Eh? Eh? What-dasu? Why are ye suddenly hugging me-dasu?!" (Sasae)

"Well, if you are going to be growing into a Sasae-chan filled with meat, I was thinking I might as well enjoy this small Sasae while I have the chance." (Mirack) Mirack-chan is already at a level where we can call the police on her!

"Ah, then I as well~!" (Celestis)

"Celestis-chan?!" (Karen)

"T-Then me as well. I will treat myself to the cute Sasae-dono while I can!" (Hyue) "Even Hyue-chan?!" (Karen)

The three naked girls were squashing Sasae-chan all at once?!

“Uwa?! What be this-dasu ka?! What be going on-dasu ka?! Mah pretty aura has mesmerized everyone-dasu ka?! But I want ya to have a bit of composure-dasu!” (Sasae) Sasae-chan was being petted while the water was being splashed around.

After a few years, even without the God Hero mode, Sasae-chan will have that voluptuous body. It would instead turn into us being the ones being seen as cute...

.....

“Wait wait! I will also pet Sasae-chan!” (Karen)

I also take off everything along with my underwear and jump into the lake. We are all going to enjoy Sasae-chan that will be going away soon in the future.

This journey that has the world's fate at stake...within this journey, the tie between us heroes has strengthened once again...maybe?

- 391: Exposing ourselves

And in this way, after enjoying a bath in the oasis, we five were drying ourselves at the vicinity of the lake.

“Hngh~, that felt great~!” (Mirack)

“It is nice that the water temperature was good, but on top of that, it felt great to be able to bath naked outside without the need to worry. It might end up being a habit.” (Celestis) Celestis-chan, please don't awaken to weird fetishes.

We five had taken off everything including our underwear, but it was a pain to wear our clothes even after getting out of the water, so in the end, we were lying down while still being naked.

This is something we can do because we are deep in the Nameless Desert. There's no way we would lower our guards this much if there were a chance for people to pass by.

“This be heaven-dasu~. Can't get enough of this feeling of the sun burning my skin slowly-dasu yo~.” (Sasae) “If you like tanning in the sun so much, how

about coming in the outing season to the Radona mountain range that our Fire Church manages? We can't go full blown naked like here, but going in a swimsuit and tanning your skin in the cool air of the mountain range feels nice, you know?" (Mirack) Is what Mirack-chan says like a tour guide.

Right. I would like to enjoy an outing with everyone.

"Well, it would all be the end if Lucifer destroys the world though-de gozaru." (Hyue) "“““.....”””

"Eh? What-de gozaru ka?" (Hyue)

Hyue-chan...even though you are the wind hero...

"You are the wind hero, and yet, you can't read the mood." (Karen)

"Why-de gozaru ka?!" (Hyue)

Maybe because we were not wearing any clothes at all, we are showing less restraint than normal.

Right now, there was nothing shutting out our bodies and hearts.

"Then, since we all have nothing to hide, I will be speaking my heart out!" (Celestis) Celestis-chan rose up from her lying down position, and her breasts that were not big but definitely not small shook.

"Is this really the time for us to be doing this?" (Celestis)

"Uh?!" (Karen)

This is probably something that all five of us were thinking.

"The Great Demon Lord Lucifer is an enemy on a level we haven't faced before, and the Demon Lords that we finally had gotten along with were all defeated. On top of that, Haine-chi was also defeated and he used his all to buy time. And in the important time that Haine-chi has created, we are..." (Celestis)
"Is it okay for us to be pointlessly wasting it here?", is what you are trying to say?" (Mirack) Mirack-chan takes over her words.

Meaning that she also has the same opinion as Celestis-chan.

"No way! To call it pointless...!" (Karen)

"I also feel the same-de gozaru." (Hyue)

Hyue-chan bends that slender body of hers that flowed beautifully.

“It is a given that we want to find a way to defeat Lucifer, but I feel like it is a bit too far-fetched to think that we will find that way in the ruins of an ancient civilization. And how did the Light Founder-dono reach to that revelation-de gozaru?” (Hyue) “Since the moment I met her, she has been shrouded in mystery, that Light Founder. But this time around, it is so unfounded that I can’t just accept it.” (Celestis) “That ‘go to the Underworld Country’ gave the impression that she didn’t even have the leeway to feign a natural act. We were pushed by the pressure of that Light Founder and came all the way here, but with this break, I ended up regaining my composure.” (Mirack) “I don’t understand well-dasu ga, but is that so-dasu!!” (Sasae)

Everyone’s doubts, questions, are erupting suddenly after coming here?!

Maybe these are the effects of having time to arrange our thoughts and everyone being naked, diminishing our restraints.

...It is true that Yorishiro-sama is a person that one can’t read what’s hidden deep inside of her. If I were to put it bluntly, she was suspicious.

I can’t tell what she is thinking deep inside her heart.

That’s why there’s the need for the ones who believe her to have courage in believing.

“I believe in Yorishiro-sama.” (Karen)

I decisively stood up.

I won’t falter right now. I will stand upright even if I am not wearing any underwear!

“It can’t be helped that everyone is uneasy. But within this group, I am the one that knows Yorishiro-sama the most. And I was able to believe that the decision of Yorishiro-sama this time was the correct one.” (Karen) That’s why...

“Can everyone please believe in that decision of mine? All five of us have overcome many things by cooperating with each other. I think that the trust between us five won’t lose to anyone. That’s why, please believe in the me that believes in Yorishiro!” (Karen)



~~~~~ .....

Hearing this, Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, Sasae-chan, and Hyue-chan stood up one after the other.

All five of us were facing each other naked and created a circle.

“If Karen-san goes so far as saying this much, it can’t be helped. I already swore to never go against you ever again after all.” (Mirack) “Riding in the waves of the trends is one of the traits an idol has to have in order to survive long. I have won big with the eccentric actions of Karen-chi and the others, so I will be riding on this winning horse as well.” (Celestis) “Believing in simple honesty through the very end be the height of us Earth devotees! I will trust in Karen-nee-chan till death-dasu!!” (Sasae) “I would be delighted to join you as a comrade...!” (Hyue)

By exposing our bodies, and exposing even the depths of our hearts, we were able to unite once again.

It is a journey we are in a hurry with, but there was definitely big meaning in this break.

“Okay! Then, let’s keep the break up to here and head to the Underworld Country!!” (Karen) “Eh?”

“Wait Karen, aren’t you hurrying too much? Shouldn’t we rest for a bit more?” (Mirack) No no! Lucifer won’t wait for us, so we have to arrive at the Underworld Country before it comes back, and find a way to defeat it!

Being urged forward by me, everyone hurriedly puts on their clothes.

Now that I think about it, it might have been bad to hurriedly put on our

clothes like this.

We only noticed this fatal mistake after we finished putting our clothes on.

\*\*\*\*\*

~~~~~ .. ~~~~

The five heroes finished dressing.

There was a strange sense of incongruity in everyone.

Because we hurriedly put our clothes on...

“Wa...we...?!” (Mirack)

“We mistook our panties!” (Celestis)

That's right! The incongruity came heavily from our nether region!

Because we were so hurried, we put on the panties of a different person.

“The ones I put on are...from Celestis?! Why didn't I notice I put on such a crazy flashy one like this?!” (Mirack) “Mine is Hyue-chi's! Or more like, why are your panties mesh cloths as well?! Is ventilation in your crotch important too?!” (Celestis) “Hiih?! The panties of Mirack-nee-chan be baggy-dasu yo!” (Sasae)

“Mine's from Karen-dono-de gozaru ka... There's a good amount of space left. Is the butt of Karen-dono unexpectedly big-de gozaru?” (Hyue) There's the fact that we hurriedly dressed, but this tragedy happened because we also threw around our clothes randomly, you know!

If we all had taken off our clothes properly and folded them...!

At any rate, I didn't want to waste the time of undressing again to change panties, so we decided on heading to the Underworld Country like this.

Because the clothes of girls takes quite a good amount of time to take off and put back on after all.

But I...the ones that I mistakenly put on were the ones of the youngest in the group, Sasae-chan!

Small small small!!

It is wedging in, it is wedging in!!

WR – Chapter 392-394: Prism of contradictions

And in this way, we arrived at the Dark capital, the Underworld Country.

At its entrance.

When I first came here, we were considerate of Yorishiro-sama and acted in the cold night, but because we don't have the leeway of time in this occasion, we arrived here without waiting for the sunset to arrive.

All the members here are sturdy heroes, and also, the objective that is the Underworld Country is below ground, so I knew beforehand that we could escape from the rough heat of the desert.

Hyue-chan helped out in moving aside the sand, and...

What appeared once again in my eyes was the underground door that leads to the Underworld Country.

“If I remember correctly, it was like this...!” (Karen)

I remember what Yorishiro-sama did before, placed a hand on the door, and pour light divine power.

The door opens on its own as if welcoming the return of its owner.

“Oooh!” (Mirack)

“Incredible-dasu!” (Sasae)

“Now then, let's head down.” (Karen)

The stairs leading down were destroyed last time, so we decided on driving inside with the flying machines.

The flying machines that brought us all the way from Apollon City to the Nameless Desert.

In this desert that's even called the Land of Death, the reason why we can step in it without feeling danger to our life is thanks to these little ones. That power was displayed even underground.

While taking care with flying in this narrow passage, we got out from the destroyed part to an open area, and there, ancient luminescent plants were spread around, lighting up the corpse of a city.

“Oooh?!” (Mirack)

“Amazing! What’s this?! What’s with this dreamlike and grandiose place?! Is this the Underworld Country?!” (Celestis) This is the first time for everyone here aside from me that has seen these ruins of a city.

These ancient construction style, that makes one have a feeling of perpetuity, has been buried underground and has been preserved for several hundreds of years.

This sight is definitely one that can overwhelm anyone that sees it.

“I was half in doubt when I heard about it, but...! It really existed huh, this Underworld Country!” (Mirack) “Somewhere in this ancient city, there’s a clue to defeat the Great Demon Lord-de gozaru ka?” (Hyue) Flying at the top of this city at the depths of earth, we try to be careful of not touching the ceiling, and check this dead city from up.

“By the way-dasu...” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan was still too small to be able to drive a flying machine, so she was sitting at the rear of my flying machine when she said this.

“Why the Underworld Country be called the Dark capital-dasu ka?” (Sasae)

“Eh? From there? That’s because this city worships the Dark God Entropy.” (Karen) “What! The Dark God Entropy actually existed-dasu ka?!” (Sasae)

Is what Sasae-chan says in surprise.

Now that I think about it, the first time we met her was when she received the mission of Mantle-sama to ‘kill the Dark God Entropy’.

A lot of things happened after that, so I ended up forgetting about it though.

We met with the very person that gave that oracle, so I could have asked about the reason behind that.

“Dark God Entropy-de gozaru ka? The people that lived here worshipped that God, you say?” (Hyue) “Just like how we worship the five Gods of Creation.” (Karen)

“To think there would be a sixth God. If that were proved to be true, it would be a big scoop that can overturn society. If we ourselves hadn’t seen the dark powers of Haine-chi, we definitely wouldn’t have believed it either.” (Celestis) That’s right. The objective I had when I first came to this Underworld Country was to find a clue regarding the existence of this Dark God Entropy.

The way to defeat Lucifer might have something to do with the Dark God.

“But at what part of this city is the thing we are looking for?” (Karen)

“If we look randomly, it might take us years, you know? Lucifer might even escape from Haine’s restrain by tomorrow.” (Mirack) It is fine.

“About that, leave it to me.” (Karen)

While saying this, I unsheathe the holy sword Saint-George.

“Holy Sword! Using my divine power, show us the true path that we search for!” (Karen) When I proclaim this while adding my divine power, the holy sword answered.

From the blade, a shining light path extends at a certain location.

“Oooh! It shone and extended?!” (Mirack)

“Since taking in the diamond that Haine-san gave me, I have not only been able to turn into a God Hero mode whenever I wish. It looks like it has also added a variety of functions into the holy sword.” (Karen) The same function as the Guiding Needle that we used before to find the ancient city has been added to the holy sword.

And in reality, this function helped out a lot in finding again the entrance to the Underworld Country even if I have already come here once before.

“As expected, the power of Inflation-sama is great.” (Karen)

“But isn’t that strange?” (Celestis)

“Eh?”

What, Celestis-chan?

A sudden heretical statement?

“Before coming here, we heard a variety of things about this time’s opponent, right? And the one thing that surprised me the most was that...” (Celestis) That Sunnysol Ates was the one who was controlling Lucifer from the dark.

Her identity is the Light Goddess Inflation incarnated as a human.

“True. That part was the thing that surprised me the most!” (Mirack)

“But it wasn’t a surprise on the level of being astonished though. We have met a number of Gods until now after all.” (Celestis) Right.

Nova-sama, Coacervate-sama, Mantle-sama.

“How to say it...! After actually meeting them...!” (Karen)

“Gods are not as perfect as we thought they were. They have emotions just like us humans and can make mistakes. That’s why, even if the Light Goddess-sama has gone crazy and is trying to destroy humans, I didn’t fall into despair. I will definitely do my all to go against it though.” (Celestis) After overcoming the wicked Water God-sama and the Mother Earth-sama that knows no restraint, we have become pretty tough mentally.

It instead makes me think I would like to walk by the side of those Gods and help each other out.

“But the Light Goddess that came out this time around is chaotic to a whole different level.” (Celestis) “Eh?” (Karen)

“Because you know, she went through such lengths to make a big monster like that to destroy humanity, and yet, she is also helping Karen-chi out?” (Celestis) The reason why we are being shown a path to take with the holy sword is thanks to the blessing of the Light Goddess.

“In the first place, the reason why Karen can become a God Hero is because the Light Goddess wants to help out the humans, no other way around that.”

(Celestis) "The Light Goddess be trying to destroy the humans, and trying to save 'em as well-dasu ka?" (Sasae) "Makes no sense-de gozaru na!" (Hyue)

It is true that in this incident, the actions of Inflation-sama have remarkable contradictions.

I myself, if I wished to, would be able to turn into the Light God Hero. By using the diamond that is fused with my holy sword.

That is the proof that the Light Goddess has not abandoned me -has not abandoned humanity.

Is she trying to destroy humanity?

Or is she trying to save it?

It is as if there were two Light Goddesses...

"Don't you think that answer lies at the end of this light?" (Celestis)

At the end of the light's guide that the holy sword is releasing.

That light continued on towards the center of the Underworld Country.

- 393: The Queen's space

At the center of the Underworld Country, there was a building that was a size bigger than the rest.

It was like some sort of palace.

It reminded us of the five Church headquarters at each of the five Great Cities.

"...The light is...entering that place." (Karen)

We got off our flying machines and enter the palace guided by the light.

Together with Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, Sasae-chan, and Hyue-chan.

"Just in case, let's be plenty prepared... Hyue, we leave our backs to you." (Miracks) "Understood." (Hyue)

The dark shadow that was loitering in this city in the past -Doraha-san turned berserk-is not here anymore, so I don't think there's any danger though.

While we were hurrying, we arrived at the location.

At the place that the light was pointing at, at an incredibly extravagant room in the highest floor of this palace.

“Uwaaaa~!”

I say extravagant, but that was of course a thing of several hundreds of years in the past. In other words, at present, it is completely the dregs of what it once was.

But the size of this room, the decorations that were on the walls and pillars, and most of all, the throne that is at the highest place of this room; it wasn't hard to deduce the use of this room.

“The space of the king!” (Karen)

“Must be. The king sat at that throne and most likely did things like audiences and ceremonies.” (Mirack) I have heard about that before.

The king that ruled over this Underworld Country in the past was a woman. If I remember correctly, her name was Izanami.

The queen Izanami sat in this throne and ruled over the Underworld Country.

This is the space of the queen.

“We have reached a place that has quite the mood to have a clue, but I wonder what's here?” (Celestis) “It wouldn't even be funny if there be nothing-dasu!!” (Sasae)

I don't think that's the case though!

“At any case, let's try searching! Like some sort of pattern carved somewhere or a special monument!” (Karen) “Okay okay. But it feels like we are graverobbers.” (Celestis)

“Honestly speaking, that's not something heroes should be doing-de gozaran na.” (Hyue) At any rate, there's no doubt that there's some hint here that will tell us how to defeat Lucifer! Probably!!

We have no find it at any cost!

Or we wouldn't be able to face Haine-san who bought us time by using his

very body!

“Oi Karen, the corners of the room are dark, so can you make it brighter?”
(Mirack) “Okay!” (Karen)

Because we are underground, there’s no actual source of light, so in that sense, it is indeed a dark city.

Due to this, I used my holy sword to release light and get some visibility around the area.

“? Karen? Aren’t you shining way too much? Shining too much makes it harder to see instead...” (Celestis) “Eh? Ah, wait a bit!” (Karen)

I got flustered. That’s because I was unable to control the light that the holy sword was releasing.

I am trying to keep it down, and yet, the light was gradually overflowing the place.

“Karen, what’s the matter?!” (Mirack)

“Finally the trouble came?! Uwa?!” (Celestis)

Everyone tried to come to where I am, but they stopped their feet.

Because their divine tools also suddenly began shining.

“Fire Knuckles Barbarossa?! Just what in the world is going on?!” (Mirack)
“Robe Moses is suddenly...!” (Celestis)

“Earth Scythe Seeta, what be the matter-dasu?! Listen ta me-dasu!!”(Sasae)
“Wind Long Gun, En no Ozuno?! What are you trying to tell me?!” (Hyue)

The divine power light that was being released from each of the divine tools were increasing in intensity without limits, and finally, it took over our whole vision, and even our senses were dyed in it as well!!

And then, when the light calmed down and our senses returned to normal, we were in an unknown location.

(Where are we?!) (Karen)

At the very least, I am sure that this is not the room we were in before.

It is a space where there's nothing.

It was 'nothingness' in the very sense of the word.

There's no ground, no sky, no air, no light, no darkness; I could tell that there wasn't even the concept of space.

Not even our bodies were here. Only our consciousness was in this place that can't even be called a space.

(Karen?! Karen, are you okay?!) (Mirack)

(That voice...Mirack-chan?!) (Karen)

Rather than voice, it was more like pure waves of the consciousness? That's what we were able to use to confirm each other.

(It has somehow turned into something crazy-dasu?!) (Sasae)

(How can we return to normal-de gozaru ka?! Won't it be pretty bad if we stay like this?!) (Hyue) I can feel the consciousness of Sasae-chan and Hyue-chan too.

And obviously, Celestis-chan as well.

(The only saving is that we can feel each other. Maybe we were able to maintain a connection thanks to the fact that we exchanged our panties?) (Celestis) I wonder...

But even if we are able to confirm the situation, it would be pretty bad if we were unable to return.

It would be pretty bad if we can't return by the time Lucifer comes out.

Most of all, if we were to continue in this situation where we can't even perceive our own bodies, I feel like it would be hard to maintain our sanity.

(We have to do something to return to normal!) (Karen)

(Wait.)

?!
Wa?!

Since coming here, this is the first time a voice other than ours has reverberated in this place.

(This voice...!) (Karen)

I feel like I have heard it before...!

(I am sorry for startling you all. But there's no need to worry. After I finish telling you what must be told, your consciousness will be returned to your bodies in the Underworld Country.) (W-What is the meaning of this?!?) (Celestis)

(The truth that I am about to tell you now is a secret about the beginning of the world. For the sake of telling you this, first, I wanted you all to see the Underworld Country with your own eyes. Without that knowledge, the weight of the truth that I am about to tell you would be different after all.) This voice...

It sounds like the aged voice of an old lady but, could it possibly be...!

(That's why I pushed things so that you all could come to the Underworld Country. I set it up in your divine tools so that it would activate when you reach the Underworld Country's throne room. What you all are about to see is the reality that occurred at the beginning of the world. And also...) A painful pause for our eager selves was left in between the words.

(Something that you all must know when you face Lucifer.)

...

(A story about the love of the Dark God, and the sin of the Light Goddess.)

- 394: Story of the Genesis

First, there was nothing.

Not even 'nothingness' existed.

Before the world was born, there was no concept of anything. A nothingness that surpassed nothingness.

There, a proper 'nothingness' was born.

It was the nothingness called darkness. The nothingness that was solely black in color existed in the world under the name of darkness.

By being born in this space of nothingness, the world had for the first time something to denote its existence.

That darkness in time obtained sentience as the will of the world; it became the Dark God Entropy.

Entropy thought: 'In this world where there's only nothingness, I want to make an opposite'.

And there, Entropy first created an existence that could be considered its opposite; he created light.

Shadow and light; plus and minus; by having an opposite, the world was balanced, and as a result, several concepts were born.

The existence that was created as the antithesis of the Dark God Entropy was the Light Goddess Inflation.

Within that, the four Base Element Gods were created as the subordinates of those two poles.

Fire God Nova, Water God Coacervate, Mother Earth Mantle, Wind God Quasar.

The six Gods of Creation were gathered, and the world creation began in its real sense.

Within the light and darkness that Entropy and Inflation ruled over, Mantle created earth, Coacervate created the ocean, Quasar created the sky, and Nova used fire to melt them all together.

In this way, the world was born.

Next, the Gods created the living beings that would be residing in the world.

A variety of animals, plants, and in the end, created the humans.

Even within the many living beings, the humans held a specially abundant range of emotions. The king of Gods Entropy took a liking to them the most.

Entropy left the world to the humans and decided on watching over how they would develop.

But the other Gods were against that decision.

The Gods were the ones who created the world, therefore, the owners of the world are the Gods. The humans are a part of the world, so they are the belongings of the Gods. Humans shouldn't leave the supervision of the Gods.

...Is how it went.

The thoughts of the Gods and the Dark God had divided, and finally, the battle of Gods occurred.

The battle shook the earth, divided the ocean, and broke the sky.

Seeing this, Entropy feared that the world might be destroyed if the battle of the Gods continued, so he admitted defeat on his own.

The Gods that ended up as the winners used that authority to seal the Dark God Entropy. He was secluded from the world.

Getting rid of the Dark God, the five Gods acted as they wished.

(!!!)

I -Kourin Karen-, who had become only a consciousness, was shown along with my four other comrades the very beginning of the world.

(The six Gods...created the world...)

(Humans were born...)

(A battle between the Gods happened to decide how humans would be treated...) (And the Dark God lost-dasu ka?)

Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, Hyue-chan, and Sasae-chan were also shocked by the truth that was told.

(Moreover, it wasn't as if the Dark God lost by strength, but surrendered to lessen the damage it would bring to the world?) (Hyue) (Wouldn't that mean that the reason why the fight began and why it ended was because he treasured the humans?!?) (Mirack) (What's with that?! The Dark God is leaps and bounds nicer than the five Gods that we worship!) (Celestis) (Dasu dasu!) (Sasae)

Everyone was deeply impressed by the consideration that the Dark God had

towards the world.

(But...that's exactly why we didn't know of the Dark God.) (Karen)

The Dark God was sealed at the genesis of the world, so he didn't get involved with the world at all, and didn't get to know the humans either.

The God that loved the humans the most couldn't even have his existence recognized by the humans! That's just...!

(After the king of Gods Entropy was sealed, the Gods turned like beasts that have lost their owner. They acted as they wanted, and ruled the humans and the world.) Is what the mysterious voice continued saying.

But this voice...it might really be...

(But within those five that were called the five Gods of Creation, there was only one that held a different sentiment from the others. There was someone that regretted the sealing of the Dark God Entropy and grieved about its own mistake.) 'That God is...'

(The other pole that stands at the side of the Dark God; the Light Goddess Inflation.) Our consciousness would now be peeking at the early days of human history after the creation of the world.

The Light Goddess Inflation is one of the most important Gods along with Entropy.

That Goddess regretted from the bottom of her heart that she had gone against her partner the Dark God.

Where there's light, there's darkness; where there's darkness, there's always light.

The light and darkness that should never be separated had been separated, and with one side being sealed, the Light Goddess felt as if her body was being ripped apart.

In order to protect the order of the Gods, she purposely took the side of the four Base Elements.

Entropy would then notice that decision of hers and would pull back before the battle turned into something definite —is what she believed would happen.

But in the end, the Dark God chose the humans and began fighting.

Not only that, he ended the fight for the sake of the humans. Accepted the messed up conditions of the four Base Elements and sealed himself.

Entropy had prioritized the humans in everything and never chose Inflation once.

For her who stands as the top of the Gods, this was the height of agony, and the height of humiliation.

“Why did my beloved Dark God choose the humans instead of me?”

Those emotions became jealousy, and that jealousy turned into hatred towards the humans.

But if she were to persecute the humans under her hatred, when Entropy wakes up from his seal, he would never forgive her.

Hate the humans, love Entropy; those two emotions that couldn't coexist were tormenting the Goddess.

In order to put in order those emotions, Inflation decided to learn about the humans.

Getting in contact with the humans, interacting with them, and confirming whether the humans truly have the qualifications to be loved by the Dark God.

And with that decision, Inflation herself incarnated as a human, and decided on living with the humans.

The Goddess possessed power and knowledge that surpassed that of humans by many boundaries.

With that inside the body of a human, it was basically almighty intellect, and by guiding the humans, the villages that were born were steadily getting bigger.

And then, what were only a few villages increased even more in scale, and so, for the first time in this world, a nation was created.

That nation was called the Underworld Country.

And so, the incarnation of Inflation that brought to existence the Underworld Country was the queen Izanami.

WR – Chapter 395-396: Confrontation of good and evil

(Then...the one who made this Underworld Country was...!) (Mirack)

(The Light Goddess incarnated as a human?!?) (Celestis)

Mirack-chan and Celestis-chan were surprised at the side, and yet, for some reason, I was completely calm.

It is as if I knew the answer from the very beginning so I didn't get surprised. I am not really sure myself, but that's how I felt.

(The Light Goddess Inflation wanted to know.)

The guide, that we aren't sure whose voice it is from, was lowering her tone.

(Whether the humans that Entropy loved so much, to the point that he sacrificed himself for, are truly worth that much.)

'For that sake, she incarnated as a human and got in contact with the humans'.

(At the same time, the Light Goddess wanted to atone for what she did to the Dark God.)

(Atone?) (Karen)

(By guiding and protecting the humans he loved in his place, she wanted to apologize for the battle that was made because of the humans.)

(S-Such a roundabout way!) (Karen)

Just how guilty did the Light Goddess feel towards the Dark God?

(And then, with time, the seal would dissolve, and when the Dark God returned to the world, humans would know about his actions and would give their gratitude to him. That's the kind of community she wanted to create.)

(That's why...) (Karen)

That's why this is the Dark capital, the Underworld Country.

The city that worshipped the Dark God Entropy that was sealed and was unable to get involved with the world.

(So the one who spread around the name of the Dark God that couldn't be known of was...) (Hyue)

(The Light Goddess-dasu ka?!) (Sasae)

In that way, the Underworld Country developed.

Being guided personally by a God, the first civilization that appeared in humanity had developed without problems.

(With that passage of time, she learned of it.)

The voice continued speaking indifferently.

(The greatness of humans that Entropy spoke of. The fear that comes from being alive, protecting oneself even if they have to push down others for it; but even with that, they would take hands and overcome difficulties that they alone wouldn't be able overcome. Love and hate. While having both of those contradicting emotions, she was trying to adjust to both of them.)

I felt like that voice had slight nostalgia mixing in it bit by bit.

(I... the Light Goddess had, at some point in time, become enraptured by the humans as well. It was not only for the sake of the Dark God, the Light Goddess also felt like helping the humans for her own sake as she developed them. She had begun to think in such a way.)

As I thought, this voice really is...!

(Not as the Light Goddess Inflation, but as the queen Izanami...)

(Do you think such a thing can be forgiven?)

?!
What?!

In this consciousness space, a new voice reverberated.

The only ones here are Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, Sasae-chan, Hyue-chan, and I; and also the voice that has been speaking.

And in that space, a new voice appeared.

It was different from the previous voice; this one was filled with criticism and denial.

(The days where you had become the queen Izanami and had gotten along with humans was simply self-suggestion.)

(What's with this voice?!) (Mirack)

It is as if it was denying the previous voice -the Light Goddess Inflation-with everything she had.

(Is that why you separated from me? And became the other Light Goddess?) (Inflation)

The voice of the Light Goddess that came first speaks back to the new voice without losing in drive.

(Exactly. Even if it is for the sake of being loved by him, why are you flattering mere humans? With that, humans will always be number one for him. I would have no choice but to be number two or lower.) (Inflation 2)

(Isn't that fine? There's not much meaning in order. Isn't that something the humans taught us when we lived together with them?) (Inflation)

(That's just the excuse of a woman that can't win. I won't forgive them. I can't forgive the humans that are being wholeheartedly loved by him! If only the humans didn't exist, he would only be mine! Solely for this Light Goddess Inflation!!) (Inflation 2)

Eh?!

(That's wrong, Inflation.) (Inflation)

The previous voice admonishes the new one with a low tone.

(Things and time have a limit, but there's absolutely no limit to love. That is something that the humans taught me. On top of that, he is the king of Gods. He possesses unlimited power as the Dark God. And yet, why are you saying

there's a limit to only his love?) (Inflation)

A direct objection.

(I am the same. I will love the humans that he loves in the same way that he does. That's why I am the Light Goddess Inflation that can stand at the side of the Dark God.) (Inflation)

Wawawa...

(In the end, we are fundamentally different from each other.) (Inflation 2)

(That's why you separated from me and became such an existence?)
(Inflation)

The voice and the voice were increasing the pressure as if they were confronting each other.

(Why are you arbitrarily thinking that? It might be that I didn't separate from you, but that you were the one that separated from me, you know?) (Inflation 2)

(Are you implying that you are the real self? That's impossible. Because Entropy doesn't forgive your existence. The existence of the Wicked Light Goddess.) (Inflation)

(Then, are you saying you are the 'Good' Light Goddess? How selfish of you.)
(Inflation 2)

No way...

(There's two Light Goddesses?!)

Because of her love for the Dark God, the Good Light Goddess decided on loving the same ones as him.

Because of her love for the Dark God, the Evil Light Goddess hates the ones that he loves.

And those existences were fighting each other in a place where we humans didn't know of?!

(I will destroy the humans. For the sake of my beloved Dark God.) (Inflation 2)

(I will protect the humans. For the sake of my beloved Dark God, and also, for

the sake of the humans too.) (Inflation)

We again were forcing our way deep into the mysteries of this world.

- 396: The last mystery of the world

(The Light Goddess...divided in two?!) (Karen)

The shocking truth had bewildered us heroes.

(But if that's the case, the contradiction that Celestis-dono spoke of before would make sense.) (Hyue)

The Light Goddess created the Great Demon Lord Lucifer and is trying to destroy the world, but at the same time, she made me a Light God Hero in order to protect the humans.

This contradiction didn't make sense if we were to think that this was done by the Light Goddess-sama alone.

A good and an evil Goddess.

If those were things that were done by these two independently, there would be nothing as simple as that.

(In the past, the Water God Coacervate-sama had been distilled and his clean and unclean parts separated. Does that mean the Light Goddess-sama had the same thing happen to her?!) (Celestis)

Gods are existences that we can't gauge with our common sense.

Unable to bear the conflicting feelings inside of her, her body was split in two.

(And so, now, the evil Light Goddess became Sunnysol Ates and created Lucifer, and is trying to eradicate humanity.) (Mirack)

(In order to stop that, the good Inflation-sama be doing her best-dasu?!) (Sasae)

The mysteries of the world were being unveiled here.

(I...didn't notice at all that you had separated from me.) (Inflation)

The voice...the good Inflation-sama said.

(It is true that I had a time when I hated the humans. It is not as if I didn't feel jealous when Entropy chose his beloved humans instead of me. But those ugly emotions disappeared slowly as I lived together with the humans as the queen Izanami.) (Inflation)

That's what the Goddess thought, but that wasn't the case.

(That's right. That's when I separated from you. I couldn't endure those obsequious days towards the humans that stole Entropy from me.) (Inflation2)

(Are you saying that that's when you began to move in the shadows? I didn't notice your existence at all.) (Inflation)

Even though it is herself.

(Being deceived by the humans, deep inside your heart, you wish to be deceived. Must be the same as that. For you, I am an existence that you don't ever want to acknowledge. Thus, you unconsciously rejected to notice my existence.) (Inflation2)

(You are the ugly parts of me after all. True. I would certainly want to look the other way at something like that.) (Inflation)

(But thanks to that, I was able to move freely..... Hey, did you know?) (Inflation2)

The aura of a spider coiling around its prey was coming out from the wicked Goddess.

(The Underworld Country that you treasured so much, the Underworld Country that you did your best to raise to the point that you degraded yourself to being the human Izanami; the ones who destroyed that Underworld Country were certainly the four Base Element idiots, but...) (Inflation2)

I had heard that before.

This ancient city was destroyed by the currently existing Fire, Water, Wind, and Earth Churches...

(I was the one who instigated it.) (Inflation2)

(So it really was you huh.) (Inflation)

(Ara, no surprise?) (Inflation2)

(Since the moment I noticed your existence, I had a feeling that was the case. Even if the four Base Elements were to get angered by the development of the Underworld Country, the four Base Elements at that time lacked any form of unity.) (Inflation)

(True. Because of the fight with Entropy, Coacervate had completely lost the trust of the other Gods after all.) (Inflation2)

(Nova moves under violence, so he doesn't know how to act under someone's leadership; at that time, Quasar and Mantle already didn't have the intention of hurting the humans more than necessary. In order to bring them all together and push for a big offensive...) (Inflation)

(There's the need for a Pole class authority. It is exactly as you think.) (Inflation2)

And, in that way, the Underworld Country fell?

(Well, even if that's the case, I only showed up in front of Coacervate though. I didn't want you to know of my existence yet at that time after all.) (Inflation2)

(Coacervate announced that he had the approval of the Light Goddess. And when I returned to the God realm from the body of the queen Izanami, he lost the trust he had with the Gods again huh.) (Inflation)

(On top of that, since they wouldn't even think that there's two Light Goddesses, my actions were kept hidden. Seriously, people that think of themselves as intelligent are the easiest to utilize.) (Inflation2)

Gods use Gods, and persecute the humans.

The scale of things was so big that my head was going dizzy.

(And you danced in my tune as well.) (Inflation2)

(Is that so.) (Inflation)

(I did feel like destroying that garden of yours you called Underworld Country, but the truly important part was to have you want revenge against the four Base Elements.) (Inflation2)

(It is true that I didn't want to forgive the four Base Elements at any cost because they destroyed the Underworld Country. That's why I trapped them and had them get addicted to prayer energy, thus, weakening their strength.) (Inflation)

(Even to the point of using the tool called ethereal.) (Inflation2)

Eh?!

(I know about it. A secret that not only the four Base Elements but Entropy himself doesn't know. The one who gave ethereal to the humans was you, Light Goddess Inflation, right?) (Inflation2)

(As expected of the Light Goddess. You even knew my last secret.) (Inflation)

(The pure energy that provided the humans of this world the machine era. The origin of it was the Underworld Country.) (Inflation2)

Whaaat?!

The underground city that our bodies are currently in?!

(The technique of changing the light to shadow that was practiced in the Underworld Country. That is the origin of ethereal.) (Inflation)

(That's right. The friction that happened with the creation of the pseudo-darkness that is shadow against light created the byproduct that is the perfectly non-elemental energy, ethereal. That power had spread from the Underworld Country to the surface world.) (Inflation2)

(The humans that created civilization with ethereal at its base separated more and more from the Gods. The four Base Elements that had grown addicted to the prayer energy were weakened even more.) (Inflation)

(Meaning that your revenge had been achieved. But your vengeful mindset turned beneficial to me as well.) (Inflation2)

(Just like how my influence created ethereal in the world, your influence created something as well. That's...) (Inflation)

(Monsters.) (Inflation2)

The two Goddesses were already ignoring us and continuing their

conversation.

What are the Goddesses trying to make us hear?

(So the one pulling the strings towards the birth of monsters was you as well huh.) (Inflation)

(Coacervate thought he himself was the conductor though. Delusional fools are truly worth utilizing.) (Inflation2)

The treatment of the Water God Coacervate is growing worse and worse...

(Coacervate, who was induced by you, proposed the creation of the monsters to the Gods as if it was his own idea. Me not joining it was also in your calculations, right?) (Inflation)

(Yeah. You were the one who trapped the four Base Elements, so there wouldn't be any need for you to procure prayer energy. Even if you were to create light element monsters, I wouldn't need it. What you have, I already have it after all.) (Inflation2)

(Then, as expected, what you really wanted was...) (Inflation)

(I knew that the compilation that is called Demon Lord would be completed by adding up several hundreds of monster generations. That's how I structured the system after all.) (Inflation2)

(What you aimed for wasn't the Demon Lords themselves. More accurately speaking, it was the very crystallization of the divine power that the Demon Lords possess...) (Inflation)

Their wings.

(Having Lucifer take away their wings and absorbing it was part of your plan since the very beginning! Since when did you plan have the creation of Lucifer in your mind?!) (Inflation)

(Since the very beginning as well.) (Inflation2)

The wicked Goddess laughed daringly.

(Since the moment I separated from you. To be more accurate, I wanted to create something different. But because of some minor complications, it ended

up as the Great Demon Lord Lucifer.) (Inflation2)

(What was that different thing you wanted to create...?) (Inflation)

(A new world.) (Inflation2)

The wicked Goddess continued.

(I would create a new world. This world was a failure. The unnecessary factor that are humans had led astray the King of Gods. That's why I wanted to create a new world. A world where no unnecessary factor is present; a world for only me and him!) (Inflation2)

(And that's Lucifer, right?) (Inflation)

(To create a world, there's the need for at least six factors. Just like how Entropy created the other Gods of Creation.) (Inflation2)

In order for the Dark God to create a world, he made the opposing element that is the Light Goddess, and on top of that, the Earth, Water, Fire, and Wind Gods were created as well.

If the Dark God could create a world alone, he would have done so from the beginning.

Then, if what she says is true, to create a world, the bare minimum requirements would be those six elements?

That's why, if the evil Goddess wanted to create a new world, she would have to gather the other five elements aside from the light element?

(But that's something we can't do. Creating Gods. Such deed can only be performed by the almighty Dark God Entropy.) (Inflation)

(Right. That's why, what I can't create, I will have to steal in order to achieve. I had the four Base Elements create monsters, and wait until they have evolved into Demon Lords. A wait of a hundred years.) (Inflation2)

(And so, you harvesting that fruit is the present situation huh. In order to furnish your Lucifer.) (Inflation)

(With light as its base, Lucifer has obtained the power of the four base elements; Lucifer is the world itself now. Now, if I can assimilate the most

important component, darkness...) (Inflation2)

The world would be completed.

The completed wish of the wicked Light Goddess; a birdcage where no unnecessary factors are present.

If the darkness is assimilated...the key to complete that world, as well as the beloved person she wishes to live with in that world, will both be gathered at once.

(That's all I can tell you people.)

(What you people are fighting. Why is it you have to fight.)

(When you have understood that, you will definitely obtain a new power.)

(The strongest foundation of your power that protects you people.)

(Stand up. Face the last fight to save this world!)

WR – Chapter 397-398: The time for a decision

The talk ended.

As if telling us there was nothing to say anymore, the consciousness world disappeared, and I -Kourin Karen-as well as Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, Sasae-chan, and Hyue-chan had returned to our original world.

To the fallen Underworld Country; at the throne room that serves as the center of it.

“Oh, we are back!” (Mirack)

“We have a body!” (Celestis)

Everyone still couldn’t escape from the agitation of what happened.

“Weren’t we...told something incredible just now-de gozaru mai ka?!” (Hyue)
Yeah, the truth that we were told of. The secret of the Gods, the secret of the world.

The scale is way too big to entrust to us humans.

“In the end, the turmoil happening in this world was brought by the blind love of the Light Goddess-sama huh.” (Celestis) “You...choose your words a bit more!” (Mirack)

But there was conflict in the heart of the Light Goddess.

Love and hatred to the point of separating herself in two.

This event raised the world in a crooked way.

“But the plan of the evil Light Goddess is closing to its completion.” (Celestis)
Celestis-chan said with a stern face.

“She turned her back on this world that had things she didn’t want and is

trying to create a new world. The personification of those feelings is Lucifer itself." (Celestis) "Meaning that that giant snake will become a world in itself? I think I have heard a story about the world being inside a giant coiled snake." (Mirack) "In order to create a world, there's the need to gather all six elements. It has already assimilated the Demon Lords and obtained four elements. If we think about the light elements that was already present, then there's only one left...!" (Karen) "The dark element-dasu!!" (Sasae)

If it can assimilate that one, Lucifer will be completed as a new world.

"Was there worth in us coming here?" (Celestis)

"By coming here, we were able to see the memories of the Light Goddess and we were able to learn about the enemy's objective and identity. Well, it wasn't pointless." (Mirack) "But that be all it was-dasu?" (Sasae)

It couldn't be helped that we would question it.

"The enemy is massive-de gozaru. A weakness to defeat the opponent, a useful new power; wasn't there something else-de gozaru ka?" (Hyue) "Right. Let's explore the Underworld Country a bit more and search for something that can serve as a hint—" (Celestis) "There's no need for that." (Karen)

I said.

The gazes of the four gather on me.

"There's nothing else we can gain here. This is plenty enough. Let's go back." (Karen) "But..." (Celestis)

"We learned about the meaning behind this battle. What we have to win with this battle. What else would be needed aside from that?" (Karen) A reason we must not lose.

As long as we know that, we definitely won't lose!

"...True." (Mirack)

"...If we take too much time, Haine-chi won't last after all." (Celestis) "We be returning with a sharpened knife-dasu! Our batteries be charged to the max-dasu!" (Sasae) "We will fulfill our duties as heroes now!!" (Hyue)

The reason why the Goddess showed us her memories here was because she

entrusted us with the battle.

Because she believed that we would be able to protect this world ourselves.

We will answer that trust and fight to protect this world.

That is our duty as the ones living in this world!

“Those girls are coming back...”

With resolve in hand, I -Yorishiro, the Light Goddess-could be said to be the very culprit behind this time’s calamity.

Being divided in two because of a variety of conflicts, I became the good Inflation.

And the evil Inflation incarnated as Sunnysol Ates.

And now, Ates herself is the worst calamity attacking this world.

Since the genesis of the world, I have been protecting the humans in place of the Dark God, and watched over the progress of the humans. That’s what I intended.

But even I might have been a harmful existence for the humans.

“You are pretty discouraged there, Yorishiro-sama.”

In the Light Founder’s room where I should be the only one in, a new stream-like voice reverberated.

After that, mist gathered, and a fishman dressed like a pierrot appeared.

“Coacervate. Even when distilled, you still have the hobby of trespassing?” (Yorishiro) In the past, this Water God that couldn’t be described as anything but trash, had completely sanctified after his battle with the humans.

Right now, he is using the water demon—no, the water saint Mephistopheles to move around in the surface world.

He is apparently moving around here and there doing good deeds.

“You have done quite the big move there. Showing the humans a memory of the genesis era.” (Coacervate) “It is something necessary for those girls.”

(Yorishiro)

Why this calamity has occurred, why they have to fight against it; by knowing that, the resolve they will hold will be different.

“And if it is those girls that have learned the meaning of the fight, they will definitely be able to defeat the other me.” (Yorishiro) “For the sake of that, you even showed them a recreation of the information you managed to obtain from your other self.” (Coacervate) So he noticed huh.

“It is not as if you were crossing your arms doing nothing. Since the moment you learned of Ates’ identity, you spend a lot of time sending your consciousness to the spirit world and investigating your past half, right?” (Coacervate) “Yeah...” (Yorishiro)

The latter part that I told Karen-san and the others was information that I managed to draw out from the memories of Ates-san.

But it is not as if it all went smoothly.

Especially her final objective. I only learned of it when she had already been caught whole into the Black Hole together with Haine-san.

If I had learned of it sooner, I would have stopped the Demon Lords that were heading to battle...

“Ates is already an enemy of this whole world. The job of stopping that is fitting for the heroes.” (Yorishiro) That’s why, it might have been a bit roundabout, but I had them go through the trouble of going all the way to the Underworld Country in order to, not only hear, but see and feel it themselves the path the world had taken.

They are shouldering the world as they fight, so they have the right to know everything about the world.

“Then, are you saying you will be putting this battle in the hands of the humans?” (Coacervate) The tone of Coacervate sounded cautious.

“Actually, I came here as the representative of the four Base Elements. Nova-san can’t move freely in Muspelheim, Mantle-san is scared of speaking face to face with you, and Quasar-san has his duties as the Wind Founder.”

(Coacervate) "And so, since you are a free spirit, you are representing them?" (Yorishiro) "We Gods also bear responsibility in this fight." (Coacervate) The already clean Water God speaks clearly.

"Shouldn't we not limit ourselves to support and actually move to fight personally? If protecting the humans is the duty of us Gods..." (Coacervate) "I didn't expect a day would come where I would hear those words coming out from you four Base Elements." (Yorishiro) Those words that I wouldn't ever hear 1,600 years ago.

Who was it that changed you people?

There's no need to even think of it.

"Of course, we will provide our full support by having Karen-san and the others transform in their God Hero form to fight against Lucifer. We will pour all our strength, and we will take over all the burden. But..." (Yorishiro) The ones who will be acting will be them.

"This world is already the world of humans. Protecting this world is the duty of the ones that live in it." (Yorishiro) Just like how he believed in the humans, I will also believe in them.

The strong and kind humans.

"They will definitely manage to do it. And when they actually manage to do it..." (Yorishiro) The humans will finally not need Gods anymore.

- 398: Armageddon

We have returned.

To this place that will become a battlefield.

At this place that's dozens of kilometers away from Apollon City, this level ground that hasn't been developed and has no villages, there's the Great Demon Lord Lucifer restraint inside the Black Hole.

"That's Lucifer?!" (Mirack)

The five heroes returned from the Underworld Country.

They have finished their preparations for battle, and were lined up in front of

the half-snake giant that will be their opponent.

Just that...that half-snake giant is...!

“It be so strange that it enters the level of disgusting-dasu!” (Sasae) Not even the Black Hole was able to swallow it whole, and the long snake body was sticking out from the black hole.

Honestly speaking, it is disgusting.

“Ueh... My stomach is turning just from looking at it.” (Celestis) “Hmm... Maybe it can make a good meal-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

“Stop...” (Celestis)

That will be our opponent this time huh...

Crack

The sound of something breaking reverberated.

It was like the sound of a chick trying to break out from its shell.

And then, soon after, a bigger shockwave was created as the Black Hole broke.

“Uwaaaaa?!”

“Kyaaaaaaaa!!”

A tremendous gale raged, and it took our all just to stand ground.

And then, the true repulsiveness appeared in front of us.

“This is...Lucifer?!” (Karen)

A giant half-snake monster with five pair of wings.

The upper half is that of a robust man, its lower half is that of a snake. Its face is also snake-like, and has reptilian eyes as well as a mouth split all the way to its ears.

“Can’t feel a single shred of intelligence from it-de gozaru na!” (Hyue) “It would be an insult to put that thing in the same category as Gabriel and the other Demon Lords!” (Celestis) Before coming here, we heard about it from the explanation of someone.

Lucifer is the perfected tool of a monster created by the wicked Light Goddess.

It is different in a fundamental level from the four Demon Lords that obtained a heart after the culmination of several generations.

On top of that, the ten wings at its back.

They come in a set of two, and they have a different design respectively.

Light, wind, earth, water, and fire wings.

Aside from the light wings, all the others were stolen from the Demon Lords.

“Oh? And here I was wondering who it was.”

From high up, there was a condescending voice sounding out.

“The first ones to welcome me after coming out of the Black Hole are you people huh. Powerless humans on the same level as worms.”

A bewitching woman was standing at the top of Lucifer.

Sunnysol Ates; the incarnation of the wicked Light Goddess.

“With the Demon Lords defeated, the ones used as their remaining hope was you people huh. How pitiful. Being forced to face an opponent that you know you can’t hope to win against. There’s no torture as big as this.” (Ates) Ates says whatever she wants.

She is not even seeing us as enemies.

“My time is way too important to waste on you worms. If you throw away your pride and prostrate, I will allow you to run away from here. If you do that, you will be able to prolong for a bit your life till the moment I destroy the world, you know?” (Ates) “Don’t joke around!” (Mirack)

The first one to roar was Mirack-chan.

“Our jobs as heroes is to protect the world! We will never show our backs to someone like you who wants to destroy it all!” (Mirack) “If you look too up, you will trip, you know?” (Celestis)

Celestis-chan joins in.

“The intelligent Gods acknowledged our strength, but you seem to be an idiotic God. You will definitely begin spewing words like ‘if only I hadn’t underestimated them, I wouldn’t have lost’ like a total loser.” (Celestis) “Cut-dasu! I be cutting like crazy-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“We five will absolutely fulfill our duties as heroes!!” (Hyue) Sasae-chan and Hyue-chan were also overflowing with fighting spirit.

But Ates still held her stance like a queen with Lucifer as her puppet.

“Idiots who can’t understand their own situation are truly comical. How unsightly.” (Ates) She was thoroughly looking down on us.

“Lucifer is already on a plane that mere humans can’t do anything about. I obviously also know about God Heroes. But with just receiving a slight boost of God power, you have no way of doing anything against Lucifer who is about to become a new world.” (Ates) “What?!”

“Look.” (Ates)

The half-snake giant pushed forward its clenched fist.

?!
That fist is holding something...

A person...

Could it be...!

“Haine-san?!” (Karen)

I am happy that Haine-san, who had fallen into the Black Hole together with Lucifer to restrain it, has safely come back, but...

“Uuh...” (Haine)

It looks like he has received damage from it.

He was only groaning in pain within the hand of Lucifer and can’t even move his body to try and escape from its grasp.

“As expected of Haine-san, even when he fell into the Black Hole with the body of a human, he was still able to come back with his whole body, but...but he has finally fallen into my hands.” (Ates) Ates made an intoxicated face.



“Finally, he is within my hands. I won’t let you go ever again. You are mine and only mine.” (Ates) “Ah!”

There wasn’t even time to raise a scream.

The hand holding Haine-san was quickly moved to the mouth of Lucifer, and he was swallowed with a gulp.

“Haine-san! Haine-saaan!!” (Karen)

There’s no way my scream would reach him.

And soon, a change occurred.

New wings appeared from the back of Lucifer.

Pitch black wings, darker than any black in this world.

With this, six pair of wings have been gathered.

“Hahahahahahaha!! Finally! Finally Lucifer has been completed! Hahahahahaha!!” (Ates) Ates laughs as if she had gone mad.

“With this, all the pieces have fallen in place, and the puzzle has been completed! What’s left is to destroy this meddlesome world, and Lucifer will become the new world!!” (Ates) We already weren’t even reflected in Ates’ eyes anymore.

She has already achieved her objective.

“Please wait for us, Haine-san!!” (Karen)

I shout words that can’t reach out to the ears of the person.

“I will definitely save you, Haine-san!! I will definitely save you from that monster along with the Demon Lords!!” (Karen) Just endure for a bit more. Please wait for us!!

Ates’ objective has been achieved. But our fight has begun now.

“Let’s go, everyone!” (Karen)

“Yeah!” “Roger~!” “Yes-dasu!” “Understood!”

Everyone together...!!

““““[God Hero mode, activate!]”“““”

WR – Chapter 399-400: Two sides unite

“Light God Hero, Kourin Karen!”

The first one to introduce herself was me, the God Hero that has received a part of Inflation-sama and shine like the morning sun.

“Fire God Hero, Katack Mirack!!”

Obtaining a part of Nova-sama’s power, her body releases fire, and she herself is searing hot.

“Water God Hero, Re Celestis! The live starts!!” (Celestis)

Celestis-chan -with the power of Coacervate-sama was-transparent like water, and even if it was calm water, it was grandiose. It felt like a heavy silence.

“The incompetent Gonbee Sasae! As the Earth God Hero, I be slicing and dicing ya-dasu!!” (Sasae) The one who showed the most surprising change within us was Sasae-chan.

After turning into a God Hero, the cute little body of hers had become the body of a beautiful woman that one would gulp when seeing.

It is because her body was forcefully grown in order to reach the age one can move the most comfortably to use the close combat specialized earth divine power, but just by growing, would anyone end up as voluptuous as her?!

And then...

“Wind God Hero, Toreido Hyue, has arrived to the scene!!” (Hyue) Hyue-chan has become a God Hero as well.

Her state was stillness. But the wind that was always making her hair wave was now coming from her body itself.

It may be a calm wind, but it felt as, if the moment requires it, it could turn

into a violent gale.

That's the impression that the Wind God Hero Hyue-chan gave out.

"We did it! Hyue-chan has also become a God Hero!" (Karen)

"I am grateful. With this, I can be... This is thanks to Aniue-sama-de gozaru."
(Hyue) ?

At any rate, with this, the five God Heroes have gathered.

The preparations of battle have been arranged.

"...Hmph, a bunch that doesn't have worth existing, no matter what they do is also pointless." (Ates) On the other hand, Ates still showed disdain towards us.

"Even if you were to borrow the power of lower Gods like the four Base Elements, or the power of my other half, there's not even a grain of a possibility to defeat Lucifer who has become a perfect existence. It is because you humans don't understand things as obvious as this that you are all sinful." (Ates) As if following after her words, Lucifer's six sets of wings fluttered.

"But fine. My plan has already been set to motion. My beloved one is already inside my hands. What's left is to destroy the world. My several hundred years aspiration has finally been fulfilled. As a celebration, I would even be fine with giving myself a reward." (Ates) ..."

"Before bringing the world to its end, I will kill you people that are the hope of the world, and the humans will fall into something that's deeper than despair. I will bring the humans to the depths of despair before eliminating them." (Ates) Ates wraps her arms around her body and makes a wide grin.

"That is the best pleasure. It would definitely be worthy of a gift to me."
(Ates) "You damn pervert." (Mirack)

Mirack-chan walks forward while showing her contempt.

"Feeling pleasure from the pain and sadness of others is the proof of a psychopath. Those kind of idiots need a good beating and have them learn pain with their own bodies." (Mirack) "Right. It is because you have never felt pain yourself that you can't empathize with the pain of others." (Celestis) "Educating idiots also be the duty of heroes-dasu!!" (Sasae) "Let's all five of us beat you

up." (Hyue)

The morale of everyone rose up greatly.

And then, the gun to signal the beginning was shot.

"[Pleiades Burst]!!" (Mirack)

The very first one to attack was Mirack-chan.

The strengthened version of 'Flame Burst', 'Pleiades Burst'.

A large fire that would be big enough to cover a whole town was attacking the half-snake giant.

But...

"Foolish fool." (Ates)

The big flame of the Pleiades Burst was dispersed in an instant in the face of the giant water current Lucifer released.

"Did you people forget already? The current Lucifer is a perfected existence that has all elements." (Ates) The transparent water wings of Lucifer were the ones that shot that giant stream of water.

"Earth, Water, Fire, Wind, Light, and Darkness. They are all now the weapons of Lucifer. Even if you were to repeat pointless attacks, it will all end by simply using the weakness of your element. Just like what happened." (Ates) Water beats fire, earth beats water, wind beats earth, fire beats wind; the four elements have their respective good and bad affinity.

Because of those affinities, the Demon Lords were also deftly defeated.

"Only the light element user Karen-san doesn't have a weakness, but...well, she is an enemy that force can easily manage. That's why, what you people are doing, is pointless from beginning to end. Humans are truly foolish." (Ates)
"[Pleiades Burst]!!" (Mirack)

Even with that, Mirack-chan valiantly shot the God Fire.

But Lucifer quickly used a water shield to stop that fire.

"No matter how many times I say foolish, it wouldn't be enough... Why don't humans learn? Are you planning on repeating the same mistake?" (Ates)

“Raaaaaaah!!” (Mirack)

“And why does he continue loving such foolish living beings? That is the biggest sin of the humans. As I thought, you people really need a proper punishment.” (Ates) The eyes of Ates shine in a suspicious light while the water shield continued to stop the fire of Mirack-chan.

“Erasing the world in an instant would be boring. I will have you all properly repent for the sin of being loved by that personage.” (Ates) *Swit!* Something pierced the water shield.

“Eh?!”

The one who raised a voice of surprise was Ates.

She was completely sure there was no doubt of her victory.

“Gyaaaaaa!!” (Lucifer)

The thing that pierced the water shield had electrified both Lucifer and Ates.

“Ugyaaaa!! Wa? What is going on?! Just what in the world got through the water shield?!” (Ates) The water shield of Lucifer was still dividing both sides without showing a single wound.

“Seeing it from the affinity perspective, it is not the fire hero. Then, did the earth hero do something? But it went bzzzt!” (Ates) “That’s right. The power of ‘thunder’.”

“?!”

We proclaim at the other side of the water shield.

“The power of ‘Light’ and ‘Fire’...” (Karen)

“Gather into one!!” (Mirack)

““Light+Fire [Thunder]!!”” (Karen+Mirack)

The thunder pierced the water shield and attacks Lucifer.

The thunder had further increased in power thanks to the God Hero mode, so it had plenty enough power to affect that giant monster.

“Gyaaaaa!! Thunder, you say?! There’s no element like that...!” (Ates)

“Combined elements.” (Karen)

The trump card that we heroes have been using numerous times in the past.

The combination that the cooperation of two heroes can bring forth.

This power has saved us several times before already.

“Water conducts electricity, and it can easily pierce the water wall of yours. Completely changing the elemental affinities is one of the strong points of the combined elements.” (Mirack) Because of the damage received, Lucifer’s divine power got disturbed and, unable to maintain the water shield, it flows down.

From there, we appeared in her sight. In front of Mirack-chan and I who were holding hands.

“It’s been a while since we have combined elements, but we were in sync as if natural!” (Mirack) “Of course! It is Mirack-chan and I after all!” (Karen)

Now that I think about it, the first combined element was this pairing.

The battle with the Demon Lords was mostly individual battles, so we didn’t have much chance to actually bring that out.

Our connections that have been strengthened after many tribulations. Now that we have obtained a superior power that is the God Hero mode, the firepower of the combined elements have boosted in power by even more.

“You...! Cocky humans!!” (Ates)

Uwa, Ates is angry.

But is that okay? To narrow your field of vision by getting angry.

“Your enemies are not only Karen-chi and Mirack-chi!” (Celestis) From a different direction, two others were holding hands.

“Water and Wind!” (Celestis)

“Two in one make...’Ice’!!” (Hyue)

Celestis-chan and Hyue-chan’s combined element attack!

““[Blizzard]!!”” (Celestis+Hyue)

- 400: Harmony as one

It wasn't just plain wind.

A wind that had ice and snow mixed in it.

This combined element attack of Celestis-chan and Hyue-chan hit Lucifer directly.

"Akakakakaka!!" (Lucifer)

Lucifer was raising a painful cry but...it is so disgusting?!

"Don't rest! Let's attack one-sidedly just like this!!" (Celestis) Obeying the instruction of Celestis-chan, we were already beginning our next action.

Mirack-chan lets go of my hands and immediately goes down -to where the womanly Sasae-chan was waiting at.

"Sasae! That state of yours has big boobs as always!!" (Mirack) "That be of no importance-dasu yo! Let's begin already-dasu!!" (Sasae) This time, Mirack-chan and Sasae-chan join hands.

Fire and Earth, the two elements together form... 'Magma'.

""[Magma Ocean]!!"" "-Dasu!!" (Mirack+Sasae)

Moreover, it was an even more powerful lava attack than before. The earth all around released a red light, and it engulfs the long long body of Lucifer.

"Oaaaaah!!" (Lucifer)

This attack was pretty effective against Lucifer with that long snake body it has.

Blizzard from the top, magma from the bottom.

Intense cold and searing heat; these two attacks from two areas should be plenty effective even on the Great Demon Lord-sama.

"Don't get ahead of yourselves, worms!!" (Ates)

Ates who was at the top of Lucifer raised a shout.

"What are you doing, Lucifer?! Use fire for the top and water for the bottom!! Even if the affinities have been nullified, it should be able to mitigate the high temperature and low one!!" (Ates) "I won't let you!" (Karen)

In an instant, I appear right at the proximity of Ates herself.

A sword on each hand. A light sword that stretches straight approaches Ates from both sides like a scissor!

“[Holy Light, Severing Scissors]!!” (Karen)

Eat this maximum output attack of the Light God Hero!

“Kuh! [Holy Light, Apocalyptic Hand]!!” (Ates)

It didn't go that smoothly, and Ates herself used her own amplified divine power attack to fight back.

A divine power that can match me in my current God Hero form. If it is now, I can understand how she is the incarnation of the Light Goddess.

“But with this, your movements have been sealed!!” (Karen)

“？！”

“As long as Lucifer is a giant monster with no intelligence unlike the other Demon Lord-sans, it won’t be able to do careful movements without your orders!” (Karen) Even if it holds six elements, the one who is using them minutely is Ates. It is impossible for Lucifer without her instructions!

“Now, everyone! While I am holding Ates in place!!” (Karen)

“““““Alright!!””””” “-Dasu!””

Everyone was doing as they wished.

Fire, Water, Earth, Wind; it was a combined element festival mixing in a variety of combinations!

First, it was Fire and Water!

““[Steam Explosion]!!”” (Mirack+Celestis)

Earth and Wind!

““[Sand Storm]!!”” “-Dasu!” (Hyue+Sasae)

Water and Earth!

““[Tree Plant]!!”” “-Dasu!!” (Celestis+Sasae)

Wind and Fire!

““[Firestorm]!!”” (Mirack+Hyue)

The combined elements that were connecting one after the other were overwhelming Lucifer.

“Nice! This flow of events is nice!! Or rather, won’t we win if it goes on like this?!” (Celestis) “No need for the opponent to have a turn! Let’s push all at once just like this! This is not the performance stage of Celestis, so there’s no need to be flashy in order to warm up the audience!!” (Mirack) It is true that, until now, it has been our overwhelming advantage.

But is Lucifer, the enemy that defeated Haine-san and the Demon Lord-sans, an opponent that would fall like this?

“Don’t joke around, WORMS!!” (Ates)

“Uwa?!” (Karen)

I was blown away by the vigour in Ates’ roar.

“Karen?!” “Karen-chi?!” “Karen-nee-chan!” “Karen-dono?!”

Everyone gathered below me, and the offensive had been temporarily stopped.

And then, Ates who had been freed from my restraint...

“Unforgivable! Unforgivable!! I was playing along with you all and you get all spoiled! You really don’t understand your place. That’s why humans are fools!!” (Ates) She is crazy angry!

“Do you understand?! The fight until now has all been me playing around! Just a slight caprice before ending the world. As proof...!” (Ates) Eh?

“My Lucifer has only used the four base elements, right? Even though this child can use more than that now.” (Ates) “Don’t tell me...!” (Karen)

“It is the end. Game is over. I will go as planned and erase this world along with you all!” (Ates) The wings of Lucifer moved.

The last of the six pairs of wings...

The Dark Wings that it obtained after engulfing Haine-san.

“Lucifer! Use the Dark power that stands at the top of the six elements!! With the power that was made to destroy the world! ...Use it as it was intended to, and destroy this world!!” (Ates) The other five wings are drawn in, and the dark wings spread out wide as if substituting them.

And then, in the middle of the wings, a dark swirl was slowly gathering.

“Could that possibly be...!!” (Karen)

The dark matter that Haine-san uses?!

Moreover, it is gathering and condensing it? In that case...

“That’s right. A Black Hole.” (Ates)

Ates said with pride.

“The ultimate form of the dark power. The reset switch to destroy the world. This power that normally wouldn’t be allowed to anyone but Haine-san, I will be utilizing it. Be swallowed by the Black Hole and perish.” (Ates)

WR – Chapter 401-402: Return to the beginning

“Black Hole?!” (Karen)

The ultimate destruction method of Haine-san.

Are you telling me Lucifer can also utilize that?!

“Kuh!” (Karen)

I immediately release a ‘Holy Light Line’ towards the Black Hole.

But the line of light couldn’t even arrive at the Black Hole, was bended by an invisible strength, and was sent to who knows where.

“It is pointless. With that measly light power of yours, it will be caught by the gravity barrier, and won’t reach the Black Hole’s core.” (Ates)

“No way...!” (Karen)

Even though I heard that light is the only method to go against darkness!

“The only Black Hole you have seen must have been the one at Ishtar Blaze that erased Mantle, right?!” (Ates)

“Ugh...”

“The Black Hole that’s being created by Lucifer right now is on a different level from that one. It is a standard Black Hole. It is the original scale used to destroy the world, that is.” (Ates)

Destroying...the world...

“That’s the true purpose of a Black Hole. And yet, that personage was so attached to this world that he only used the minimum size of the Black Hole when creating it... How saddening.” (Ates)

Ates' expression distorts.

"That personage that holds the ultimate power in the world had restricted his own almighty for the sake of stupid living beings like humans. To not be able to use his all as he wished. Just by looking at that point, you humans are all sinful!!" (Ates)

She directed a gaze filled with hatred.

"But that's all over now. I was thinking of playing around with you all before crushing you, but I don't feel like it anymore. Disappear inside the Black Hole altogether with the world!!" (Ates)

"Why?!" (Celestis)

Celestis-chan refutes as if biting.

"We know about your objective! In order to live eternity together with your beloved Dark God, you wanted to create a new world with that Lucifer, and shut inside there with only you two, right?!" (Celestis)

Ignoring the other party's will.

That may simply be how the wicked Light Goddess does things though.

"In that case, as long as you create the new world, there's no need to care about the old world. The existence of this world should have nothing to do with your objective! How about just leaving us alone and you go to your Eden?!" (Celestis)

"That's not it." (Ates)

Ates promptly denies her.

"For me, destroying this world holds as much priority as making Lucifer into a new world." (Ates)

"W-What?!" (Celestis)

"You paltry humans, when moving to another house, you would clean the old house, right? After refreshing yourself in this way, you can move to your new home with a clear mind, right? It is the same as that." (Ates)

Old house...cleaning?!

“You humans are the trash that deceived my beloved Dark God. There’s the need to erase every single speck of trash. Without doing that, that personage wouldn’t be able to cut ties with his old world, and my revenge wouldn’t dissipate.” (Ates)

“This woman!! What crazy stuff is she spewing!!” (Celestis)

“Also, who knows what the four Base Elements and the other Inflation would do if left alone. It is fine to just erase them together with this world. And then, after squaring all accounts, Entropy and I can fully enjoy our own Eden.” (Ates)

This person...this God...is crazy!!

As long as she and her loved one are there, there’s no need for anything more. No, there *cannot* be anything more.

That’s why her ultimate selfishness of erasing everything without leaving anything behind is the worse kind of selfishness.

“And so, please properly disappear as well, okay? This is the order of the God that created you people. You will obviously obey, right?” (Ates)

“We refuse!” (Karen)

I spoke.

“Even if you are a God, we will not allow you to decide our fate arbitrarily. There’s no one but ourselves who can decide our own fate.” (Karen)

“How selfish. Since when did humans become so prideful?” (Ates)

“From the very beginning.” (Karen)

Since the moment the humans were born in this world by the hands of the Gods.

“The Gods that created us had blessed us humans. They acknowledged that we have splendid strength and potential. That blessing is the foundation of our pride.” (Karen)

We have seen it.

At that Underworld Country, when we went to the consciousness world, we experienced the Genesis era with our eyes, with our senses.

That's why we know.

Since the very moment we humans were born, the Dark God was happier than anyone.

And that God provided us with pride, blessings, potential, and also protected us from a variety of unfairness.

"The blessing that the Dark God gave to us humans, we ourselves can't put it to waste!! Doing that would mean betraying the Gods, and betraying ourselves!" (Karen)

"Kh!!" (Ates)

Ates' expression distorts into a scary countenance.

"Ates! No, Wicked Light Goddess! Your actions itself are the same as stepping on the blessing of the Dark God and smearing mud at it! The one who goes against the Dark God the most is you! You are the one that's the furthest from the Dark God!" (Karen)

Someone like you...!

"We won't lose! As the children of the Gods!!" (Karen)

"Indeed!" "Just as Karen-chi says!" "Right outta mah mouth-dasu!!" "Sound reasoning!"

The heroes gathered here felt the same way as me.

What we saw at the Underworld Country, it told us of our past history, as well as gave us pride.

That pride pushed our retreating legs...and made us walk forward.

History. What we inherited from the past was granting us pride!

"What did you say?!" (Ates)

Ates was groaning silently.

It was like a trembling that came from the bottom of the earth. A groan that came straight from hell.

"Me...going against Entropy-sama? That I am the one that is the furthest from

Entropy-sama, you say?!” (Ates)

Ates screamed like a vengeful ghost.

“You have said what you shouldn’t have! You mere humans, how dare you insult me, the Light Goddess!!” (Ates)

“You are not the true Light Goddess! The true Light Goddess is...!” (Karen)

The one who has always been watching over us.

The one who watched over us in place of the absent Dark God with regret that would drive her to tears.

So pitiful, filled with deep love that would make you want to hug her; the true Light Goddess.

“For the sake of that person, I will defeat you! With the strength of everyone here!!” (Karen)

Light!

“Fire!” “Water!” “Earth-dasu!” “Wind!”

A combined element mixing all five elements.

With this concentration, we will crush Lucifer’s darkness!

“Fools! This is what you call getting way too ahead of yourselves! It is true that combining elements is an effective tactic. I will acknowledge that. But what point does it have in front of darkness?!?” (Ates)

Ates says with ridicule.

“It is presumptuous that humans are able to combine elements to create new ones which even Gods can’t manage to, but...no matter what combined element it is, it is powerless against darkness!! Just obediently get swallowed by the Black Hole!” (Ates)

That’s not it.

We know.

When we learned of the beginning of the world, we had already learned that the Dark God was the very beginning of this world.

That God was born first, and from that God himself, the idea of creating a world was reached.

In order to create a world with bountiful colors, Entropy understood that just the black color wouldn't be enough. He separated himself in many parts, and created Gods aside from himself.

That is the Light Goddess.

Those are the Fire, Water, Earth, and Wind Gods.

"If we return the power of those Gods to one again...!" (Karen)

We five heroes with our five combined elements.

Reaching out to the past, we learned of the answer, so we were able to find a path to this conclusion.

"Let's go, everyone!" (Karen)

"""YEAAAAH!!"" "-Dasu!!"

Earth, Water, Fire, Wind, Light; five elements combined...!

"Manifest! [Dark Matter]!!!"

- 402: Heroes of Darkness

"That's impossible!!" (Ates)

Ates saw the dark matter that we created and was shocked.

From the hands that we five were holding, there was a dark swirl we were used to seeing.

"Dark matter?! The most precious and grand power...to think that humans would be able to wield it!!" (Ates)

Earth, Water, Fire, Wind, and Light; by combining all those elements, what comes after is 'Darkness'.

The world was born from darkness to begin with.

That's why, if we were to put together everything that shapes this world, it will reach to the source that is darkness.

“If we hadn’t seen the beginning of the world, we wouldn’t have been able to arrive to this power.” (Karen)

“Controlling divine power comes from the image you have after all. Even if we were to mix five elements, if we can’t imagine something clear coming out of it, we wouldn’t have arrived at darkness!” (Mirack)

“We did see the darkness of Haine-chi a number of times, but with only that, we would brush it off as just a phenomenon. There’s no way we would be able to see through its true nature.” (Celestis)

“Seeing the beginning of the world, we learned about how darkness gave everything to the world-dasu!” (Sasae)

“It is exactly now that we have learned about how much the Dark God loved this world and its humans that we are able to use the darkness!” (Hyue)

Dark matter comes out from us at an ever greater pace.

By using this power, we can fight against Lucifer.

“Let’s go, everyone. Before Lucifer can finish the Black Hole, we will crush it with our darkness!!” (Karen)

“““Yes!!””” “-Dasu!”

A torrent of dark matter comes from our linked hands.

It was not inferior at all to the power that Haine-san normally wields.

The black matter of Lucifer was already about to turn into a Black Hole.

The gravity barrier it was creating was easily being negated by our dark matter wave, and got swallowed into the compressed core.

“Damn you!!” (Ates)

Ates’ shrilling voice was proof enough that this was a valid tactic.

“Swallowing all elements and erasing them; that’s the first property of dark matter!” (Karen)

Haine-san’s words.

“Just what would happen if dark matter clashes?!” (Karen)

“Wouldn’t this be the first time it has happened in history?” (Celestis)

Our dark matter against Lucifer’s dark matter.

“When a dark matter of a different party clashes, will they erase each other?!” (Karen)

“If that’s the case, then that’s fine! If we continue releasing dark matter, it would also mean that Lucifer won’t be able to add more dark matter to finish the Black Hole-de gozaru!” (Hyue)

It is just as Hyue-chan says.

For now, even if we are to drain ourselves, we have to continue releasing dark matter, and prevent Lucifer from finishing the Black Hole!

“If the Black Hole is finished, the world is done for! Think of this as us being in the brink of death and wring out all the strength you have!!” (Mirack)

Our darkness and Lucifer’s darkness.

The two darknesses are currently fighting each other, and it doesn’t look as if either side is in an advantage, but...

“Fools! Lucifer’s power is not only darkness!!” (Ates)

Ates had regained her composure.

“Lucifer is a perfect being that has obtained all elements. Moreover, its true essence is the Light Demon Lord! On top of that, the Light divine power is the only peerless way to defeat darkness!” (Ates)

“This is bad!” (Karen)

“With Lucifer’s light power, I will destroy your darkness!!” (Ates)

No good!

If it does that, we will be pushed aside in an instant!

But...Lucifer’s light attack didn’t come no matter how long we waited.

“?”

“...Tch! Can’t do it. The darkness of Lucifer and the light would be coming from the same source. If it were to release a different power, the Black Hole

Lucifer is forming would also be erased as well..." (Ates)

Darkness can't win against light.

Looks like that law is working even inside Lucifer.

And even if Ates were to use her light, at her range, it would simply be sucked into the Black Hole as well.

"The other four base elements as well can't be used while the dark power is activated?! Lucifer is supposed to be perfect, and yet, to think there was such a restriction to its powers...!" (Ates)

"It is because you got greedy and tried taking everything! You are definitely the type that would fail in a diet and get crazy fat instead!!" (Celestis)

The strongest power in the world; darkness.

The usage of it is, as expected, difficult.

"Ha! Then, it is just a matter of pushing by force!" (Ates)

Lucifer stopped being at a loss and puts its all in pouring dark matter.

"Guaaaaaa?!"

"Dasuuuuuuu!!"

The pressure we were receiving increased in an instant!!

"Even in a pure strength contest, it is impossible for a giant monster like Lucifer to lose against just five humans! Now then, let's wait until you people run out of steam!!" (Ates)

Isn't that the worse kind of situation?!

A giant monster and humans. Even if we were to just include the stamina, we are all just girls in our teens! We don't hold that much stamina in ourselves!

Our secret plan that's the dark matter, in the end, is only serving as buying time.

Moreover, once our stamina is gone, we will be one-sidedly pushed.

We have to think of a new plan, or things will just gradually worsen.

"...Can you please...leave it to me?" (Hyue)

Hyue-chan?

While continuing to release dark matter, Hyue-chan says this.

“If it goes well, we could break this stalemate. Of course, to our advantage. Can you please believe in me?” (Hyue)

“I will!” (Karen)

I answered immediately.

“Hyue-chan is a splendid wind hero after all! If Hyue-chan says she has a good idea, it will definitely go well! Isn’t that right?!” (Karen)

“Of course. There’s no ally I would trust as much with my back as Hyue after all!” (Mirack)

“In this party, Hyue-chi is the second most intelligent after me! I will be looking forward to what you bring out!!” (Celestis)

“I will leave it ta Hyue-neechan-dasu!!” (Sasae)

Mirack-chan, Celestis-chan, and Sasae-chan also quickly decided on trusting her.

Hyue-chan takes out some sort of cube embedded with what seems to be small jewels of different colors. Red, blue, yellow, green, and white.

“...Hngh!!” (Hyue)

Hyue-chan released a great amount of wind divine power as if hardening her resolve.

Then, she placed it at the hilt’s side and somehow it stuck onto it.

“This is a device that came about from researching the jewels and Lucifer itself. It is still a prototype, but it allows the same ability to change an element to other elements. The conversion rate is not that good yet and requires a lot of energy to bring it to a decent output. But as God Heroes, it is at an useable level.” (Hyue)

Hyue began explaining as she finishes what seemed to be her pouring divine power to it.

“Right now I have imbued as much wind divine power into the device as

possible-de gozaru. The sync with other people is only required in the beginning of the combination, so as long as the element is present, you can still continue releasing it. With this, the five element combination will continue for a while more, and the dark matter won't be cut off for now!" (Hyue)

"Meaning that, In that time, you will be settling your plan, right?" (Karen)

Hyue-chan silently nods, releases her hand, and flies off.

The individual enterprise of the Wind God Hero, Hyue-chan, was about to begin.

WR – Chapter 403-405: The Wind of Rebirth

Sponsored Chapters

“Uooooo!!”

Hyue-chan, who had become one with the wind after turning into a God Hero, was able to fly in the sky freely.

Like a rising dragon, she rushes up until she arrives at the back of Lucifer.

“If it is from here...!!” (Hyue)

Hyue-chan takes a stance with her sniping divine weapon that shoots through anything that’s in its aim.

“Hyue-nee-chan, do yer best-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“Time is limited! Don’t lose!!” (Celestis)

While we were using our combined strength to release dark matter, we were hoping for the turnaround from Hyue-chan.

Dark matter would normally require the release of our five elements.

Without Hyue-chan and just a temporary source that is continuously dissipating on its own, we won’t be able to maintain it for long.

But if we stand ground here, we can restrain Lucifer, and it can help out Hyue-chan.

We are still helping each other out.

“Do your best, Hyue-chan!!” (Karen)

Hyue-chan pulls the bolt of En No Ozuno, and sends a bullet into the chamber.

“Eh?!” (Karen)

And then, the shot is made, sending out sparks around it.

The bullet that was shot made a direct hit onto Lucifer's back, more accurately speaking, close to where the wind wings are.

The bullet digged deeply there.

"What are you doing? Are you an idiot?" (Ates)

Ates was simply ridiculing that action of hers.

"The giant body of Lucifer receiving a single pea shot of yours; just what would it bring about even if it were to hit? Humans really like useless things huh. I can't play along with all your games, so please just stop the useless struggle." (Ates) "You think so?" (Hyue)

Hyue-chan laughs boldly.

Ates still hadn't realized. But we were able to notice the abnormality.

"Wa?! Right now, Hyue just...!" (Mirack)

"Yeah, she certainly did...!" (Celestis)

She shot a real bullet, didn't she?!

"The Wind Long Gun is a weapon that shoots wind bullets mixed with divine power. Because it is air, it won't ever run out of bullets. Even though that's the strong point of the weapon...!!" (Karen) Hyue-chan deliberately shot an actual bullet.

In other words, that bullet must have something special.

"It may be vexing, but my sister-in-law Juo is the best scientist in the Wind Church." (Hyue) "?"

"Because of her work in creating Kukulkan, I am heavily indebted to her, but immediately after, I have already put a debt of equal weight on top of it. When we were retrieving the remains of Kukulkan, Juo retrieved a certain something as well." (Hyue) Could she be talking about...the armor of the gone Wind Demon Lord Raphael?

"I will say it once again. My sister-in-law is the best scientist. She detected the feeble remaining divine power inside the armor, and found a swarm of insects

that were maintaining their life in a dormant state. She said they were his remains that barely managed to survive.” (Hyue) “W-What is it you are trying to say here?” (Ates)

“The remains that should have disappeared if left alone, Aniue-sama shared his own divine power to him and resurrected it. Juo created a cultivation device for his exclusive use and concentrated in maintaining his living functions. And that small handful of cells we somehow managed to resurrect, I have shot them in the bullet just now!!” (Hyue) That’s what was the actual bullet just now?!

It is currently dug inside the body of Lucifer.

“This was apparently a method they thought of after observing the fight of Haine-dono and the Demon Lords against Lucifer. Lucifer’s body has his stolen wings. They are supposed to be the divine power conversion devices, right?! In order to change the bountiful light divine power of Lucifer into wind divine power!” (Hyue) “Don’t tell me...!!” (Ates)

“Even if he can’t revive on its own strength, the inside of Lucifer’s body is a treasury of divine power that can be changed into wind divine power!! Juo found him, Aniue gave him power, and I shot him! We desperately worked for this! That’s why, revive!!” (Hyue) “Wind Demon Lord, Raphael!!”

The flesh of the snake broke open.

A part of Lucifer’s body had been blown up from the inside, and a humanoid figure appeared from there.

I remember that figure.

That silhouette when he was in his full armor, it is truly that of one of the four Demon Lords.

Wind Demon Lord, Raphael.

The Demon Lord that was supposed to have burned out his life in the fight with Hyue-chan has once again appeared here?!

“Alright! Success!!” (Hyue)

Hyue-chan raised a cheer while floating in the sky.

“It was all as Juo planned. As expected of my sister-in-law! How vexing!!”

(Hyue) I don't know if she was proud of her sister-in-law or if she is dissing her. Be clear, Hyue-chan.

But she herself is probably conflicted about this.

"Ah... No way, that's impossible!!" (Ates)

Ates was the one who had her face pale the most at the revival of Raphael.

And, as if natural, the colorful butterfly wings disappear from the back of Lucifer.

"This is mine. It is a matter of course to return them." (Raphael) The tone of the revived Raphael was strong.

After having most of his body erased by Haine-san, he lost so much of his power that he couldn't maintain his body, but after taking away the divine power of Lucifer, he must have returned to his peak condition.

"But why are in your armor? If you are completely revived, shouldn't it be fine to be in your flesh?" (Hyue) Hyue-chan speaks frankly to him in mid-air.

"So nosy. I like this figure. My body has grown from its partially destroyed state, and it can't properly picture a grown state in its perfect condition. It instead reformed the armor as if it were what my body was originally as." (Raphael) "The form of the divine power is heavily influenced by the image of the individual itself. We have experienced that just now with the combined elemental dark matter, and yet, it is still hard to swallow..." (Hyue) "To think you people would be the ones who would save me." (Raphael) There was no happiness or anger in the voice of Raphael.

In the past, these two fought fiercely with their hatred in plate.

"We settled things in that fight. In that case, let's start from zero." (Hyue) "You and that Toreido Shiva guy... But, it won't be starting from zero." (Raphael) Raphael says with strength.

"My life was saved, so I am indebted to you people. For the sake of repaying that debt, I will have to defeat that big guy." (Raphael) "That fiend has your friends as well. From now on, we will be helping each other out!" (Hyue) "Hmph. To think Michael, Gabriel, and Uriel would get upped by an imbecile

monster like this that only has size going for it. Looks like I really have to be by their side!!" (Raphael) While throwing insults that had warmth in it, Raphael soars into the sky.

Hyue-chan also follows him.

There's now one pair less of wings in the six pairs of wings of Lucifer.

From now on, we are going to crush it further!

- 404: Humans and Demons together

"Release!" (Raphael)

The body of Raphael divided as if it had exploded?!

...No, that's not it. More accurately speaking, the parts of the full armor covering Raphael separated, and they were flying around individually?!

"Is that the special technique of Raphael that Hyue-chan was talking about?" (Karen) While keeping up the release of dark matter, we were looking at the battle from the ground.

"Why are you doing that again?! If your strength has been regained completely, you should just have a body inside your armor, you know?!" (Hyue) Hyue-chan throws a retort.

In the past, Raphael apparently used the armor to compensate for the mostly erased body of his.

"Isn't it obvious that it is because it is cool?! Also, I can do this...!" (Raphael) The armor parts surround Lucifer and were emitting something.

...I don't hear anything?

"?! Ultrasound?!" (Hyue)

Hyue-chan immediately strained her ears.

"! Okay! I have picked up the location where the people caught inside of Lucifer are-de gozaru!" (Hyue) I see!

In the time when we were fighting the giant monster named slime, we used ultrasound to check its inside and found the monster's core.

They did the same as that time!

Inside Lucifer, there's still the Demon Lords that have been engulfed and have had their powers robbed.

And Haine-san as well!

"Haine-dono is the one that is specially deep inside, and I don't think we will be able to get him out unless we completely cut off all functions in Lucifer!"

(Hyue) "Ates' attachment to Kuromiya Haine seems to be on an incomprehensible level after all. In that case, let's take each one out beginning from the closest one!" (Raphael) "Okay!" (Hyue)

Raphael released sound and Hyue-chan picked it up. The teamwork of hero and Demon Lord was already working perfectly.

The two of them were soaring the sky at high speed while facing Lucifer.

"Kuh, now that it has come to this, let's stop the creation of the Black Hole temporarily and...!" (Ates) Ates was trying to deal with Hyue-chan and Raphael!

"We won't let you!!" (Karen)

We increase the output of dark matter and push Lucifer.

"If you stop the creation of the Black Hole right now, Lucifer will be swallowed by our dark matter! I wonder how much divine power you would lose before you are able to neutralize it with light divine power!" (Karen) "Damn you, worms!!" (Ates)

We are stopping Ates and Lucifer.

In that time, Hyue-chan!

"The people that are caught are inside a cage created by their own divine power!" (Hyue) "Looks like it! In that case, the one we should release is...!" (Raphael) The separated armor of Raphael combines once again.

But that figure was not human. What is it?

"[Raphael Cannon]"

Wa?!

Raphael's armor turned into the shape of a big gun?!

“That ghost-like woman seems to have inputted a variety of things when she was extracting me. To think she would add such a function in me!” (Raphael)
“But right now it is necessary!” (Hyue)

Hyue-chan shoulders the Raphael-san turned into a cannon, and just like that, she takes aim?!

“The Raphael Cannon shoots a wind cannonball with Demon Lord level divine power. And on top of that, my God Hero divine power...!” (Hyue) A precise shot that holds the highest of firepowers.

“Wind Gun Technique [Tipping the Scales]!!” (Hyue)

An attack that would pierce the heavens dug right into Lucifer and exploded right on contact!

This attack easily shredded a chunk of Lucifer’s flesh.

“Kaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaah!!!” (Lucifer)

Lucifer writhes in pain.

The wind divine power had hit the area where the earth element was the most concentrated at.

In other words, the place that Hyue-chan had aimed was...

“Uooooo!!”

Breaking out from the part that had been softened by the wind attack, a wood human came flying out from inside of Lucifer.

The Earth Demon Lord Uriel-san has been released.

“Kuh! Another component has been...!” (Ates)

The earth wings began to disappear from the back of Lucifer.

With this, there’s four pairs remaining.

“Raphaeeeel!!” (Uriel)

And then, the released Uriel-san flew straight onto Raphael-san who had returned to humanoid form.

“Raphael, you were alive!! Uwaaaaaaah~!! Yahoooooo!!!” (Uriel)

“Uwaa?! What are you doing?! So disgusting!” (Raphael)

Raphael-san was shocked and amazed that he was being hugged.

Since he doesn't know how saddened his comrades were after he died, it can't be helped that he would be confused.

“Sorry, Raphael!! I won't look down on you ever again~!! I am truly glad you are alive~~!!” (Uriel) “Aaah, so noisy! We are in the middle of battle! Don't go hindering our guard! Or more like, so you guys really were looking down on me?!” (Raphael) It is truly great that Raphael-san has returned.

“Uriel-dono's return-dasu!” (Sasae)

And there's also one here who was happy about the return of someone.

The adult muchimuchi Sasae-chan.

“Can't stay here-dasu!! Karen-neechan! I will be going too-dasu yo!” (Sasae)
“Eh?!” (Karen)

“I will also be adding mah earth divine power in ya holy sword-dasu! Well then, I be leaving the rest to ya-dasu yo!” (Sasae) Saying this, Sasae-chan flew off.

“Uriel-dono, long time no see-dasu!” (Sasae)

“Hiiiih! Sasae-sama?!” (Uriel)

‘Sama’?!

“It is not what you think..... The reason why I was late in my return, you see... Right, Lucifer! That fiend is completely at fault! Because it ate me, you see!!” (Uriel) “That be of no importance-dasu yo! Right now, what be important be to fight-dasu!” (Sasae) “You say it doesn't matter, but...that in itself is saddening!” (Uriel) This grouping is also the same as always...

“In order to save the caught Demon Lords, there be the need fer the elements of the respective weakness-dasu! In that case, there be something we need ta do as well!” (Sasae) “Ah, yes! Right!” (Uriel)

“Save the Water Demon Lord, Gabriel-san-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“[Vanquishing Decapitation Slice]-dasu!!” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan used her big scythe and made an opening in the skin of Lucifer.

Ates could only look in anguish as her light divine power and Lucifer were basically sealed and pinned down by the dark matter of both sides.

It was truly ironical.

From the cut Sasae made, the flowing body of someone jumps out from it like a fish out of the water.

“Nice! Gabriel is out as well!!” (Celestis)

Reviving Raphael served like a landslide. After he was brought back, a Demon Lord after another was being freed with the cooperation of the God hero and Demon Lord.

Celestis-chan raised a cheer as she gets closer to me with her hand still linked and releasing dark matter.

And the Gabriel-san in question...!

“Uwaaaaa~~~!! Raphaeeeel!!” (Gabriel)

“YOU TOO?!” (Raphael)

As expected, she jumped right onto Raphael-san while crying.

“Sorry~! Sorry for not noticing your worries~~!! I won’t make that mistake again! Let’s be friends forever~~!!” (Gabriel) “Aargh, get your hands off me!! Didn’t the Demon Lords have a much more of a dry relationship with each other?!” (Raphael) No, it is already more wet than you could ever wish for.

“A damp relationship is just about right!” (Celestis)

Celestis-chan soars.

“This time, it is my turn! I have already added my divine power to your holy sword, so I leave the rest to you~!!” (Celestis) “Ah! Celestis-chan?!” (Karen)

Celestis-chan left as if she were just throwing the job onto me!

This doesn’t look as easy as it seems, you know! I am already drenched here! I might as well be the Water God Hero instead!

“Gabriel! Sorry for interrupting your emotional moment there, but I will have you work right away! We are going to save the last one!!” (Celestis)

“Understood, Celestis! We have to get the leader out or we won’t have any sort of order here after all!!” (Gabriel) The two water element users released high pressure water from both of their hands as if they had planned it before, and just like that, they spin their bodies.

““[Water Beheading Technique – Dragon Dance]!!”” (Celestis+Gabriel)

“Kaaaaaaaaah!!” (Lucifer)

Lucifer once again raises a cry of pain.

She had received instructions of the place she should aim beforehand by Hyue-chan.

Destroying the cage made of fire divine power with water divine power, the one inside is liberated.

A big body that felt as if he was shouldering all the anguishes in this world, as if he had crawled back from hell itself...the Fire Demon Lord Michael returns.

“Michael~!” (Uriel)

“Great! With this, all the Demon Lords are back!” (Raphael)

“The Demon Lords really do need the four gathered or it simply won’t be fun!!” (Gabriel) The same time as the four winged ones return to the sky, four pair of wings had decreased from the back of Lucifer.

Light and Darkness.

There’s only those two remaining.

“Damn you...! Damn you...!! Even though you are just mere parts, even though you are just puzzle pieces...!!” (Ates) Ates’ expression had dyed bright red in anger.

“...Karen, I leave the rest to you.” (Mirack)

“Eh?! Mirack-chan?!” (Karen)

Finally, even Mirack-chan entrusted me her fire divine power and left.

And then, flies off to the Fire Demon Lord that has just returned.

I am barely holding on here though! It is pretty exhausting to do the share of all 4 people with a device I don't even know that well!

"Michael!" (Mirack)

"Fire hero, Mirack! Right now, Lucifer is the enemy of everyone living in this world. If we don't put an end to it, there's no future for this world!" (Michael)

"Yeah. That's why we are gonna punch him! Both you and me!!" (Mirack) A blazing flame came from both of their hands.

"[Phoenix Hammer]!!" (Michael)

"[Pleiades Burst]!!" (Mirack)

An attack that felt as if it had thrown us at the center of the planet had been released from the Fire God Hero and the Fire Demon Lord.

This is the pair that has fought the earliest in the hero and Demon Lord battles, and also the ones that have been together the longest.

This attack hits Lucifer directly and sends it flying.

"Gaaaaaaaaah!!" (Lucifer)

Because of the impact of that attack, Lucifer had no leeway to continue pouring divine power to the Black Hole!

Okay, now!!

"I will destroy this stalemate!" (Karen)

The divine power that I received from Hyue-chan, Sasae-chan, Celestis-chan, and Mirack-chan still have reserves inside of my holy sword left.

Before it runs out, I will use all the dark power and...!!

"Holy sword, Saint-George! Light sword! With all the hope of everyone gathered, release the sacred darkness!!" (Karen) The holy sword was clad in darkness it had never shown before.

This darkness is the materialization of our wish to protect this world.

There's no good or evil between light and darkness.

The one that decides what's good or bad is the heart that resides in it after all.

“Darkness sword, Bisection!!” (Karen)

The stretched darkness blade hits the Black Hole that Lucifer was creating, immediately slices it in two, and it breaks to pieces.

With that one attack, the divine power that was left from everyone had been used up, the device itself broke, and it returned to being purely a light sword.

“Hah...Hah...!” (Karen)

It took my all to stop the Black Hole that would destroy the world, and yet, it couldn't reach the body of Lucifer, but...because of the many attacks that the God Heroes and the Demon Lords did, the giant body was already tattered.

The six pair of wings were now only two.

If we exclude the light wings that were originally there, there's only the dark wings it gained from absorbing Haine-san.

“...We have cornered it. The Great Demon Lord Lucifer.” (Karen)

And the puppeteer, Ates.

WR – Chapter 406-407: Four Gods at the side

Sponsored Chapters

“This is your lost.” (Karen)

I said this to the already wrecked Lucifer and Ates who is sticking to it.

Around her, there’s my comrade God Heroes and the Demon Lord-sans; a total of eight.

We were surrounding her so that we won’t let any weird movement escape.

“Now that Lucifer has lost most of its wings and it is in a beaten up state, you don’t have a method to go against us all. Please give up obediently and free Haine-san.” (Karen)

“Fufufufu! How foolish can humans be? Thinking that with just this you have won.” (Ates)

Could it be that we will never be able to reach an understanding with this person?

“It is true that Lucifer has lost four pairs of its wings. And what of it?! The power of the wings is more about quality than quantity. What you guys regained were basically trash of wings!” (Ates)

“What did you say?!” (Michael)

“What’s with that after forcefully stealing them from us?!” (Gabriel)

The Demon Lord-sans that were direct victims of it were angered to the extreme.

“The strength of the four Base Elements is trash compared to the two Poles that are light and darkness. Lucifer still has light and darkness remaining! As long as I have those, you people are basically rubbish!!” (Ates)

Lucifer slowly gets up, and spreads out its dark wings.

The dark power that swallows everything and erases it.

“Now, Lucifer! Use your invincible dark power to crush the foolish! And after that, absorbs the parts again and become completed once more!” (Ates)

!!

So she really wants to continue fighting!

Tension began to run through the whole place, but then...!

“Guuh!” (Lucifer)

Lucifer suddenly stopped moving.

“?! What’s the matter, Lucifer?! Move! Move and kill them all right this instant! Are you going to mess up my plans as well?! You incompetent tool!!” (Ates)

Even though Lucifer was receiving abuse from its creator, it didn’t move.

Rather, it trembled as if in pain, and then, finally, a clear movement occurred.

A large number of pitch black somethings were coming out from the mouth of Lucifer.

“Wa?!”

I could tell at a glance that this was abnormal.

It isn’t just from its mouth. Its eyes, nose, ears; not only that, even from the wounds that were made from our many attacks were spewing out those black things.

“What’s the matter, Lucifer?! Stand! Stand and fight!!” (Ates)

There’s no way it can do that.

In time, Lucifer didn’t just gush them out, but also began to shine from its whole body.

“What’s going on?! Why does every single one of you not move as I wish?! That’s why I say all the people born in this world are trash! No one is of use!!” (Ates)

Ates was raising a shrilling voice as she grieves her own misfortune.

We didn't know what to do and could only watch over this.

"The reason nothing goes the way you want is because..."

"?!"

There, a majestic and dignified voice pitches in.

"You don't love anyone, Ates-san."

"Yorishiro?!" (Ates)

Yorishiro-sama?!

Why is she here?!

"You don't love anyone. That's why no one can love you. Sadly, there's no one who would want to do anything for someone they don't like." (Yorishiro)

"What are you coming all nonchalantly at this point of the battle? Did you come here after knowing that you are riding a winning horse?!" (Ates)

"Yeah. You are already done for." (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama calmly said this.

It was calm, but the pressure that came from that voice silenced not only us heroes, but even the Demon Lords.

"I was always wondering this. Why is it that darkness can't win against light?" (Yorishiro)

"?!"

"Darkness is the origin of this world and the strongest of powers. Is it possible for it to hold a weakness? Is it possible to have a supremacy that has a weakness?" (Yorishiro)

"What is it you are trying to say?!" (Ates)

"The law of 'darkness can't win against light' was something that the Dark God himself created." (Yorishiro)

What does that mean?

Meaning that the Dark God made a rule that would harm his own invincibility?

“There’s no one who loves this world more than the Dark God Entropy. It is exactly because he is like that that an absolute existence wasn’t allowed to exist in this world. Not even himself. Because an absolute existence would surely break the balance of the world and would hinder progress.” (Yorishiro)

“?! That’s why he...?!” (Ates)

That’s why he created the light that counteracted him?

By deliberately creating an element that can get the better of him, he formed a balance in the name of the two Poles, and in that space, he was able to create the colors that were the four Base Elements.

“Light... That’s the very kindness that the darkness created. And yet, you didn’t understand that kindness and absorbed that darkness along with that personage himself. At that moment, the darkness lost its God’s love.”
(Yorishiro)

“?!”

“Your selfish heart has been projected into the darkness.” (Yorishiro)

A darkness that has lost its God’s love would not forgive the existence of an antithesis like light.

A rivalry between light and darkness was occurring inside Lucifer’s body.

Unable to endure that clash, Lucifer is beginning to collapse internally?!

“It might have managed somehow if the absorbed four Base Elements served as interims, but now that you have lost the Demon Lords, it has lost anything to block its way and the collapse increased in speed at once.” (Yorishiro)

“What?!” (Ates)

“Lucifer will most likely be erased completely beforelong. Your plans have collapsed completely, Ates-san.” (Yorishiro)

At the side of Yorishiro-sama and Ates glaring at each other, Lucifer was writhing in pain even now.

She didn't even show pity at the Lucifer she herself created and simply clicked her tongue.

“Fine. I will admit defeat this time.” (Ates)

Ates declared.

“But this is not a definite lost. Even if I have been defeated today, I as a God have basically close to eternal time. I will form a plan from zero, and will someday come back again. And then, at that time, I will make reality a perfect world where only him and I exist!” (Ates)

?!
Ates’ body is being enveloped in light?!
Don’t tell me she is planning on escaping!
“That won’t happen.” (Yorishiro)
“Wa?!”
Ates seemed like she was about to disappear inside the light, but she was caught by something and pulled back?!
She failed in escaping.
“You asked why I nonchalantly came at this point of the battle, right? You made a question, and yet, you were going to leave without hearing the answer. What a rude person.” (Yorishiro)
“What’s this?!” (Ates)
“Let me answer. I came because preparations were completed. Preparations to make it so you definitely can’t escape.” (Yorishiro)
Yorishiro-sama clearly spoke.
“Right now, this whole area has the four Base Elements making a barrier. You, as the incarnation of the Light Goddess, won’t be able to break through that barrier. Light can’t win against the four Base Elements when they join forces. That is also a rule set in this world by the King of Gods.” (Yorishiro)

- 407: Darkness suicide

(Good grief, that Goddess gives rough treatment to us Gods!) (Nova)

(Isn't that fine? This is a fight that will decide the fate of the world. I instead feel as if just this much help doesn't feel like enough.) (Coacervate)

(I can't disobey the orders of Inflation-san~.) (Mantle)

(...)

Nova, Coacervate, Mantle, and Quasar; the Gods that rule over the four Base Elements were divided in every direction, and were forming a barrier.

In order to not let the main culprit of this incident, the evil Light Goddess, escape. Their role is incredibly important.

(This battle is a battle to show the growth of humans.) (Quasar)

The Wind God, who is the sole one that has incarnated as a human in this group, says this.

(The humans have already escaped from the control of the Gods and have become living beings that can overcome any difficulties on their own. This is also a battle to show this. That's why we Gods intrude in it. This much support is plenty enough.) (Quasar)

(But Quasar-san, is it okay for you to be using that much power?)
(Coacervate)

The Water God asks.

(Your human body was partially destroyed because of the battle with a Demon Lord, and shouldn't be able to endure heavy outputs of divine power. To deploy a big barrier in that state is just...) (Coacervate)

(You are really thoughtful there. Your distilled state really throws me off.)
(Quasar)

The Water God wasn't given the due respect even when he was being considerate.

(...There's no problem. Juo tinkered with my body. So that using my power as a God won't put a burden to my human body.) (Quasar) <Please nerf Juo.>

(Is that possible?!?) (Coacervate)

(It was apparently a byproduct of when she was researching to revive Raphael though. She truly is a genius.) (Quasar)

(But...that means...) (Coacervate)

Coacervate notices the implication.

(Quasar, did you tell your identity to your wife?) (Coacervate)

(Yeah, before leaving to this battle.) (Quasar)

Not only to his wife, but also to his little sister.

(I didn't feel like keeping anymore secrets to my family, you see.) (Quasar)

The trigger to reveal his identity as a God to his important people was the death of Raphael.

Shiva, who holds two identities as a God and a human, didn't want to neglect one side by putting a label of which one was more important.

(I was anxious thinking that maybe they would see me as a guy with problems in his head, but the two of them accepted me. Looks like the trouble that you people have been causing lately has served as my groundwork.) (Quasar)

Thanks to that, he was able to cooperate with Juo in order to revive Raphael. And Hyue was also able to easily accept turning into a God Hero.

(From now on, I will be living seriously as both the Wind God Quasar as well as the human Toreido Shiva. For the sake of that, I have to pull out the calamity here.) (Quasar)

(Meaning that you have completely graduated from causing trouble to people on the whim of a God huh. I deeply agree with it!) (Coacervate)

(When you say it, it is incredibly hard to accept though!) (Quasar)

(I think it is fine~.) (Mantle)

The Gods poured more and more divine power and strengthened the barrier.

In the past, they belittled the humans, and even sealed the Dark God, but after 1,600 years, each of them have respectively settled their connections with the humans.

Now, the only ones left who haven't settled that connection are...the Light and the Darkness.

"Uguah!!" (Ates)

Ates was about to disappear into the light but was pushed back by something?!

We heroes and Demon Lords couldn't do anything but watch over it.

"You can't even escape anymore. Evil Light Goddess. The calamity that you tried to bring upon this world, I will put an end to it." (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama says as if bringing down the judgment.

Lucifer was already tattered and unable to move. I don't think Ates has any way of winning anymore.

The madness of the wicked Goddess has come to an end here.

"Ates, I will seal you." (Yorishiro)

She says cold-heartedly.

"Just like how the Dark God was sealed in the past. We are talking about you who has a weaker divine power compared to him, so even if the seal is going to be destroyed with time, it will most likely take several thousands of years. Be isolated for a close to an eternity." (Yorishiro)

"What's...with those eyes?!" (Ates)

The voice filled with hatred from Ates reverberated.

That was a voice I wouldn't believe is coming from a Goddess. It was already to a point I would only think of it as a vengeful ghost.

"Are you looking down on me?! Even though you are me, you are planning on pushing all the ugly parts of you on me and leave yourself as the clean part?! You hypocrite!" (Ates)

"...?"

We heroes and Demon Lords that were cautious for any movement slightly

further back were tilting their heads.

“Are you saying you are the only one who has the rights of being loved by that person?! No! The only one that’s allowed to be loved by him is me! Me who would go as far as destroying the world for his sake! I am the only one!!” (Ates)

“You are me’?!”

“Could it be...!”

The agitation that was spreading in the surroundings was taken advantage of by Ates.

“Fine. Now that it has come to this, I won’t be able to achieve my objective. I admit it! ...But!” (Ates)

Ates runs off.

Even though we were plenty on guard, we were unable to take immediate action.

Because the direction Ates was running to was the direction we thought she would definitely not be running away from.

To the one that is squirming in its light and spewing out darkness -to where Lucifer is!

“Impossible! If she runs off there...!” (Karen)

“She would be bathed by the darkness that Lucifer is gushing out!!” (Mirack)

If what Lucifer is spewing out is dark matter itself...!

There’s no way a living being would be able to resist something like that if it were to touch them!

“Kyaaaaaaa!!” (Ates)

And that’s what happened.

Ates had run inside the darkness that had spread like a pond, and it was basically like jumping inside an ocean of acid.

The smell of burning flesh was wafting along with the smoke it was making.

Right now, that dark matter had no restraint. It is a different kind of dark

matter from what Haine-san usually uses.

It is hard to describe, but it felt as if it lacked emotions. As if it were just mindlessly devouring without a care of what it is.

“Gyaaaaaaaaa!!! Aaaaaaahh!!” (Ates)

“What a stupid thing to do! I will save you right this—!” (Karen)

“Wait, Karen-san!!” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama grabbed my arm as I was about to run to her.

“It is already too late! If you go now, even you would be swallowed by that darkness!!” (Yorishiro)

No way...

What was Ates trying to do by jumping into something like that?!

After seeing that her wish wouldn't be granted...!

Suicide?!

“I won't die by myself!!” (Ates)

“?!”

“This world...! This world that robbed me from my love, I will bring it down with me!! I will make this world pay for the sins it has perpetrated!! Even if my wish of being together forever with my beloved has been severed...!! This world alone, I will...!!” (Ates)

...?!!

A sound like that of an earthquake...!

From Lucifer?!

“Ates...you...!!” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama seemed to be flustered.

“She used her last authority as the creator of Lucifer to make the light of that monster go into a rampage. If it is the darkness that has lost its love and is clashing with the light, it will definitely try to match the rampaging light as well!!” (Yorishiro)

"What in the world have you done?!" (Karen)

"I don't know if this is enough to destroy the world, but it should cause severe damage to it! At least, it should wipe out the present humans! Please fulfill my last wish! Lucifer!!" (Ates)

Ates grins...in the embrace of a darkness that isn't seeing her at all.

WR – Chapter 408-409: Joining forces

“Kyahahahahahahaha! Disappear world!! A world that brings me and him apart should just disappear!! Kyahahahahaha!!” (Ates)

Ates was the one to be swallowed first by the darkness and disappeared from sight as she spread out a maddened laugh.

Not even a single strand of hair was left. Sunnysol Ates was completely erased.

“.....”

But we didn't have the leisure of offering our condolences to her.

Because we all might be following after her if we don't do something.

“Wait, the black thing that big guy is gushing out! It doesn't show any signs of stopping! Rather, it is increasing in speed!!” (Celestis)

“Don't even try to touch it! That dark matter is like a super fiendish version of itself that doesn't only erase divine power but also matter!!” (Mirack)

“If something like that be gushed out without limit, the world would perish-dasu!!” (Sasae)

The partially destroyed Lucifer has already turned into a sprinkler that spouts out dark matter.

Divine power and matter were being swallowed widely and erased.

Mirack-chan and the others in the surroundings were on guard as they witnessed that dark matter and were astonished.

The end of the world.

Since coming here, finally, we were feeling that danger in our skins.

“[Holy Light Line]!” (Karen)

I released light divine power to the dark matter.

Normal dark divine power can't defeat light, so this should erase the darkness, but...

Bakin!

The light was repelled by the darkness.

"Don't, Karen-san!!" (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro got angry at me.

"The dark divine power that is being gushed out via Lucifer is darkness that has lost the love of Entropy! It has lost the tolerance of 'losing against light' and has turned into the ultimate malice!!" (Yorishiro)

And the light that served as its antithesis is now acting as a fuel that increases their force by clashing with each other.

Until now, light had been like water that extinguishes fire for the darkness. But now, it has turned into oil.

"And most of all, what's worse is that...!" (Yorishiro)

If light doesn't work, just what in the world can we do to stop this darkness?!

"What do we do?! At this rate, the world will really be swallowed by a darkness that no one can stop!!" (Mirack)

"Lucifer itself is also being burned by that loveless darkness. When it reaches its limit, Lucifer will disintegrate and the darkness should naturally stop!" (Yorishiro)

If we wait for that...!

"We can't!" (Michael)

Michael joins the emergency meeting.

"Even if that guy is different, it is still the strongest class of monster that holds the title of Demon Lord. On top of that, it has a humongous body. Leaving aside maintaining its life, if it is just maintaining its body, it should be able to endure for quite a long time the clash of light and darkness!" (Michael)

“To the point that it would turn into a competition of whether the world or Lucifer will be dying first.” (Raphael)

Raphael joins in.

Everyone was trying to go against what is literally a threat to the world.

“In that case, we have to act right this instant and stop that gushing of darkness as fast as possible!” (Yorishiro)

“But how?!” (Karen)

“That’s obvious!” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama raises a voice filled with resolve.

“There’s no doubt that the source of that darkness is Haine-san who is trapped deep inside Lucifer. We will break into the body of Lucifer and save Haine-san.” (Yorishiro)

“?!”

“If we sever the link Lucifer has with Haine-san, it should stop the gushing of darkness.” (Yorishiro)

“But Yorishiro-sama...!” (Karen)

Who would do something like that?!

Jumping into the inside of Lucifer and digging out Haine-san would be the act of a daredevil!!

“Right now, Lucifer is a literal mass of fiendish darkness! Entering Lucifer would mean that you would have to touch that darkness. That person would be erased without even reaching the count of ten!!” (Karen)

“I will go.” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama stepped forward.

“I will save Haine-san even if at the cost of my life. I will stop that loveless darkness.” (Yorishiro)

“Yorishiro-sama?!” (Karen)

Could it be that she is looking for death?!

“Karen-san, I leave the rest to you. The Light Church, Haine-san, and Doraha as well. If they are in your hands, I would have nothing to worry about.”
(Yorishiro)

I desperately tried to stop Yorishiro-sama.

The darkness was already spreading close to our feet, but even with this hurry, I can't let this person go!

“Yorishiro-sama, don't treat your life lightly! Haine-san wouldn't want Yorishiro-sama to sacrifice herself!!” (Karen)

“This is not only for the sake of Haine-san. The fate of this whole world is at stake. If that's the case, Haine-san will definitely understand.” (Yorishiro)

“But—!!” (Karen)

“Karen-san!” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama looked straight at me.

Yorishiro-sama should be young and beautiful, and yet, for some reason, her expression looked like that of an old lady that had expended her whole life.

“I have to take responsibility. The sins I have done in the long long path I have walked on, I have to atone for all of them right now.” (Yorishiro)

“.....What do you mean by that?” (Karen)

I could feel a prickle inside my heart when I heard that voice of hers. Even without hearing those sins she speaks of, the pain of it was already reaching my heart.

“It is okay for you to not know. It is something that you shouldn't know. Please let me go without asking anything.” (Yorishiro)

“No, I already know.” (Karen)

I finally was unable to hold it in and spoke out.

“Yorishiro-sama! You are the Light Goddess Inflation! You are also Inflation-sama!” (Karen)

My words stirred the surroundings.

"In the Underworld Country, we saw that the Light Goddess was split into good and evil." (Celestis)

"If Ates is the evil Inflation...!" (Mirack)

"Yorishiro-sama should be the good Inflation-dasu!" (Sasae)

Yorishiro-sama kept silent when I said that, but she soon spoke again.

"...As I thought. But, since when?" (Yorishiro)

"I had my suspicions before that, but it turned into certainty when I heard it - the conversation Yorishiro-sama had with Haine-san!" (Karen)

It was right after Apollon City had welcomed the Demon Lords.

I ended up eavesdropping from the door at the conversation of Haine-san and Yorishiro-sama.

And there, I certainly did hear it.

Yorishiro-sama is the incarnation of the Light Goddess.

And that Haine-san is the incarnation of the Dark God Entropy.

"Because Yorishiro-sama was cautious of anyone eavesdropping, you were speaking in soul transmission. But for some reason, I was able to hear it!" (Karen)

"...Is that so. For the sake of turning you people into God Heroes, we opened up the channel between us Gods. Because of its influence, you were able to pick up the soul waves coming from us Gods huh." (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama lets out a sigh as if in resignation.

"Then you should understand, right? Ates is me. Ates' sins are my sins. To atone for those sins as well as my own ones, I have to save Haine-san." (Yorishiro)

"Wrong! Ates was the bad one! Yorishiro-sama did nothing wrong!" (Karen)

Yorishiro-sama treasured the humans as the Light Goddess.

She provided humans with culture as the queen Izanami, punished the other Gods that obstructed this, and by creating ethereal, she pushed the progress of

humans.

Even when she became Yorishiro-sama, she helped out the humans from a variety of dangers!

And yet...

“I like Yorishiro-sama! That’s why, please don’t just leave like that! I don’t want Yorishiro-sama or Haine-san to disappear from my side!!” (Karen)

“Karen-san...” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama stands there absentminded.

Even so, I understand.

The cruel reality that, even if I were to stop Yorishiro-sama here, the situation will only continue to worsen.

Is it too idealistic to want to save the world without the need to sacrifice anyone?!

(Well said!!)

Eh?

What was that voice just now?!

(Not sacrificing anyone! No matter how precarious the situation, you will try to overcome everything without paying a price!!)

“Oi, this voice...!” (Mirack)

“Lucifer?!” (Karen)

“Lucifer spoke?!” (Celestis)

That voice certainly came from Lucifer who was already at the point where his shape was warping.

Different from the other Demon Lord-sans, Lucifer should just be a giant monster with no intelligence.

Even though it hasn’t spoken a single thing until now that could be described as words...

“No, could it be that this voice is...!” (Yorishiro)

“Yorishiro-sama, did you notice something?!” (Karen)

“This tone, this way of speaking; even if it is being spoken from a different mouth, there’s no way to mistake it!” (Yorishiro)

?!

No way, this is...!

“Haine-san?!” (Karen)

Haine-san is using Lucifer to speak with us?!

- 409: The love of the darkness

(Thanks to you all cornering Lucifer, the path was finally connected.) (Haine)

Is what Haine-san said through the mouth of Lucifer.

“Haine-san! You were alright then!” (Karen)

(Yeah, somehow! That voice must be from Karen-san, right? Great, looks like the sense of hearing also connected!) (Haine)

What a relief! Haine-san is okay!!

“Eh? Then Haine-dono is the Dark God Entropy-sama?!” (Hyue)

“Read the mood.” (Celestis)

Everyone is getting flustered, but at any rate, this is great!

“Haine-san!” (Yorishiro)

(Yorishiro, huh?) (Haine)

Within us, Yorishiro-sama was the one who regained her calm the fastest.

“If you are using Lucifer to speak, it must mean that you are controlling the nervous system of Lucifer with your dark matter, right?” (Yorishiro)

(Yeah, just recently. Thanks to the damage dealt to Lucifer, the restraint loosened. But I can’t escape. The light divine power in the surroundings is eliminating the dark matter!) (Haine)

I see...!

Lucifer is in nature the Light Demon Lord.

The darkness of Haine-san is different from the darkness that is rampaging via Lucifer.

The darkness that Haine-san has proper control of is darkness that has the restriction of 'losing against light' that came from his love to the world.

"Haine-san, right now, Lucifer is making the darkness it absorbed from you go berserk and spreading it to its surroundings! At this rate, the whole world will be covered with the loveless darkness!" (Yorishiro)

(Loveless darkness, you say?! What is that?!) (Haine)

"Can't you sever the connection it has with the darkness from your side?! Right now, you are the very source of the world's danger, you know?!" (Yorishiro)

(...Even if you tell me that... No good. That Ates, it looks like she paid special attention in creating the area I am in. No matter what I try, I can't get out. I can't stop the extraction of darkness either. The most I can do is connecting with its senses!) (Haine)

For Ates, the most important part was the cell of Haine-san.

It would be obvious that she would do her very best so that he doesn't escape!

(Sorry everyone but, please lend me a hand!) (Haine)

"As in?!" (Yorishiro)

(Lucifer is not only making the darkness go berserk, it is doing the same to the light as well!) (Haine)

Well, it is the Light Demon Lord after all!

Right now, inside of Lucifer, the light and darkness are making a chaos as they rampage.

And the light part inside of it is conveniently sealing Haine-san.

(Please remove that light divine power by attacking it from the outside!) (Haine)

“How can we do that...?” (Karen)

“It is possible.” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama moved on.

“It is impossible to eliminate dark divine power with other elements, but if it is to eliminate light divine power, it is possible to do so by hitting it with other elements. Even if light does have an advantage against all elements, it is far inferior to that of darkness!” (Yorishiro)

So if we were to hit the light with all the elements here, we have plenty enough chance to break it?!

But right now, the area where Haine-san is, is covered with darkness. It is pretty easy to spot as the light pushing out the darkness is especially strong there.

“But we have to do something about the darkness around first!” (Karen)

“I will do it! The darkness might be reacting adversely to the contact of light, but it doesn’t mean it is completely immune to it. I will use all my light divine power to open up a path! In that moment, shoot in everything you got and break Haine-san free!” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama’s eyes were shining with resolve. I could tell that she is planning on using her everything to assist us.

I nod at Yorishiro-sama and return a strong gaze.

(If the light that is hindering me disappears, I can get out of here and deal with the darkness. In the end, only darkness can control darkness after all!!!)
(Haine)

“Understood!” (Karen)

I am brimming with energy!

“Everyone! This will be the last all out attack! Let’s destroy the light of Lucifer and save Haine-san!!” (Karen)

“Yaaaaah!!” “-Dasu!!”

The Demon Lords and the God Heroes raised a roar without caring about their

their standings and race as they rush forward.

This is the time to overcome everything and have everyone's heart as one.

Let's regain the treasured peace in the world!!

"Be ready!!" (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama began to channel her divine power into her hands. A massive amount of dazzling light shines, and then, begins to take form.

"[Sacred Light Palms]!!" (Yorishiro)

Two gigantic light hands appear and grab an area of the darkness. The fingers tried to pry open the darkness, but the darkness seemed to be showing much more resistance than expected.

"Please open!!" (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama shouted as if pleading.

The hands began to shine an even stronger light and the darkness began to give way.

Before long, a small opening was made, and from it, light began to gush out of it. It was like a path of light.

That small opening steadily became bigger and bigger, and...

"Now!!" (Yorishiro)

With that one shout, everyone immediately jumped into action with their already prepared attacks.

First, me!

"[Holy Light Blade]!!" (Karen)

Next, the fire pair of Mirack-chan and Michael.

"[Pleiades Burst]!!" (Mirack)

"[Phoenix Hammer]!!" (Michael)

Celestis-chan and Gabriel came in like a stream.

““Double [Water Beheading Technique – Dragon Dance]!!”” (Celestis+Gabriel)

Sasae-chan and Uriel with matching breaths.

“[Slaughter Severing Slash]-dasu!” (Sasae)

“Gyaa! Don’t go cutting my arm as well!! [Forbidden Dry Dhyana]!!” (Uriel)

Hyue-chan and Raphael were literally one.

“[Raphael Cannon]! We are going for another shot!” (Raphael)

“Understood! Wind Gun Technique, [Tipping the Scales]!!” (Hyue)

Light, fire, water, earth, and wind weaved into the opening of the darkness Yorishiro-sama created and exploded first in the gushing out light and quickly destroying the light divine power deeper in it.

The more light divine power goes away, the more Haine-san can do.

“The ones who will save this world from danger are the humans and monsters huh.” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama spoke a little back from where we are.

“That’s how it should be. This world is already for them both. I will just act as one of the people living in this world!” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama shouts as the hands increase in strength.

With this many Demon Lord and God Hero level attacks, most of the light divine power of Lucifer must have been eliminated.

And yet, it is way too scary that the dark divine power around isn’t showing any signs of appeasing.

“Or more like, it is flying around! The impact of the attacks is making the darkness scatter around!!” (Karen)

“A bit can’t be helped! We have to solve this before the darkness covers the whole world!!” (Michael)

We continue the barrage of attacks, scraping away on the light divine power, and finally, managed to reach all the way to the skin.

In all that time, Yorishiro-sama’s light palms were receiving the shockwaves of those heavily powered attacks, but they were enduring steadfast as if saying

they won't budge.

Soon, the attacks stopped and the light hands were already gone.

With this, Haine-san should have been freed of his bindings!

Even if we have blown away the light divine power, there's still a massive amount of darkness remaining, so we can't go save him directly.

Please escape quickly, Haine-san.

(.....)

The darkness suddenly stopped gushing out.

Not only that... The dark matter that was already out was returning to Lucifer? It is being absorbed?!

"Warmth...returned to the darkness." (Yorishiro)

"Eh? What do you mean by that, Yorishiro-sama?" (Karen)

Because the darkness was being used by Lucifer -or more like, Ates-the love of the darkness was gone, and even the weakness that's supposed to be 'weak against light' was gone, and turned into a mindless danger that threatened to destroy the world.

"The darkness right now is different. I can feel the same kindness of Haine-san from the darkness that Lucifer is releasing..." (Yorishiro)

(Because I remade it.) (Haine)

Lucifer spoke again —well, more like, Haine-san did.

(Using the opening created from the partially destroyed body, and the reduction of light divine power, I took over its body by synchronizing with the dark matter coursing in its body. Right now, this guy is not the Light Demon Lord anymore.) (Haine)

To put it in other words...

(It is the Dark Demon Lord, Satan.) (Haine)

WR – Chapter 410-411: Dark Demon Lord

The danger of the darkness stopped as sudden as it came.

Thanks to the Light Demon Lord Lucifer turning into the Dark Demon Lord Satan, the dark matter that was about to cover the whole world was possible to control.

The fiendish dark matter had returned to simple dark matter and was being retrieved by the body of Satan.

“There we go...”

And then, after everything was over, a single man came out from the mouth of Lucifer’s giant body -I mean, Satan.

“Haine-san!” (Karen)

I unconsciously ran towards him and hugged him.

Without minding about the public gaze.

“Haine!” “Haine-chi!” “Haine-oniichan!” “Haine-dono!”

The others were also rushing one after the other.

Of course, Yorishiro-sama as well...

“Haine-san, good work.” (Yorishiro)

“No, the ones who did a good work were you all. Everyone did their best and managed to save the world.” (Haine) It felt as if their words were reaching directly to our hearts.

Should I say as expected of the Light and Dark God here?

“Kuromiya Haine!” (Michael)

The Demon Lords came down from the sky one after the other as well, but their expressions were that of uneasiness.

“What happened to Lucifer? This is...” (Michael)

It caused us quite a lot of trouble, and even made the light and darkness inside itself go into a rampage, but now, it is practically as good as new now.

It is a size smaller than that of the Light Demon Lord, and its body gave out a black lustre as if it had been varnished, not showing a single wound on itself.

“Right now he is the Dark Demon Lord, Satan.” (Haine)

Haine-san said.

“Looks like that Ates has abandoned her control rights of Lucifer, so taking advantage of that opening left, I took over and changed him. In order to make the dark matter spreading around harmless.” (Haine) “Was there a need to go through such lengths?” (Raphael)

Raphael bites on.

“Eh? Raphael? Weren’t you dead?” (Haine)

“That’s of no importance right now. You should have been able to control the rampaging dark matter yourself, or eliminate it completely! And yet, why did you go through such troublesome lengths?” (Raphael) “Because I couldn’t endure it, maybe?” (Haine)

Haine-san silently looked up at Lucifer.

“If it were in the past, I would have erased it without any hesitation. But after fighting you Demon Lords, I have learned that you Demon Lords also have a life, also have a heart. It is because I thought that...” (Haine) “It was too pitiful to erase, then.” (Raphael)

Haine-san nodded.

“Especially this guy. He was being used by Ates since the beginning of this incident. He was being used without being able to distinguish right or wrong, so I questioned whether it really was okay to have him take responsibility for it.” (Haine) “You...” (Raphael)

Those words reached out to the Demon Lords the most.

“Can’t have this guy hurt the humans anymore then!” (Michael) “That was

our objective from the very beginning though.” (Gabriel) “With this, we have completely lost any reason to fight the humans!” (Uriel) “Hmph, every single one of you are too soft.” (Raphael)

They were trembling probably because they were moved.

At that moment, I was sure.

The battle with the Great Demon Lord Lucifer, the battle with the Demon Lords in general -no, not only that, the battle that continued for a hundred years with the monsters had...at this moment, come to an end.

From now on, a new era will begin.

An era where humans, monsters, and Gods will live together in peace.

“...By the way, where’s Ates?” (Haine)

Haine-san made a light-hearted question as if it was bothering him a bit, but that question made everyone in the place stiffen.

“It was because her control had stopped suddenly that I was able to take over Lucifer, but...seeing that she is not around anywhere in sight, did she escape? Then we still have work to do!” (Haine) Haine-san was pondering seriously on his own, but everyone in the place was serious for a different reason.

Even if she was such a helplessly evil person, it was still hard to tell him about her death.

“Haine-san!”

And from within that, as expected, the one to jump into to the fire first was Yorishiro-sama.

“Ates-san threw herself into the dark matter and...” (Yorishiro) (She is not dead.)

?!
What was that voice just now?!

That voice that reverberates right into the soul!

(There’s no way you shouldn’t have noticed as a God yourself, Yorishiro. In the end, for us, a human body is simply a temporary vessel. No matter if it were

to fall, our real self that is the God soul will not be affected.) T-True!

We also knew that Ates' true identity is the evil side that separated from the Light Goddess, and yet...!

"Ates! Where are you?! Where are you speaking from?!" (Yorishiro) (It just means that everything went according to plan. The reason I erased the body of Ates was because I wanted to escape from that body. That was my real objective. It didn't matter if Lucifer destroyed the world or not!) (Ates) What does that mean?!

(If I were to threaten you people with Lucifer destroying the world, and you were to succeed in stopping it, I knew that you all would lower your guards!! That opening is what I was looking for!!) (Ates) Ates' voice showed slight regret for a bit.

(If the world were destroyed and the world where Haine-san and I could be together forever were created, it would have been perfect, but...! Now that it has come to this, I won't wish for too much! I will keep it to one wish! It is fine as long as I become one with my beloved! Haine-san! No, Dark God Entropy!) (Ates) It was at that moment.

From what we thought was now the harmless Dark Demon Lord, a small thorn flew out from its body.

No, that's not it.

It isn't a small thorn!

Satan's body is gigantic to begin with, so even if it is small for it, if it were in human size, it is plenty of a normal size.

A small size for Satan would be...a spear in our eyes.

A pitch black spear came out from Satan's body.

"That's...!" (Karen)

I remember it.

That's the shadow spear, Abel!

The divine tool that holds the power of shadow that Ates displayed when she

escaped from the Light Church.

Moreover, its target is...Haine-san!

“Haine-san, watch out!” (Karen)

Ates' last aim was, as expected, Haine-san!

The shadow spear Abel came out from a complete blind spot when we were concentrating in the voice of Ates, so at this moment, even Haine-san can't react in time!!

(It is already too late! Now Haine-san, accept my last wish! And let's become one!!) (Ates)

- 411: Accomplishment of the heroes

Stab

The sound of a blade entering flesh.

But the shadow spear didn't pierce Haine-san, but me...Kourin Karen.

“Karen-san?!” (Haine)

I made it in time.

Just as it was about to happen, I went in between Haine-san and the spear and protected Haine-san with my body.

In exchange, the spear was stabbed deeply inside my body though.

(You.....!! How dare you! How dare you, you damn brat!!) (Ates) The voice of Ates reverberates from no place in particular.

(You are still getting in my way! Every single time!! If only you weren't there! If only you were gone!!) (Ates) “Ates! So this was your last card!” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro-sama says as she runs to me.

Directed at the spear that's pierced in me.

“So the reason why you incarnated into a human and even became a hero of the Light Church to make the shadow spear Abel was because of this?!” (Yorishiro) “Explain, Yorishiro!” (Haine)

Haine-san showed desperation while supporting my body.

I am happy that he is being kind with me, but my emotions are not being elated. It was as if my emotions were leaking out of my body along with my blood...

“Shadow divine power is converted to light divine power. The shadow spear Abel specializes in controlling that shadow divine power.” (Yorishiro) “...”

“Ates herself is the incarnation of a God, so if she were to strip off her flesh body and return to her God form, that form is quite close to that of divine power. If she changes herself into shadow and takes shelter in the shadow spear, and then, uses it to pierce Haine-san with it...” (Yorishiro) “W-What will happen?!” (Haine)

“Darkness and shadow hold pretty similar attributes. If darkness and shadow were to mix through the shadow spear, it might have been possible for Ates to literally become one with Haine-san.” (Yorishiro) “?!” (Haine)

That was the end goal of Ates.

For that sake, she made the shadow spear Abel.

(...That's right. After destroying the world and creating a new world, Entropy and I would become one, and we would live our lives without ever being bothered by anyone. That was my ideal. My ultimate objective, and yet...!) (Ates) The pitch black spear speaks begrudgingly.

So Ates' soul really did enter this spear after her body perished.

(Not a single thing was fulfilled! My ambitions dashed...because of a single human worm!!) (Ates) “Shut up!!” (Haine)

Haine-san shouted.

It was a raspy voice that I hadn't heard from him before.

“Who cares about you! More importantly, Karen-san! We have to treat Karen-san as soon as possible!” (Haine) “Wait, Haine-san! If you take out the spear right now, she might bleed out! Wait until preparations for the treatment are done!” (Yorishiro) “Celestis! Please do something! Treating injuries is your specialty, right?!” (Haine) Haine-san is being so desperate for my sake.

I am kind of happy...

It feels like I am being treasured...

(Who cares?! Who cares about me, you say?!) (Ates)

I could feel the despair coming from the black spear.

(No way! I have been thinking only about you for 1,600 years! I acted for your sake!) (Ates) Rejection from her loved one.

That was the ultimate despair for her.

All her objectives have been thwarted, and she has no weapon or power left. All of those things that were supporting her, she lost them all. With that, Ates —no, the other Light Goddess, lost all strength and disappeared.

She might have really been just the shadow that separated from the true Light Goddess Inflation.

She was a part of a God, she only had a small part of the power compared to the real body, but she used her feelings for her loved one as support to make it all the way here.

Because she is only a small part of a whole, her emotions were limited. She could only like her sole love.

That's why she could only hate everyone aside from her loved one.

Maybe she was actually...

(A pitiful person.) (Karen)

“Get a grip of yourself, Karen-san!! Don’t stop breathing!!”

A person shouts loudly in my ears.

Who is it?

Ah, Yorishiro-sama huh.

It took me time to remember.

“Celestis, please do something! If it is in your God Hero state, you should be able to close the hole in her body with water divine power, right?!” (Haine) “T- That’s not possible! Because the place where this spear is pierced is Karen-

chi's...!" (Celestis) Heart.

The shadow spear Abel had pierced through the left side of my chest.

"It is instant death! The moment she was pierced by it, her breathing and pulse stopped! Please accept reality! Haine-san and Yorishiro-sama, please don't pretend as if you don't see it!!" (Celestis) "Lies! Karen-san can be saved! Isn't that right?!" (Haine) "Please open your eyes, Karen-san! Please breath! You are not the kind of person who would die here, right?!" (Yorishiro) I see... I am already dead huh.

Then, the reason why I can see everyone around must be because I have turned into a soul and looking at them that way?

It may be that my ascension is being slightly postponed but will soon head to heaven in a while.

Haine-san, Yorishiro-sama, please don't be so sad.

I have saved the world as a hero, and was able to fight for you two.

I am plenty satisfied.

You two can probably take off your flesh body and come to the heavens in an instant as Gods.

Because you are humans, and at the same time, the Dark God and the Light Goddess after all.

Please return to that heaven only after you have properly finished your life here.

I am the light hero, Kourin Karen.

I managed to finish my job as a hero.

WR – Chapter 412-413: The departure of a hero

Four years have passed since then.

The Great Demon Lord Lucifer's calamity had been brought to an end; the Demon Lord mayhem was brought to an end.

That long and fierce battle was a big turning point in all the people in the world.

For the humans, the demons, and the Gods as well.

Since the time we saw off the termination of the evil Light Goddess who was controlling Lucifer, we were all covered in dealing with the aftermath.

In that fight, the Great Demon Lord Lucifer had released darkness, and the five heroes managed to reach out to the power of darkness by joining their strengths.

The waves created from the clash of the two darknesses had spread through the whole world and affected it.

The actual damage wasn't high, but it created a big question in their minds.

'What was that power?'

Fire, earth, wind, water, and light.

'What's that new power that doesn't match the elements of any of the Gods of Creation?'

This time, there were people who had a clear answer to that question.

Not only that, the groundwork for that had been created already. It wasn't as if it was a power that wasn't seen by anyone before. So when those mysterious waves resonated, some were able to make a connection.

And so, those people didn't hesitate to answer that question.

Right now, all the people in the whole world clearly learned of the existence of the Dark God, Entropy.

"Haine-san, so you were here huh."

Four years have passed since then, but the cityscape of Apollon City hasn't changed.

While I -Kuromiya Haine-was looking at that sight, the Light Founder Yorishiro called out to me.

"You have been looking at the city lately." (Yorishiro)

"Because I will be leaving this city soon after all." (Haine)

For me, for the human Kuromiya Haine, this city is a city with a lot of memories.

This city that I had first arrived at after leaving for the first time from my village that's deep in the mountains.

After coming to this city, I for the first time was able to touch the whole of this world, and there, I learned about both the world that the humans took a long time to raise, and also the distortion that was formed by the selfishness of the Gods.

In order to do justice to the hard work of the humans, I fought in order to fix that distortion the Gods created.

That battle that took a part of Kuromiya Haine's life is soon going to come to a close.

"Since coming to this city, I have truly faced quite a lot of things." (Haine) Fun things, shocking things, frustrating things.

I am Kuromiya Haine, but at the same time, I am the Dark God Entropy.

For me as the Dark God, the life of this body basically only lasts as long as the blink of an eye, but even with that, it had a depth to it that rivals the 1,600 years after creating this world.

It has been around 20 years since I was born in this body. Right now, there's still more than half of my life left as Kuromiya Haine.

And yet, I am plenty satisfied.

I am truly glad I incarnated as a human.

"Now then, if we don't go soon, we will miss the ceremony." (Yorishiro)

"Do I really have to go? I don't think I am related at all though." (Haine)

"What are you saying? You have to see her shining moment. More so since you have decided on leaving after the ceremony is finished. It is an unavoidable thing if you want to put a proper conclusion." (Yorishiro) So you say but...

"Now, hurry. If you are late here, it will become a regret of yours for life." (Yorishiro) "Saying it as if it is a marriage..." (Haine)

Well, for her, it is as big of a turning point in her life as a marriage huh.

Today, an important ceremony will be taking place for the Light Church.

The ceremony for a new hero.

"We will now be beginning the ceremony for the new light hero, Light Ray."

A big amount of people were gathered in the Light Grand Church.

In order to see the new light hero that will be carrying the standard of the Light Church from today on.

"Ray, over here." (Yorishiro)

"Y-Y-Yessu!" (Ray)

Yorishiro was fulfilling her duty as Founder and called out to her, and the 15 year old girl that still looked young had stood in attention.

That girl is Light Ray.

The new light hero that was chosen with the consensus of the Light Church.

It has been two years since she entered the ranks of the Light Church, and had her skills acknowledged by the Aurora Knight corps. She managed to climb all the way to being a hero in that short amount of time, so it was clear how much

talent she has.

Even with that, Ray is still young and completely nervous here.

It is a given. She is still a delicate 15 year old girl after all.

No doubt she is not used to having the attention of so many people.

“Light Ray, you will be the light hero that will be representing our church from today on. You will have to spread the influence of the Light Goddess Inflation-sama -the protection of the light-to the world. Do you have that resolve?”
(Yorishiro) “I shu!! —I do!!” (Ray)

Stumbled again.

She is a girl that has low guts to begin with, so the ceremony today might have been too heavy on her.

It was the right choice for me to participate huh.

“Ray, you can do it.” (Haine)

I send her some encouragement in a low voice so that it doesn’t bother the ceremony.

Because I, for some reason, am considered an important person of the Light Church, I was standing by the side of the Founder, and I was pretty close to where Ray is, so it properly reached her.

“?!”

And with my encouragement as the trigger, Ray’s expression tightens.

“...Please rest assured, Founder-sama! I, Light Ray, will fulfill my duty with all I have so I don’t bring shame to the great previous hero-sama!!” (Ray) “Splendid show of resolve.” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro nodded pleasedly.

“Then, I will entrust you your personal holy sword. And at the same time...”
(Yorishiro) The eyes of Yorishiro shift to a certain place.

“As per tradition, the previous light hero will be returning her holy sword. Now previous light hero, Kourin Karen-san.” (Yorishiro) “Yes, Founder-sama.”
(Karen)

Karen-san, who was lined up with me a few steps back of Yorishiro, moved forward with her turn coming.

She is now 20 years old and has grown beautifully as a woman.

“Karen-san, with a new light hero assuming the post, your duty as hero has finally come to an end. Thank you for all the work you have done until now.” (Yorishiro) “It is too great of an honor, Founder-sama.” (Karen)

“In the last Demon Lord battle against Lucifer, I was truly glad that you managed to return after what seemed to be a despairing situation. Since then, you have continued to work splendidly as the light hero representing the church.” (Yorishiro) Today, Karen-san is finally not a hero anymore.

Since the moment I met her, she has been the light hero. So it felt really weird that she won’t be a hero from now on.

“Founder-sama —Inflation-sama, the holy sword Saint-George that was entrusted to me, I will be returning it to you as of today.” (Karen) For the people around, those were words as if she were speaking to Yorishiro as well as the Light Goddess that the church worships.

There’s only a few limited amount of people who know the truth.

Both of them are the same person.

Karen-san said it in such way with that intention.

“Karen-san... This is the holy sword Arthur that will be entrusted to the new hero. Please pass it on with your own hands.” (Yorishiro) Karen-san received the new holy sword from Yorishiro, and then, turns around to the girl that will be succeeding her.

“Ray, since the moment I saw you when you joined the Aurora Knight corps, my instincts told me that this day would come. From now on, you are the light hero.” (Karen) Saying this, Karen-san hands over the new holy sword to the new hero.

“It will definitely be a hard journey, but I am sure you will be able to do it. Do your best.” (Karen) “Leave it to me! I will become a light hero that won’t lose to your shine, Karen-neesama!” (Ray) And just like this, a hero had departed from

the Light Church.

Now, Karen-san is simply Kourin Karen.

- 413: Psyche

At the last fight of the Great Demon Lord battle.

Karen-san had taken my place in receiving the attack that had everything of Ates, and she ended up with her heart pierced, bringing instant death.

She was already in a state where no one could do anything.

No matter the God, it is not possible to bring back a life that's reaching its end -it shouldn't be done.

In that time when we could only despair our own powerlessness, the one who gave us a saving hand was an unexpected person.

"In the first place, Ates was..."

Ates was the separated part of the Light Goddess, the evil part of her heart.

Ates had changed her pure light divine power into shadow and entered the shadow spear Abel —in order to combine with me, the Dark God.

Karen-san took my place.

The converted divine power of the Light Goddess that should have been injected into me had been injected into Karen-san instead and had combined with the human soul of Karen-san.

The soul of a human and a God were becoming one.

Because of this, Karen-san had turned into something that is human and at the same time isn't.

Karen-san herself had become the other Light Goddess Inflation.

"After that, it was easy to heal my own body with the divine power I gained." (Karen) Karen-san says, looking back to that time.

The ceremony safely finished and Karen-san is not the light hero anymore.

“I was truly scared at first.” (Haine)

I was also remembering that time and shivers ran down my spine.

No matter how many times I remember it, it still has the same effect on me.

“It is because I felt that the divine power of Ates was resonating with Karen-san’s divine power through the pierced spear that I was questioning myself what in the world would happen.” (Haine) I was relieved when I saw that her body was regenerating with the fused divine power of Ates, but I soon began to imagine another scary possibility.

Because Karen-san had fused with that Ates.

An existence that basically consisted on only the wicked parts of the Light Goddess.

If she were to fuse with something like that... It made me tremble in fear just thinking that maybe her whole personality would be overwritten and Ates would return.

In the end, the one who came back was Karen-san who didn’t show much difference from before.

“The personality of Ates herself had vanished before it fused with me.” (Karen) The eyes of Karen-san lower and she shows a sorrowful expression.

“After being rejected by Entropy who she had felt strongly for all that time, in the weakened mental state she was in, she was unable to maintain herself. She was the kind of person that even went as far as to think that there’s no need for the world as long as Haine-san existed after all.” (Karen) So my rejection was plenty shocking enough to push those last remaining fingers holding on right down into the precipice huh.

She really had nothing revolving around herself but her own agenda.

“After losing her essence, the divine power that had turned into pure energy only had found a shelter that is my soul and fused with it.” (Karen) “I am surprised it went so smoothly. Ates and Karen-san may have similar elements to begin with, but at that time, Ates had changed to shadow, you know. Moreover, she was a Goddess.” (Haine) “Because shadow is basically an intermediate of

light and darkness, the compatibility with both was high. Also, my connection as a God Hero most likely served as an intermediate, making the fusing smoother. With the essence of Ates gone, that power of hers had no choice but to recreate its existence with me as the core.” (Karen) As the new light.

And so, she was reborn. A human, but at the same time, a God. A God that has a human soul —That’s Kourin Karen.

“Karen-san..... I am truly sorry.” (Haine)

“Again with the apologizing, Haine-san? In these four years, every time this conversation is brought out, you apologize.” (Karen) Yeah, but the soul of Karen-san that was supposed to live and die as a proper human had been tied in the curse that is being a God.

Even if her body were to perish, her soul would exist forever. That’s the kind of curse it is.

“It is fine. If it were an eternity with only myself, I would be so lonely I wouldn’t be able to take it, but I have people that can live together with me forever.” (Karen) Saying this, Karen-san held my hand in a very natural manner.

“For now, I will stay as Karen, and Haine-san will stay as Haine-san. I look forward to what the future will bring us.” (Karen) “Yeah...” (Haine)

Karen-san obviously already knows my identity.

My identity as the Dark God Entropy.

In the end, we revealed it all, and even with that, we still decided on staying together.

It means there’s already no escaping it.

“It is nice that you are getting along, but...”

Someone intruded in our alone time.

“It would be troubling if you were to forget about me.”

“Of course, Yorishiro-sama! We three, no matter how many times we reincarnate, will be together!!” (Karen) Karen-san and Yorishiro who are already Light Goddesses were hugging.

An eternity with me, the Dark God.

That was the very wish of Ates that was born from a series of events, but in the end, Karen-san was the one who managed to accomplish that wish of hers.

But even with that, Karen-san is critically different from Ates.

My basis for that is that Ates saw her ideal world as a place where only her and I were in and anyone else wasn't allowed...but Karen-san acknowledged everyone that was around her.

Her love wasn't only targeted at me, but the whole world.

Getting involved with this whole world and creating connections, she spread varieties of love, and received the love of others in return.

Even if they were aiming for the same result, Karen-san and Ates were separated by a deep line that could be considered a boundary.

"Karen-san, you are not a hero anymore starting today, so our relationship will become even simpler now." (Yorishiro) "Right! Our relationship as hero and Founder-sama is gone! We are purely friends now! Love-Love comrades of Haine-san!!" (Karen) Yeah...

Gotta cast my doubts in the way you put it.

"I as well. Having a friend like you to share our eternities together, I feel like it will be quite the fun eternity. But right now, let's enjoy our lives as Yorishiro and Karen. Haine-san will definitely make it fun!" (Yorishiro) "Yes! Yorishiro-sama!" (Karen)

Wait, it is troubling to put so much expectations on me!

...And so, in this way, Karen-san was completely prepared to enjoy her eternal life as a God.

As I thought, humans are strong in a lot of meanings.

"Anyways, right now, we should enjoy the fact that your title as hero is gone. The preparations for departure are already done, right?" (Yorishiro) "Ah, yeah! Right!" (Karen)

Karen-san is no longer a hero now.

Kourin Karen will now walk a new and different path from the one when she was the light hero, but before that, it wouldn't be bad to have a slight intermission.

"Using this chance, you will be visiting your friends, right? That's quite good."
(Yorishiro) "Yes! We have been pretty busy lately, so I haven't seen them for quite a while. I was thinking about checking how they have been recently!"
(Karen) The heroes that had overcome that final battle together with her.

They have finished their duties as heroes just like Karen-san and are walking through a new path now.

Karen-san wanted to use this chance that she had graduated from being a hero to check how they are doing.

"Then, Haine-san, I will be leaving the escorting of Karen-san to you-desu wa."
(Yorishiro) "Ya got it." (Haine)

It was decided that I would be accompanying Karen-san in that trip of hers.

The reason I will be leaving Apollon City was because of that.

"I can't go together with you because of my work as Founder, but we are going to be living together for what will be close to an eternity, so not being together for a bit shouldn't be much." (Yorishiro) "Right..." (Haine)

I ended up leaking out a dry 'hahaha...' along.

"Then, let's meet at that place." (Yorishiro)

"Yeah, at that place then." (Haine)

Receiving the farewell from Yorishiro, we finally depart.

The trip for Karen-san's hero graduation.

"Haine-san, let's go." (Karen)

Karen-san takes a seat on the ethereal flying machine she had prepared.

If we are going to go around the other nations, there's no doubt we would need these guys.

The flight of these guys has truly helped us out in a lot of situations.

“Haine-san, will you be sitting at the back? Or at the front?” (Karen)

“We have our personal flying machines, you know.” (Haine)

Karen-san and I riding one flying machine was a thing that happened way back when we first met.

Now that I think about it, it was also my first time riding a flying machine.

A lot of things happened since then huh.

“Is that really okay? Don’t you want to ride behind me again and cop a feel of my boobs?” (Karen) “As I said, please forget about that already!!” (Haine)

A lot of things indeed happened, and yet, girls really don’t forget the dark past of men.

WR – Chapter 414-415: The Fire since then

And so, in this way, I ended up accompanying her in her celebratory trip.

The first place we would be visiting is the Fire capital, Muspelheim.

It is the closest to Apollon City, and that's exactly why our first encounter was with the fire hero Mirack and had complications with her, but now, it is a far memory.

I heard that Mirack had already entrusted her hero title.

A retirement a step faster than Karen-san and the start of a new life.

What is she doing now?

“Let there be hot-bloodedness.”

When we arrived at the Fire Church's headquarters, the one who welcomed us was the Fire Demon Lord, Michael.

The Demon Lords are currently learning about human society to properly know about humans.

“Oh, long time no see.” (Haine)

“Kuromiya Haine, it is great to see that you are doing well.” (Michael)

The first time I met these guys, I didn't even think a day where we could carefreely talk like this would come.

We Gods were with the intention of wiping out the Demon Lords.

The reason why we have surpassed that plan and ended up being able to hold hands with the Demon Lords is thanks to the greatness of the humans.

“It has been a while, Michael-san. How is Mirack-chan doing?” (Karen)

Karen-san kept the greetings to a minimum and asks a question connected to her reason for visiting.

For her, Mirack is the friend she has been acquainted with the longest.

Because they have been busy lately with their hero successors, they haven't met for a long time.

"If it is her, she should have left to do her show biz again." (Michael)

"Show biz?" (Karen)

"You guys should go check it out as well. That Mirack, thinking of such an interesting thing, I expected no less of a human." (Michael)

"Let there be hot-bloodedness."

From inside the Fire Church, another bulky muscular person came out who looked like the very definition of a big man.

The Fire Founder.

In the past, he worked as a General of the Fire Militant corps, but even now, he is still plenty muscular, and looked like he could join the frontlines at any moment.

"Master." (Michael)

Michael spoke with respect towards that Fire Founder-san.

"Let there be hot-bloodedness." (Michael)

"Let there be hot-bloodedness." (Enou)

"Master says that he will settle matters on his side, so you two can head directly to the venue." (Michael)

'Thank you very much', Karen-san says with a cramped face.

"...Uhm, Haine-san." (Karen)

"Yeah?" (Haine)

"Even now, I am still unable to understand the Fire Founder-sama at all... And lately, Michael-san is beginning to resemble him more and more...!" (Karen)

"Let there be hot-bloodedness, Karen-san." (Haine)

Men are of few words.

While we were at that, someone from the Fire Church guided us to the venue in question.

Many spectators were crowding the place.

There's something like a square in the middle of that crowd... Is it like a stage?

"It is apparently called a 'ring'." (Karen)

Karen-san says this as she looks at the pamphlet that was given to us when we entered the place.

"According to what is written in this pamphlet, this is apparently a show to enjoy battles." (Karen)

A show to watch and enjoy battles?

"Idea by the previous fire hero, it says... In other words, it is referring to Mirack-chan, right? It is apparently an event that Mirack-chan thought of. The one where you cheer for your preferred fighter in the one on one battles as you enjoy watching..." (Kanre)

I check the pamphlet that I was given.

They are fighting under set rules, so there's no danger for the fighters and the audience huh.

"The new type of show Mirack proposed. Its name is...pro-wrestling." (Haine)

When my understanding reached to that point, the venue suddenly raised in excitement.

By the time I noticed, there was some sort of referee-looking person on top of the ring.

"Everyone, excuse the wait! The main event of today will be starting now!!"

"~~~~~YEEAAAAAAHHH!!!~~~~~"

With that announcement, the crowded venue got incredibly fired up.

To the point that I felt completely left out not knowing what was going on at

all.

“First, at the red side! The representative of the Muspelheim Pro-Wrestling and the previous fire hero, the fire whirlwind that saved the world, Katack Mirack!!”

The audience raised big cheers as the muscular woman went up the ring.

In these four years, her body build has gotten even more pronounced.

“Mirack-chan is the same as always...!” (Karen)

Seeing her friend at an unexpected place, Karen-san was happy, but at the same time, surprised.

“Now for her opponent, this one is also a central figure of our Muspelheim Pro-Wrestling! Its popularity tops even our representative Mirack! The rampaging cow! The Fire Cow Phalaris!!”

~~~~~"YEEEEAAAAAAAHHH!!"~~~~~

## What incredible cheering!

And the one getting up to the stage at the opposite side of the ring is a honest to word cow!

This one is also someone we are all too familiar with!

“What is that guy doing?!” (Haine)

Mirack and Phalaris were glaring at each other and sparks were flying.

“Well then, this is a pairing that we in the Muspelheim Pro-Wrestling are familiar with! With a total of 57 matches; Mirack with 29 wins, and Phalaris with 28 wins! They are evenly contested!!”

They have been fighting that much?!

“Will Phalaris win today and line up the wins?! Or will Mirack pull her tenacity as former hero and pull further away?! The gong of fate will be sounding now!!”

*Kong!*

With a dry sound like that of a bell, Mirack and Phalaris begin their clash.

Looks like that's the signal for the match to start.

At the same time as this happened, the heat of the audience reached max output and it felt as if the whole venue had turned into a battlefield.

“This is...pro-wrestling?!” (Haine)

Phalaris rams Mirack, and she grabs and throws him away. A sole physical battle with no divine power involved unfolded and fast attacks were dished one after the other from both sides.

Seeing this battle, the audience increased in tension, and by the time I noticed, I was also raising my voice and cheering.

\*\*\*\*\*

After the match ended.

With the kindness of the organizer, we were able to intrude in the waiting rooms.

Well, I say organizer, but I am talking about Mirack herself though.

“Ooh, Karen!! It has truly been a while!!” (Mirack)

We reunite with Mirack at one of those waiting rooms.

She had already taken a shower, and had finished cleaning herself up from the sweat that she had from the match.

And just a bit lower, Phalaris was once again munching on grass.

“So you have finally graduated from heroics as well huh. Everyone is steadily changing.” (Mirack)

“Yeah. I was specially surprised by your change, Mirack-chan.” (Karen)

It looks like Karen-san was unable to ride on this so called pro-wrestling that she saw today even till the end.

“Oh, how was it, Karen? The pro-wrestling I thought of, was it fun?” (Mirack)

“I didn’t understand it well!” (Karen)

A truly honest opinion.

Mirack and the other heroes have not met that much in these four years, but the changes that match that time were truly surprising.

“I heard that Mirack was one of the heroes that retired pretty early within the legendary generation, but I see, you quit being a hero and were doing this huh.” (Haine)

The legendary generation refers to Karen-san, Mirack, Celestis, Sasae-chan, and Hyue.

The title for the five heroes that managed to fight through the toughest battle in the history of the five Grand Churches.

Those five were the ones who brought a true closing to the battle between humans and monsters, so their heroic achievements will most likely be passed down in history for many generations to come.

“Yeah. Even when I stopped being a hero, I wanted to aim for the path of the strongest, you see. But bringing strife in the peace that I managed to gain with my comrades would be stupid.” (Mirack)

Strength is something that is polished in battle.

But in present society, battles like those are completely gone.

“And so, I thought that it would be nice to have people who aim for that same summit to fight in set rules. Then, make it into the entertainment industry, sell tickets to spectate them, and profit even more from it.” (Mirack)

“That’s quite well planned for you, Mirack.” (Haine)

“Well, I asked Celestis for advice in matters of the entertainment industry though.” (Mirack)

Ah, her huh.

She herself is profiting in the idol entertainment industry, so she might have a few things to say.

“Ufufu, Mirack-chan and Celestis-chan get along especially well even within the Legendary Generation after all.” (Karen)

Karen-chan said this with a smile and this made Mirack grimace.

“Don’t say something so itchy, Karen! Me and her are fire and water! There’s no way we would get along!” (Mirack)

(Keep telling yourself that.)

The cow that was munching on grass at the side of Mirack said this.

A voice that came from the soul waves that normal people can't hear.

"It's been a while, Nova-sama. Have you been doing well?" (Karen)

(Hmph! How can I be doing well being trapped in this monster body! On top of that, I am being made to tag along with this woman's tomfoolery. It is a pain all over!) (Nova)

Because of the Demon Lord incident, the path that links the Gods had been opened to the Legendary Generation to have them become God Heroes.

Thanks to that, Karen-san and the others are able to converse in the soul waves that should only work for Gods.

This Fire God, he is already a completely popular figure of the church as a cow, but to think he would also join the entertainment industry.

"See, Karen? Our God is not cute at all, right? He is always spitting hateful words like this." (Mirack)

I was completely on the same opinion as Mirack.

He says he doesn't like his cow body, and yet, continues in that body for four years now. He really isn't honest.

"The pro-wrestling industry that I proposed, at first, didn't have people who could properly match me, and lacked the ability to heat up the people, but that changed when this guy began participating. He has popularity with the kids to begin with, so he is the best customer gathering cow." (Mirack)

"The Fire Church has truly been blessed with a great God." (Karen)

Phalaris snorts at the two chatting as he continued munching on grass.

"Hey Karen, and also Haine." (Mirack)

Mirack says reservedly.

"The world has changed since the battle four years ago. The five churches don't fight each other anymore, and the relationship they have is good." (Mirack)

“Yeah.” (Karen)

Totally right.

“And so, in this, we heroes have changed our ways. The roles for the active military forces are mostly gone, and the Church’s duty of public relationship has gotten a close up because of this.” (Mirack)

“And you are saying this pro-wrestling is an extension of that duty?” (Karen)

“It is part of it. I wanted to do good for the world in my own way even if I have retired from being a hero. Things might be a bit awkward between me and my juniors though.” (Mirack)

“Now that you mention it, the fire hero that succeeded you is that Firey-chan, right?” (Karen)

Karen-san says as if remembering.

In that past, when Mirack was still an active hero, there were three girls that were sticking to Mirack as their little sisters kind of thing.

One of those three had managed to become the next hero.

“Yeah, Braidley and Glassfin seem to be supporting her by her side. The title of fire hero was passed on to Firey alone, but in the end, the three of them together make one proper person, I would say.” (Mirack)

“Mirack-chan, you are talking like the old Kyouka-san...” (Karen)

“It really makes me actually taste that the previous heroes are truly troublesome existences for the current ones. Hey Karen, you will be going to visit Celestis, Sasae, and Hyue, right?” (Mirack)

“Yeah, that’s what I plan on doing.” (Karen)

“Then, please give them my regards. That, in the near future, let’s all five of us gather together again.” (Mirack)

Even when she has passed on her position as hero, Mirack still continues to tread the path of the strongest. Moreover, this is not only to make herself stronger.

By interacting with others, it influences each other, and it makes the world

itself progress. A healthy path to becoming the strongest.

(Oi, Entropy.) (Nova)

Nova speaks to me while I had nothing to do.

(Later, at the specified place.) (Nova)

“Yeah, I know. At the specified place.” (Haine)

And so, in this way, we headed to the next location.

- 415: The Water since then

“Aah~, I can’t stand this! Unbelievable!!”

The moment we arrived at Hydra Ville, the one who welcomed us was the cursing of the water hero, Celestis.

...No, she is not the water hero anymore, so it would be more accurate to say former hero.

“What’s with this, geez! ...Ah, Karen-chi and Haine-chi, long time no see! Hey, geez, are you listening?!” (Celestis)

Even when she was welcoming us, she continued complaining.



It is a pain, so if you are going to do something, please do one thing at a time.

“Celestis-chan...! It has been a while, and yet, what is it that you are complaining so much about?” (Karen)

Karen-san had just reunited with her friend, so she could only be bewildered by the great storming of hers.

That Celestis, in these four years, she has grown remarkably and I thought that she now had more leeway in her idol work, but...if she throws a tantrum like this, no matter which part it is, it is a complete waste.

“...The moment we came to Hydra Ville, we were guided by a church member all the way here, but there was no explanation of this. Just what is the matter, Celestis-chan? Celestis-chan also retired from being a hero, right?” (Karen)

We are currently at a room in the Water Church’s headquarters.

And for some reason, all openings counting the windows were tightly closed, and it was as if to not let anyone escape. Yet, the only one in that room is Celestis.

Well, until we came to visit her, that is.

“...This is like some sort of prison cell. What did you do this time, Celestis?” (Haine)

“Please perish the thought of me being imprisoned because I did something bad!! I didn’t do anything! Even though I did nothing wrong, I am being imprisoned!!” (Celestis)

This was the reason why Celestis was in a bad mood from the very beginning.

When we were guided to this pseudo-prison cell, the water church member asked us: ‘please appease Celestis-sama’.

“Then why did it turn into this imprisonment? Celestis-chan, be honest here.” (Karen)

“Why are you talking as if you were reprimanding a problem child?! I haven’t done anything! If I had to say a reason, it would be because I retired as a hero!!” (Celestis)

““?””

I don’t understand even less now.

Why is her freedom taken away even more when she has retired from her

duty as a hero?

“...It is related to a tradition of our Water Church.”

The door opened, and the one who entered was the Water Founder-sama.

“Ah! Papa!!” (Celestis)

By the way, he is also the father of Celestis.

“Geez, Papa! Free me already! I have things I want to do!!” (Celestis)

“That won’t do. Celestis, you have retired from being the water hero, so you have to walk forward to a new path. And, in terms of our Water Church, the path of a retired hero has already been decided.” (Azul)

Ah, right.

Now that he mentions it, I think I have heard about it a long time ago.

The retired water heroes would mostly marry right after retirement and enter an influential family of Hydra Ville.

Since heroes are mostly girls, moreover, they have long years of achievements with the church, it would turn into a big connection for both the family and the church.

If a former hero were to be wedded, it would create a thick connection to the church.

In other words, the retired heroes of the Water Church are soon thrust into a political marriage.

The hero that came before Celestis, Sarasa-san, married an influential family as well right after she retired.

Celestis has retired as well, so she would be made to marry some family, and it would strengthen the connections of the Water Church.

“As I have been saying many times already, I have no intentions of going through predetermined rails!!” (Celestis)

Celestis showed a proud confrontational stance.

So this is the reason why she is being imprisoned.

“Even if there’s the need for a new path after retiring as a hero, like hell I would want to marry and pass my days stagnating as a wife! If I have to pass such boring years, I would prefer to die!!” (Celestis)

“You may say that, Celestis, but not only did you bring unprecedented achievements as a hero, you are also my daughter. This may not be the best way to put it, but within the water heroes that have had political marriages, your worth can’t be compared to any others. Look.” (Azul)

Saying this, the Water Founder-sama placed a big bundle of papers on top of the table.

It was so thick that it would be better to say it is tall. The weight of it was making the table creak.

“What’s with this big bundle of papers?” (Celestis)

“Photos sent to Celestis for a marriage interview. There’s more than two hundred.” (Azul)

More than two hundred?!

“Requests to marry Celestis have not been limited to Hydra Ville but the whole world. Society has changed and the relationship of the five Grand Churches has grown to the better, and there’s also the popularity of Celestis as an idol bringing heavy effects in this too.” (Azul)

The Water Founder-sama says this as if mentally fatigued.

I on the other hand had my interest piqued and flipped through the marriage interview photos.

All of them were handsome men with their backs straight, but...eh? I feel like I saw a familiar face?

“Isn’t this General Vesage?!” (Haine)

A light knight of our church, and in these four years, he finally managed to be promoted all the way to General.

Why is he sending a marriage interview photo?! Does he have the permission of the Founder?!

“If there’s a proper person I, as Celestis father, can leave her care to, there would be nothing as relieving as that. Celestis, if you acknowledge me as your father, can you please find a good family to marry into as filial piety?” (Azul)

“Ugh...! If you put it that way...!” (Celestis)

Celestis and the Founder-sama lived their lives without recognizing each other as father and daughter for more than a decade due to several circumstances.

Well, it was a political and status related matter the likes of Hydra Ville.

Even with the lack of parental love between the two, this didn’t make it weaker, it rather made the long time make them care for each other even more.

“It is true that I would like to answer the expectations of Papa as much as possible, but...! But I can’t pull back in this! I want to paint my own life with my own hands! I don’t want to pass that privilege to others!!” (Celestis)

“Celestis...!” (Azul)

“Papa, listen! I will stop being an idol as well!” (Celestis)

That announcement not only shocked the Founder-sama, but also Karen-san and I as spectators.

When speaking of Celestis, it is idols.

The unheard of combination of being a hero and idol at the same time, that made her even more unique than the previous generation heroes.

She herself treasured her idol work as her life, and yet, she is suddenly saying she will quit it?!

“I have been thinking about it for a while now. I have already passed my teens, so continuing as an idol would be pushing it. I have been thinking since a while ago about graduating from the idol industry after retiring as a hero.” (Celestis)

Well, that realistic way of thinking is also Celestis-like.

“And then, I want to rise to the next stage! Putting an end to my idol hero self, I want to challenge my new self! Please, Papa! Allow my selfishness!!”

(Celestis)

“Ugh...!!” (Azul)

Her seriousness had transmitted plenty well, making the Founder-sama falter.

But he is a person that understands his own standing as the Water Founder.

It heavily weighed on which side he will take. Will he take the father side, or the Founder side?

There...

“Isn’t it fine, dear?”

A new person entered the room?!

This is a person I haven’t met before.

She is a woman that resembles Celestis a lot, so she is incredibly beautiful.

She is quite old already, but that age has completely changed into charm. She was the very definition of a beautiful madam.

“Mama?!” (Celestis)

“Mama?!” (Haine)

The words of Celestis shocked me.

In this day, Celestis’ Mother-san takes the stage?!

“She was a former high class courtesan of Hydra Ville, after knowing that she was pregnant with me, she left the side of Papa. It wasn’t long ago that she was finally accepted as the second mistress of the Founder.” (Celestis)

I did hear rumors of it but, it was this person?!

In other words, the beloved wife of the Water Founder that had pledged lifelong love to.

“S-Sharl!” (Azul)

“Celestis inherited the aggressiveness of both of us. There’s no way our girl would make a normal family and pass her life as a wife doing nothing, right?” (Sharl)

That way of speaking...is she praising her or speaking ill of her?

"If we were to force her to marry a wealthy person and she causes trouble at the place we made her marry into, it would beat the purpose. In that case, wouldn't it be better to have her rampage in a place where your eyes can reach so that the damage is limited to a minimum?" (Sharl)

"As expected of Mama! You really understand me well!!" (Celestis)

Celestis, is it fine for your mother to have such an evaluation of you?

"I understand what you are trying to say. But as a Founder, with these many people wishing to marry my daughter, I can't just refuse them just like that." (Azul)

Saying this, the Water Founder-sama picked up a part of the many photos.

It was only a part, but just picking that part required the Founder-sama to open up his hand to the limit.

"Are you saying you want to answer the expectations of society? Can you do something like that?" (Sharl)

"W-What do you mean by that?!" (Azul)

"There's truly a lot of marriage interview photos. A lot of groom candidates, but only one Celestis. With so much competition, no one would accept unless the one picked is comparable to a Church Founder class standing." (Sharl)

True.

The current five Grand Church Founders are either already married, or of the same gender, but the people that are in standings that can aim to be Founders in the future, there are a good amount of them in these photos.

"If we want to use Celestis in a political marriage, it would be most efficient to have her marry into a different church. With that, Celestis would have to leave Hydra Ville." (Sharl)

"Ugh...!" (Azul)

"If that were to happen, would you be able to endure the loneliness of not being together with Celestis?" (Sharl)

It was like stabbing a vital point with a needle.

The Water Founder-sama instantly fell silent and, while at it, was sweating bullets...before finally exploding.

“I DON’T WANT THAAAAT!! I don’t want Celestis to marry~~!!!” (Azul)

Is what he cried out as he fell onto the floor writhing.

“I couldn’t live together with her in her cutest times that were when she was born to her growth, and yet, you are telling me she will soon be married and gone again?! I don’t want that! Celestis! Stand by Papa’s side! You can’t marry anyone!!” (Azul)

“Got it!! As expected of Mama! You are good at controlling Papa!” (Celestis)

Celestis was overjoyed and gave a thumbs up to her mother.

In this way, Celestis managed to avoid the marriage that comes with her hero retirement, but...is this really okay?

“S-So, Celestis-chan...” (Karen)

We were basically air from beginning to end this time around, so Karen-san broke the silence and asked.

“In the end, what is it you want to try after quitting as an idol and hero?”  
(Karen)

“Glad you asked! What I am aiming for next is a revolutionary occupation that can utilize the experience I have had as an idol and hero! A producer!!”  
(Celestis)

““Producer?!”” (Karen+Haine)

Another weird term came flying out.

“A revolutionary existence that grasps the special traits of an idol and plans ways to sell them in the most effective ways! I stood on the stage as an idol in the past, but this time, I will be standing at the back to support the younger generations!! From now on, I will change my standings, and support the idol industry even more!!” (Celestis)

I-Is that so!

“And so, I have already found the new idol I will be raising. With her talent and my smarts, we will create a big boom that can’t compare to the me of the past!!” (Celestis)

Saying this, Celestis headed towards the closed window.

And then, she opened it with a bang.

“Look! That’s the new talent I will be pushing!!” (Celestis)

We can instantly see that person from the window?!

Because Hydra Ville is adjacent to the sea, what came to my eyes immediately was the wide sea.

From that sea, a mermaid jumped up from it making a spray of water that created a rainbow.

“Oohohohohoho!! This is culture! This is truly culture!!”

No, rather than calling it a mermaid...! Isn’t that Gabriel?!

Are you saying you want to sell her as a new idol?!

“In this new world where humans and monsters are to coexist, an idol monster is plenty a topic! Gab-chan had good looks, and she is female! There’s plenty possibility that she will be a big hit! ...Gab-chan!!” (Celestis)

“Yes, Producer?!” (Gabriel)

For some reason, their wavelengths match?!

“Looks like you have finished the personal training that I gave you! Then, we will be planning the specifics of the performance!! Now that I have received the permission of Papa and Mama, the new Celestis is unstoppable!! This time, as a producer! Let’s aim for the summit of the idol industry, Gab-chan!!” (Celestis)

“Yes, Producer!!” (Gabriel)

No matter how old Celestis is, her aggressive take on her ambitions will never change.

Her new ambition has truly just begun.

# WR – Chapter 416-418: The Earth since then

After being overwhelmed by the deep sides of Hydra Ville, Karen-san and I were heavily exhausted mentally.

But we are expecting another heavy exhaustion ratio from the next place we are going to visit.

Because we are planning on going to the Earth Church's base that is Ishtar Blaze, the people that are specially crazy even within the Five Grand Churches.

\*\*\*\*

"It has been a while, Earth Founder-sama." (Haine)

"Huh? Whatcha say?" (Oba-san)

When we arrived at Ishtar Blaze, the first thing we did was give our greetings to the Founder.

The Founder-sama of this place had a past record of being a hero which came with a certain sharpness with her, but...

"IT HAS BEEN A WHILE! IT.HAS.BEEN.A.WHILE~~!!" (Haine)

"Aah. Ah ah, Niichan, it has been a while. Mah ears have completely gone bad, it been a pain." (Oba-san)

With the passing of four years, the past powerhouse has completely turned frail.

When I met her for the first time, she was already a granny, but she was still plenty vigorous, and yet...when you think humans are plenty aged already, they can still get even more aged huh.

"It has been tiresome lately ta sit in the Founder seat all day, ya see. I been telling 'em to let me stop already, but the talk doesn't seem to advance-ssa..." (Oba-san)

“There’s no one who can take your place as Founder yet after all.”

The one who entered our audience with the Founder was a tree person.

The Earth Demon Lord, Uriel.

“Uriel-san! It has been a while!” (Karen)

Karen-san greets Uriel politely.

“Yeah, it has been a while, Light hero-dono..... No, you are not a hero anymore, right.” (Uriel)

“Yeah. As commemoration of graduating as a hero, I am going around the nations greeting everyone. Haine-san is coming with me.” (Karen)

Uriel’s manners have already been polished so well that I could even tell just from normal conversation.

This guy has already changed in these four years huh.

“I been leaving everything troublesome of our Church ta Uriel-san-sa ne. That be why a senile granny like me can still manage as decoration.” (Oba-san)

The eyes of the Oba-san were so narrow now that I can’t even tell if they are open or closed.

They were a lot more open in the past...

“A decoration can be done by anyone, and yet, they ain’t letting me quit. It be truly troublesome-sa ne.” (Oba-san)

“It is because a person like you, who has both dignity and achievements, is standing at the top that everyone is able to leave a variety of things in the hands of a monster like me without any worries. What’s important is not intelligence and ability, but trust. You were the one who taught me that.” (Uriel)

Saying this, Uriel places a shawl he made himself onto the Oba-san.

“We need you to be in good health or we would be troubled. For the sake of the humans living in this nation, and for the sake of the monsters.” (Uriel)

“I feel sleepy-sa ne.” (Oba-san)

After that, the Oba-san didn't say anything more, as if she had truly fallen asleep.

\*\*\*\*\*

"According to the doctor, her heart has weakened." (Uriel)

While advancing through the Earth Church, Uriel speaks of the recent state of things.

"She aged drastically last year, you see. She has been repeating words like 'If I leave it ta everyone, I can be at peace', 'I be fine with dying anytime'. I can't help feeling pained hearing that." (Uriel)

Uriel is a monster, but I could tell he was worrying about the aged Oba-san from the bottom of his heart.

"We Demon Lords don't actually have a lifespan. That's exactly why I am scared of watching people dying and leaving them behind. I can't help but feel respect towards the humans that live to their best and have achieved great things with the limited time they have." (Uriel)

From within the four Demon Lords that have separated and are working at their respective churches, Uriel is the one that is the most connected in the work of the Church.

There was a reason for that...

"I am the Earth Demon Lord, so I can make earth element monsters after all. And the Golems are closely tied to the livelihood of this nation." (Uriel)

That was the first reason why Uriel was brought to this nation after all. Moreover, it was practically forced.

We passed by many people while we were walking, but every single one of them had bowed to Uriel.

"Demon Lord-sama, Demon Lord-sama~!"

"My gratitude, my gratitude~!"

Is how it normally went.

Their way of praising the Demon Lord was as if they were worshipping a God.

"You are incredibly popular. Aren't you even more popular than Mother Earth Mantle herself?" (Haine)

"Please don't say that. Who knows from where she is listening." (Uriel)

Is what Uriel says with a dry laugh.

"Because of that Mother Earth Goddess, the humans here have been living together with Golems since long ago. Everyone already knows, but this nation is the one that has the longest history in humans and monsters helping each other out." (Uriel)

From within the monsters, the only ones who heard out the words of humans and worked were the Golems.

Those Golems have been united by Uriel, and the people respect him deeply.

"The subject at hand now is seeing how the harmony of humans and monsters will nurture. We are currently cooperating with the Wind Church to research ways to add an ethereal engine to the Golems." (Uriel)

"Why do something like that?!" (Haine)

"The weakness of Golems is their natural speed and their inability to do precise work, so I thought about changing them as much as possible. Golems are just a mass of earth, so it is plenty possible to add a mechanical structure within it." (Uriel)

Golems that can fly in the sky like flying machines; Golems that can run through the land as if they were ethereal cars.

"But most of all, as long as Golems are present, there would be no need for the ethereal mechanization that the humans have developed; that's the thing I want to avoid. I considered the plan of having the humans lose the Golems for a brief period of time to introduce ethereal machinery, but they know that I can make Golems, so that plan was at an impasse." (Uriel)

To continue relying on Golems, or develop their civilization into that of the other nations; the Earth Church was heatedly discussing this.

"It is no good to develop just one or the other. Monsters and humans; they have to grow together..." (Uriel)

Uriel stops his feet.

“That’s what she continues to claim..... Oi, Sasae!” (Uriel)

The place Uriel had guided us to was a plaza.

There, a voluptuous woman shouldering a big scythe was being surrounded by many boys and girls.

“...Oya, the ones there, ain’t they Haine-niichan and Karen-nee-chan-dasu ka?!” (Sasae)

That’s right. She is the earth hero Sasae-chan that has grown greatly in the span of four years.

Her breasts and ass are all plump, and her height has also increased.

There’s not a single shadow of her little girl figure of four years ago.

“It has been a while, Sasae-chan.” (Karen)

“It been just a short while-dasu yo! We met at the Light capital not that long ago-dasu ka!!” (Sasae)

“True! I have been saying ‘it has been a while’ so many times that it ended up being a habit!!” (Karen)

Is what the hero companions say as they hug each other.

Sasae-chan was the youngest by a lot within the Legendary generation, so even after four years, she is still an active hero.

Karen-san has retired just the other day, so she is the last active hero.

In the light hero ceremony just the other day, Sasae-chan participated as a representative of the Earth Church.

In the time we were going through Muspelheim and Hydra Ville, she had returned straight to Ishtar Blaze.

“But really...no matter how many times I see you, you have really grown, Sasae-chan!” (Karen)

Is what Karen-san says as she stares at Sasae-chan’s body intently.

The first time we met Sasae-chan, she was around 12 years old, I think. She

was at an age where a growth spurt was natural, but even with that, she grew more than anyone.

Even the size of her boobs are in the high ranked side from the ones I have seen.

In the past, when she fused with Mantle, she changed into a voluptuous woman of unbelievable proportions, but Sasae-chan managed to obtain a body similar to that one with time.

“This is truly the nurturing ability of Ishtar Blaze.” (Haine)

“But in my opinion, these be too big, and it be uncomfortable-dasu yo. And every time I meet Mirack-neechan, Celestis-neechan, and Hyue-neechan, they all fondle mah boobs-dasu. Also, Karen-neechan be fondling them in present tense-dasu.” (Sasae)

“Eeh~? Because you know, with them being so splendid, wouldn’t you feel like touching them?” (Karen)

Is what Karen-san says as she fondles those boobs that still had plenty to spare even when spreading her hand as wide as possible.

I feel like the atmosphere will turn pink by just this alone.

“If we are talking about the size of the boobs only, it doesn’t reach Yoneko-san’s yet. This is on a level where it would actually be rude not to fondle them. Isn’t that right, Haine-san?” (Karen)

“If I say ‘yes’ here, will I be allowed to fondle them too?” (Haine)

“I will have the Scorched Earth Annihilation corps arrest you.” (Karen)

It was a trap!!

Why does Karen-san always try to test me?!

Is it because of love?

I really don’t get it.

“Or more like, Uriel is gone?!” (Haine)

“That personage be really busy making Golems-dasu. We have ta let him have his time-dasu yo!” (Sasae)

I think he simply ran away though...

A trauma was edged into Uriel the very moment he met Sasae-chan, so he must still be afraid of her even now.

“And so, Sasae-chan, what were you doing?” (Karen)

“I was in the middle of teaching a variety of things to the children of the village-dasu yo! The way to use the scythe and Golems! They have ta learn properly both of these things-dasu!” (Sasae)

So that's why she is hanging out with the children in this plaza huh.

“They all be the children of mah cousins, so they be blood related-dasu yo. Today be a babysitting day-dasu!” (Sasae)

.....

...Just a glance and I can tell that there's more than a hundred here though...

So this is the fertility of Ishtar Blaze huh.

The earth hero family with the Founder Oba-san at the helm truly has a lot of children, but her grandchild Sasae-chan is the third generation. So if they are the children of her cousins, that would make this children the fourth generation.

And they surpass the hundreds huh.

It gets scarier and scarier!

“Niichan~!”

“It has been a while, Haine-niichan~!!”

From within the children, there's the twin daughters of Yoneko-san I have met before mixed in the group.

Yoneko-san is also a grandchild of the Earth Founder-san, and would fall into the cousin category for Sasae-chan, so well, it wouldn't be weird for these pair of twins to be here.

“Yoneko-neechan be having an outing with the other mothers, so I be looking after 'em-dasu. The next earth hero who will succeed me might be within them, so I have ta guide 'em properly-dasu!!” (Sasae)

“Sasae-chan...you have grown.” (Haine)

In the past, Sasae-chan would rush forward on assumptions.

Now, everyone has retired and she has become the oldest of the heroes, and her career as a hero has also grown.

In the eyes of the heroes from the other churches, she must look like a reliable big sister.

There's the ones that grow old, the ones that mature, and the ones that are newly born.

That's the cycle of human life that has been repeated for more than a thousand years. And that's really visible in this Earth nation.

“When I come to this nation, I feel like I am being shown the reality of living.”  
(Karen)

That was the honest opinion of Karen-san.

It is true that, in this nation, no matter what kind of evolution the humans have done, you can feel that the roots of humanity still remain here.

“We can't lose! In order to live our best as humans, let's marry as soon as possible and give birth to the next generation!” (Karen)

“And obviously it turned into that kind of talk!” (Haine)

Since the time her retirement was decided, Karen-san has been more frequent in those kind of topics!

“Don't be careless, Sasae-chan! Time passes by quicker than you can notice, so don't let your chance to fall in love escape, okay?! Obtain both achievements as a hero and happiness as a woman!” (Karen)

Karen-san was about to raise her fist with a ‘Yeaah!', but Sasae-chan was dumbfounded.

“Eh? Ya still haven't been told-dasu ka? I thought that I had already told this to someone-dasu.” (Sasae)

“Eh?” (Karen)

“I will be marrying next month-dasu yo.” (Sasae)

.....

.....Eh?!

“EEEEEEEEEHHH?!” (Karen)

Karen-san was obviously shocked as well.

“At the place I was doing my rounds at, I found a good hardworking husband, so I confessed immediately and got an ok-dasu! Life is short and I be a lady-dasu kara!!” (Sasae)

Sasae-chan says with her chest puffed out.

“I be told that we are both young and it be too soon, but looking at the customs of Ishtar Blaze, I would say it be close to a suitable age-dasu! Ah, even if I say I be marrying, there be no problems in continuing as hero-dasu! Sobo-chan be a precedent after all-dasu!” (Sasae)

The current Earth Founder was a famous hero with the nickname of ‘Taker by the roots’.

She was so strong that, even when it should be the norm to retire after marrying, she had continued as a hero until her daughters grew enough to be her successor.

And so, Sasae-chan, who had fought through the biggest danger of the world that was the Demon Lord battle, had become a new legend that was said to surpass that Taker by the roots.

It is exactly because it is Sasae-chan that they will probably not only allow her to continue as a hero after marriage, but maybe even after giving birth!

“Well, there’s a lot of things I want to retort about though!” (Haine)

Even when humans have reconciled with monsters, the hero system still serves as a big role for the church as their face.

It looks like, within that hero system, the long long legacy of Sasae-chan was about to begin.

- 417: The Wind since then

A few days more after the shocking happenings at Ishtar Blaze.

We were heading to the next place, the Wind capital, Rudras Metropolis.

When talking about Rudras Metropolis, the first thing that comes to mind is the Wind Church that's the most advanced ethereal technology research, and thanks to that advancement, the city itself is on top of a gigantic mobilization device.

They don't stay in one place, and if need be, they can move their whole city together with them.

Of course, there's terrain limitations in that they can't cross deserts or seas.

.....It has been four years since then.

\*\*\*\*\*

"...It is floating." (Karen)

".....It is indeed floating." (Haine)

We were dumbstruck by the panoramic view we had of Rudras Metropolis.

Dumbstruck by the full portrait of Rudras Metropolis that has changed to a point that our understanding can't catch up.

The moving city that was the amalgamation of their ethereal technology was now floating in the sky.

I don't know what's the deal with that, but it is flying in the sky.

A whole city was floating at a pretty high altitude.

The moving city of Rudras Metropolis had now become the flying city of Rudras Metropolis.

\*\*\*\*\*

"Haine! And also Karen-dono! It is an honor to see you here!"

Since we are riding flying machines, we could easily enter the place.

When we lower at a place that seems to be a space specially for takeoffs and landings of flying devices, the Wind Founder, Toreido Shiva was waiting for us.

"Why is it flying?!" (Haine)

It had been a while since we met again, but the first thing that came out flying from my mouth was that.

Because there's no way not to.

Why is a city flying?

“.....Well, to tell you the truth, we had plans of remodeling Rudras Metropolis since a good while ago, but...” (Shiva)

It is impossible to cross mountains and seas after all.

Everything they pass through would be mowed down by the city after all.

That's why, I can understand that, rather than using tires to move, it would be more convenient to fly in the sky.

But...!

“Didn't you say that it would take at least a decade to actually make it come true?! Why did the estimated time get reduced by more than half?!” (Haine)

“Hahahaha. You could say this is the true power of our Wind Church.” (Shiva)

Even when I was shaking him by the collar, Shiva was filled with composure.

“Ethereal technology is always in constant progress. It is not strange for it to be possible to do what we couldn't do yesterday. That progress at times can advance time of other things even more.” (Shiva)

Advance time.

“Well, this flying city still has many issues we have to solve. The biggest of them is the energy issue. Its continuous flying time is limited. A practical flying city is still a thing of the future.” (Shiva)

Also, it seems to be weak to bad weather.

That's a problem that one can easily arrive to if they were to think a bit though.

“In the first place, the reason why we made Rudras Metropolis into a moving city was because we wanted to make our location unknown by constantly moving, so that we could hide from the other churches. We could get a strategic advantage against the opposing churches in the past after all.” (Shiva)

“But there’s no need for that anymore. The Five Grand Churches have gotten along incredibly well after all!” (Karen)

Shiva nodded at the remark of Karen-san.

“That’s right. That’s why this flying city is not for past grudges, but for friendship.” (Shiva)

“Meaning?” (Haine)

“In the future, we will have the floating Rudras Metropolis be connected to the other four capitals by something like a wire, and with that, we can make a ropeway of sorts to come and go. We will make Rudras Metropolis into a communication center that connects the whole world together!” (Shiva)

What a big dream.

That edge of Shiva that was so sharp it would cut anyone close to him had reduced as time went on.

It is as if his fangs have been trimmed.

Is this also because of time?

“Aniue-sama, you were still here-de gozaru ka?”

The moment I felt the conversation would lengthen, a reproachful voice rang at my back.

“Hyue-chan!!” (Karen)

The little sister of Shiva and previous wind hero, Hyue, had appeared.

As a comrade of hers that went through harsh battles together, Karen-san hugs Hyue without any restraints.

“I came here worried because you weren’t coming back no matter how long I waited, and what I find here... Aniue-sama, what’s your idea of having guests standing here in the open? We of the Wind Church will be known as people who don’t know how to receive our guests, you know?” (Hyue)

“Ah, sorry. I got excited talking about this flying city. I ended up rambling on.” (Shiva)

“I also wanted to welcome Karen-dono properly. It is incredibly inconvenient

that someone has to watch over the flying engine at all times-de gozaru.”

(Hyue)

“Right! Why is Hyue here?! Why did you leave the flying engine alone while it is still activated and came here?! The flying engine is still incomplete, and the floating limit is 30 minutes, you know?!” (Shiva)

It can only last that long? That’s short.

“I know. That’s why...” (Hyue)

Our footing seemed to be shaking.

“We are preparing to land-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

From the speakers of the deck, a noisy announcement resounded.

{Prepare to land! Prepare to land!}

{We will be cutting off the energy of the flying engine and landing on the ground.}

{Residents, please brace yourself for landing! Hold onto the security handrails at your vicinity, and please secure safety!!}

{10 more minutes! 5 more minutes for landing! 3 minutes!!}

What an incredible ruckus!!

Looks like there still the need for more time before humanity can take the skies.

\*\*\*\*\*

While making a big *zushiiiiin!* noise, Rudras Metropolis landed.

Because of that, a big ruckus like that of a toy box being flipped over was made, and we who were at the outer edge of the city were on the brink of being thrown out.

“Don’t fly again until you make proper improvements in your facilities!!”  
(Haine)

“It is not as if we fly regularly. We did a special exception today in order to welcome you guys.” (Shiva)

So you made it fly when we came?!

That's troublesome for us, but more than that, it makes me feel as if we were causing trouble to the populace of Rudras Metropolis, so please don't do that again!

"It has been a while, Hyue-chan. What have you been doing after retiring from being the wind hero?" (Karen)

Karen-san was going at her own pace, or more like, even after that messed up event, she was prioritizing her own curiosity.

Karen-san and Hyue had a tight connection as fellow heroes.

Hyue was the one who was the latest in joining the ranks of hero within the Legendary generation, but she was older than Sasae-chan in terms of age, so she has retired as a hero recently.

Really, I wonder what she has been doing lately.

"I have been appointed as the boss of the Kazama Shinobis." (Hyue)

"Eh?"

Aren't the Kazama Shinobis the organization that serves as the military force of the Wind Church? Like the Aurora Knights of the Light Church.

Heroes serve as the fighting strength of the church as well as their standard bearer, so their roles were basically to keep order of the military forces in their respective nation.

"Does that mean Hyue has retired as a hero and is now in a behind-the-scenes position?" (Haine)

"No, that's not it." (Shiva)

Shiva joined in the explanation.

"It has been decided that the Kazama Shinobis will be dividing in two. The division that will be specializing in armed might, and the other that will be specialized in information gathering." (Shiva)

"These two were originally one. The Kazama Shinobis were heavily different from groups like the Aurora Knight corps to begin with, but now that the wars

are over, and being friendly with other churches is prioritized nowadays, there were opinions here and there that said they didn't want to show a dirty image-de gozaru." (Hyue)

"In this era where disputes are gone, you could say that the importance for information has increased even more. And so, by separating those areas from the Kazama Shinobis, the newly remade information gathering of the Kazama Shinobis was born." (Shiva)

Hyue and Shiva explain alternately.

"The remaining military force of the Kazama Shinobis has taken the name of Whirlwind Raid corps it originally had from the Church. We left the command of them to the newly appointed wind hero. In that sense, you could say that the information division Hyue is taking charge of is the real Kazama Shinobis though." (Shiva)

"Ooh! That's impressive, Hyue-chan! It is like the boss of a spy division?!" (Karen)

Where did Karen-san learn that word?

"My objective is to be of help to Aniue-sama so, no matter what form it changes to, it is a blessing to be of use to the people of the Wind nation as well." (Hyue)

Hyue says in an admirable manner.

"Ah, now that I think about it, there's something I remembered in regards to the information gathering. Haine-dono..." (Hyue)

"Yes?" (Haine)

"There's this Frost guy that entered the Light Church at the same period as Haine-dono, right-de gozaru?" (Hyue) <Wow, I thought author forgot about him.>

Ah, now that she mentions it...

Entering the Light Church at the same period as me, and stationed at the cafeteria because of a weird exam. My post was changed soon after, so I haven't spoken much with Frost after that.

I thought he was still doing his best in the cafeteria though.

“He was a member of the Kazama Shinobis-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

“Eeeeeh?!” (Haine)

I didn’t know at all!

“At those times, the churches had friction with each other, so in order to grasp the inside state of the other side, we forged the identity of many and had them infiltrate the church as commoners-de gozaru. But now that times have changed and there’s no need for spies anymore, many have been released and have returned-de gozaru. But...” (Hyue)

-De gozaru, but...?

“Only Frost refused returning, and stayed in the Light Church-de gozaru. He said he got a wife there and can’t leave the place.” (Hyue)

A wife? Wait, don’t tell me...the amazon of the Light cafeteria...Regine-san?

“The current Kazama Shinobis may be an intelligence gathering division, but it is not as if we steal information from opposing forces now. We simply gather information legally, and analyze it. Because of that, I want to inform you guys as members of the Light Church-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

“I see. Thanks...” (Haine)

“If you meet Frost there, please give him my regards-de gozaru. Tell him that there’s no need to think of his former home and protect his own family.” (Hyue)

I feel like she said an incredibly big secret as if nothing at this late of a time.

Rather than the secret that only a few people know, I was more shocked by the fact that Frost managed to conquer Regine-san.

Looks like a lot happened since then.

(...Oi.)

With those short words, I was brought back to reality. It looks like several armor parts were flying around in my sight.

Those parts combined in mid-air and made a human shape...

“Raphael! You are still rocking that style?” (Haine)

By using his special ability of changing his cells into insects, he can divide and combine as many times as he wants, so by entering an armor set, he can freely fly around.

For a period of time, he had no choice but to rely on the armor as a shell, but he has regained his strength now, and there's no need for the armor to serve as shell...

“Isn't that fine? And also, don't call it a style! You may not know, but I am pretty popular among the children. I got a big cheering not that long ago.”  
(Raphael)

Popular with the kids?

“More importantly...I was wondering why you guys haven't come at the stipulated time, so I came to check, and here I see this pitiful sight. Shiva and Hyue, you guys haven't finished the work you have today, right?” (Raphael)

“Tch. These few years, you have become a demon that stresses the schedule times...” (Hyue)

“Huh? Who do you think has made the technology progress drastically in the Wind Church? It is because I am using all of my separated insect cells for parallel thinking, and am able to simulate several scenarios in an instant, right?”  
(Raphael)

Eh?

Raphael has been doing that?

“Raphael is basically a living nano computer of this Rudras Metropolis now, and is respected by everyone-de gozaru yo.” (Hyue)

I really don't understand what she is saying.

“And such an important person like I is being used as an errand boy, you know? .....Kuromiya Haine, and also Karen.” (Raphael)

““Y-Yes?!””

I got surprised by the sudden call of my name.

“There’s still someone who wants to meet you guys. I will guide you to that person.” (Raphael)

““W-What?””

A person that wants to meet us?

Who is that?

“...Well then, I will be returning to work-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

Hyue immediately ran away for some reason?!

“I will go as well.” (Shiva)

“Wait-de gozaru. Aniue-sama has even more work piled up than me-de gozaro. You activated the flying engine just to welcome Haine-dono and Karen-dono, so there should be plenty complaints from the pertinent areas regarding that-de gozaru.” (Hyue)

“Wait, Hyue! I will go with Haine and the others! Because my cute treasure is there~~!!” (Shiva)

Even though Shiva was desperately pleading, he was powerlessly dragged away by Hyue.

Really, who are we meeting?

“Ah, damn it..... Haine!” (Shiva)

“Hm?” (Haine)

“For now, let’s meet at that place.” (Shiva)

“Yeah, at that place.” (Haine)

And so, in this way, Shiva was dragged by his little sister, and led to his working place.

- 418: Future heroes

Continuing our stay at Rudras Metropolis.

After finishing our greetings to Shiva and Hyue, we were being guided to another place.

The one guiding us is none other than Raphael.

“.....”

“.....”

“Uhm...” (Karen)

The silence while we were moving was painful.

Karen-san valiantly tried to make conversation, but she was unable to find a topic, and silence fell back.

Within the Demon Lords, Raphael was the Demon Lord that we fought the most fiercely with.

We tried to erase him one-sidedly before even giving him any chance to see what path he would be taking, and with that as the trigger, a battle of hatred was created.

The one who received that hatred and solved it was Hyue.

That's why, after Raphael came back to life, he was able to take residence in Rudras Metropolis with not much issue in living together with humans just like the other Demon Lords.

Humans and Demon Lords; even if the ill feelings between races is gone now, I personally still feel awkward when with Raphael.

“Uhm...”

“Don't try to be considerate.” (Raphael)

Raphael said straight.

“Even if the reconciliations of humans and Demon Lords is progressing well, it doesn't mean we have to force ourselves to get along. Kuromiya Haine, our first meeting was the very definition of a battle to the death. Being able to have friendly chats with memories like those would be pushing it.” (Raphael)

It was a cold attitude.

“B-But...” (Karen)

Because of her personality, Karen-san tried to push on, but Raphael stops it

with his hand.

“What’s important is not the past, but the future. Seeing that child, I learned that, in order to create a path to the future, there’s the need for the new generation that doesn’t know of the past grudges.” (Raphael)

“That child?” (Karen)

“When you see for yourself, you will understand.” (Raphael)

Looks like we arrived at the destination.

We even used a car in the middle of it, and after entering a big house, we crossed a corridor, and entered a room.

The place we arrived at was an incredibly noisy space.

“Ooh, you are finally here!”

“To make us wait, you guys have grown cocky huh.”

“Well, they are actually a big deal, you know. They are the legends that saved the world after all.”

“Fuhii... Truly normies.”

These people...!

“Previous heroes?!” (Haine)

“Mirack and the others retired, so we can’t be considered previous heroes anymore though.” (Kyouka)

Mirack’s predecessor, Abi Kyouka-san; Celestis’ predecessor, Ra Sarasa-san; Sasae-chan’s predecessor, lemon Yoneko-san; and the problematic wind hero that came before Hyue, Brastor Juo.

Excluding the Light Church, we are in the presence of all the heroes of two generations ago.

...It is a pain to call them in a new way, so let’s just call them previous heroes collectively.

“Now that I think about it, it was strange that, no matter what nation we were in, we didn’t meet any of the previous heroes. So you were all gathered

here?" (Haine)

Is what I said with confusion and surprise.

"Yeah. Since the heroes battle, we have gathered here regularly to have chats." (Kyouka)

"This time, it coincidentally overlapped with your visits." (Sarasa)

"Saying it be a coincidence be dishonest~." (Yoneko)

And everyone began to speak their piece.

"Actually...we arranged this meeting beforehand. We all wanted to meet you at the same time, you see..." (Juo)

The bride of the Wind Founder, Juo-san, said.

Looks like she is taking care of her skin lately, her attire and hair look refreshing, making her outward appearance beautiful.

"That's a gesture that makes me incredibly happy." (Karen)

Karen-san walks forward before me.

"When I see everyone gathered, it reminds me of the heroes battle. That was the trigger for the five Churches and the heroes to completely unite." (Karen)

'Harmony between the churches is an unreachable dream', that's how badly the previous heroes of that time got along.

It is true that this event served as an opener for the new era. It may not have been on the level of changing the whole world, but it was a moment that changed society heavily.

And after that, the previous heroes were the biggest help to the current ones in the battle against the Demon Lords.

"In the past, we acted as if looking down on the heroes of other churches proved our own worth." (Kyouka)

"To think we would be getting along so well now. Remembering the past actually makes me feel embarrassed." (Sarasa)

"It would be great if, not only us, but our husbands were to get along with

each other as well~. It would influence the economy of the churches after all.”  
(Yoneko)

“The hotel chain that Kyouka’s husband manages; the mercantile enterprise of the family Sarasa married into; Yoneko’s husband, because of his connection with the Earth Church, is the most influential member of the congress. Thanks to everyone working as middlemen, my husband has been helped out a lot...”  
(Juo)

“What are you saying, Juo?” (Kyouka)

“Your husband is the biggest fish out of all of them.” (Sarasa)

“He be the Wind Founder after all~. Yer the biggest gold digger here~.”  
(Yoneko)

Everyone laughs with a cheerful ‘Ahahahaha!’.

These people have changed so much it is shocking.

“Now that they mention it, this is Shiva’s house huh. No surprise it is extravagant, being the house of a Founder and all.” (Haine)

And it is a suitable place for Juo-san and her friends to gather.

I feel really constricted being the only man here invading a home party of housewives!

“...Light hero, Karen. Congratulations on your retirement as a hero.” (Kyouka)

“We called you here today because we wanted to tell you that. You have been a truly great help to us after all.” (Sarasa)

Inviting Karen-san and I to take a seat around the table, the previous heroes offer us tea.

With four years passing by, the young beauties of before are now completely giving off the presence of wives.

“N-No really... I wasn’t that big of a help...!!” (Karen)

Karen-san quickly grew modest.

“You really were, you know. You were the one who stood at the foremost in the battles.” (Sarasa)

“The reason why we can be here together be because of yer hard work.”  
(Yoneko)

“There’s someone we want to introduce you to.” (Kyouka)

Someone they want to introduce?

“...It is okay now, Raphael. Bring them all here.” (Juo)

Juo-san says, and the door of the room opened up with a bang, and right after, critters began to pour in.

—Is what I thought, but that wasn’t the case.

What I thought were small critters were actually normal humans.

But they were incredibly small and young. Four children that are around 2-3 years old.

Following them was Raphael who was making metallic noises as he entered the room.

And here I was wondering where he had gone to.

“You people...make it so we can enter quicker. I know it was to give them a surprise, but...” (Raphael)

What’s with these children?

They were going ‘wai~’ ‘kya~’ as they head towards the feet of a respective previous hero.

There’s four previous heroes; four children in total appeared.

Could it be...

“Raphael-san, thanks for looking after these children.” (Sarasa)

“If you are going to learn of humans, try properly learning how to babysit. It was a nice experience, right?” (Kyouka)

Is what Kyouka-san says as she holds up one of the children.

That child had similar skin color and hair color to that of Kyouka-san. The other children that the other previous heroes held up had similar resemblances.

There no doubt about it.

"No, impossible impossible impossible. Human children feel like they would break just by touching them a bit. That just makes it too scary to deal with them. More so when the children themselves do dangerous things on their own. I just can't get a rest. It is too much for me." (Raphael)

"All children be like that. Human women be pushed around by those kids and manage to raise them, so it should serve as nice experience for Raphael-san~." (Yoneko)

Karen-san and I were beginning to feel left out, so I decided on asking.

"Uhm...sorry but, who are these children?" (Haine)

"You can tell just by looking, right? They are our children." (Kyouka)

Right.

They are the children that each of those four had raised inside themselves and gave birth to.

Yoneko-san was already the mother of three four years ago, so this one must be her fourth.

She must have matched her friends and gave birth to more.

"We were made to fight in the Demon Lord battle even when we had retired heroes already after all." (Sarasa)

"We were not allowed to have a child until the Demon Lord battle calmed down." (Kyouka)

"The reason why we could give birth to these children and raise 'em be because Karen-san and the others managed to put an end to the battle~." (Yoneko)

"That's why...we are truly grateful." (Juo)

The children look to be around three years old, and the Demon Lord battle finished four years ago, so...just calculating it feels embarrassing...

"Ah, also, Shiva said he wanted to come with us..." (Haine)

"Papa is enamored with our child after all..." (Juo)

Juo-san held up the obedient child that resembled her.

I see...so Shiva tried to use us as a chance to meet her child.

“Uhm...everyone’s children? Then...” (Karen)

Karen-san asks shyly, and the mothers respond in order.

“As you can tell, they are all girls.” (Kyouka)

“Kyouka-san’s child is so much of a tomboy that I wonder at times if she is actually a boy though.” (Sarasa)

“Being energetic be a good thing~. But with such a coincidence in genders, I feel fate at work here~.” (Yoneko)

“They were born at the same exact year...and they are all girls. With these much matching, in time, they will most likely...” (Juo)

““““All become heroes together.”“““

“...Such a thing might actually happen.” (Kyouka)

“That would be a dream-like situation.” (Sarasa)

“Would be around 10 years from now. By that time, I’m sure Sasae-chan should have retired~.” (Yoneko)

“Friendly heroes.” (Juo)

Hearing this, Karen-san’s expression brightened more than anyone else.

“Waah! That sounds great!!” (Karen)

With the Demon Lord battle reaching an end, monsters are not enemies of humanity anymore.

That’s why there’s no enemies for the churches to fight anymore, and the heroes have remained as simply the face of the church.

As long as the five Churches remain, heroes will continue to exist.

With many more successors to come.

“Well, if I were to mention a problem, it would be that we would be missing the Light one from the five Grand Churches.” (Kyouka)

“That’s why, isn’t that where Karen-san has to do her best in?” (Sarasa)

“Ye have retired already, so yer duty now be the same as us~.” (Yoneko)

“Give birth to the next generation and raise them. The birth of a new light hero depends on you.” (Juo)

What are you people inducing to the recently retired hero?!

“To think that everyone was having so much expectations in me...!

Understood! For the sake of a bright future, I myself will give birth and raise the person that will carry on the next generation!! Isn’t that right, Haine-san?!”  
(Karen)

“And we go full circle!” (Haine)

I was expecting it already, geez.

“W-Well...that’s how humans have passed on their will in the more than thousands of years. Seeing the sight of you all like this, I can truly experience the reality of that.” (Haine)

It took my all to say this as I drank tea, so that I could at least dilute the situation a bit.

“That’s right. Humans have loved each other, gave birth to the next generation, and in that way, we have continued existing for thousands of years.” (Kyouka)

“Haine-san, you can’t slack on that duty. Men think of no one else other than themselves unless they are expressly told by someone else after all.” (Sarasa)

And yet, they are now ganging up on me!

This is hella embarrassing! This calls for a strategic retreat!! I must escape from the premises!!

“N-Now that I think about it, that was unexpected! To think Raphael would act as a babysitter!” (Haine)

“Don’t go trying to change the topic so blatantly.” (Raphael)

Raphael completely saw through my intention.

“But...didn’t I tell you before? That my technique can grasp the heart of the children.” (Raphael)

“Grasp the heart of the children?” (Haine)

“Watch and marvel.” (Raphael)

As soon as he said this, he separated the armor parts that constitute himself, and begins to fly around the room.

And then, he once again combines, and makes a pose!!

“Waai~~!!”

“Rafa-chan, so cool~!!”

“One more time! Do it one more time~!!”

“Do it again holding a rifle and a sword~!!”

Cheers from the children were flowing out?!

“How’s that?” (Raphael)

“Well, it was indeed decently cool even in my eyes, so...” (Haine)

It must have been quite shocking for the children.

“But I thought those kind of things would make boys happier than they do for girls though.” (Karen)

The opinion of Karen-san is valid.

The little girls that have inherited the blood and talent of the previous heroes; being able to cope with something like this must mean that they really do have the aptitude to become heroes in the future.

The kind of girls that like sword fights more than playing with dolls.

“By the way, Raphael...” (Juo)

The lady head of this household, Juo, speaks.

“Dividing and combining indoors is dangerous, so from here on, do so outside.” (Juo)

“Yes, sorry.” (Raphael)

And in this way, the life of humans is passed on.

# WR – Chapter 419-420: The Light since then

After going through all the other nations, our journey was still not over.

There's still one more destination we have left.

We are heading there now.

The Underworld Country.

\*\*\*\*\*

“Uwa~! It has gotten lively~!!” (Karen)

True.

This is the first thing Karen-san said after going down to where the Underworld Country is.

I followed after her and was surprised by the prosperity of the area.

The Underworld Country that had fallen a long time ago and should not have any people living in it has now become a boisterous place with many people.

“This is the Underworld Country investigation team that the five Grand Churches sent cooperatively huh.” (Haine) In the four years after the Demon Lord battle, the existence of the Underworld Country had been made clear, and the five churches decided on making a combined front in investigating it.

As of now, we can see several ethereal lights set up here and there in the Underworld Country, the sand that was piled in this old ruined city has been carefully swept with brushes, and the carvings that have come out to light from this are being sketched or photographed by the people around.

Everyone is currently investigating the uncovered Underworld Country and trying to recover that lost history.

No, not only the existence of the Underworld Country was uncovered, the

existence of the Dark God Entropy they worshipped has also come to light.

The other heroes also came to this Underworld Country, brought back the dark power, and thanks to that, they managed to defeat Lucifer.

This is so well-known that there's no one in the world that doesn't know about it. The Dark God Entropy has gathered a lot of attention as the sixth God that brought the power to save the world.

"I wouldn't have minded my existence staying a secret though..." (Haine)

I was talking to myself there, but Karen-san who was by my side heard me clearly.

"No way! Haine-san...no, Entropy-sama is the God that thought all the time about us since the moment the world was born! It should be fine for humans to be grateful for that!!" (Karen) "Is that so...!" (Haine)

This is a conversation we can have only because Karen-san knows of my identity.

I was sealed for 1,600 years since the world was born, so I don't have much experience of people worshipping me, and once it actually does happen, it is embarrassing.

"It is okay! As the study of the Underworld Country progresses, we will learn about how the Dark God was worshipped here. And then, in time, everyone will worship Entropy just like the other Gods! When that happens, I am sure it will be wonderful!!" (Karen) "I'm feeling itchy just hearing it..." (Haine)

At the very least, in the current state, the Underworld Country is simply being investigated as a historical location, so a lot of people of the Light nation who are the most specialized in that area were sent to study the place.

To tell the truth, Karen-san and I...

"We will be working here as part of the investigation team from today on, right?" (Haine) "That's right." (Karen)

So that's how it is.

Karen-san was a hero, so she could have had a better post than this if she wanted. But she didn't wish for that, and instead, was given the job to join in

the investigation of the Underworld Country.

“I want to be of use to society in this place.” (Karen)

“...”

“If the study of the Underworld Country progresses, the era that was gone from the history of humanity will come to light, and we will learn about where we came from, and what we have done. With just the simple fact of knowing or not knowing, perception can change.” (Karen) “Karen-san, you have already saved the world, and yet, you are still trying to be of use to humans?” (Haine) “Of course! I am one of the Gods now after all!!” (Karen)

Karen-san says with pride.

She has fused with the divine power of Ates and turned into a Human God.

At that time, I thought that this eternity as a God would become a curse to her, but Karen-san is not the kind of weakling who would falter over such small things.

No matter if she is a human or God, she doesn't hesitate to act for the sake of others.

That's the kind of person; the kind of God; the kind of soul she is.

“...Now then, let's leave the sentimentalism till there.” (Haine)

“Right. Let's greet the collective leader of the investigation team that we will be under the care of from today on.” (Karen) An investigation team comprised of members of all five Grand Churches were dispatched to this Underworld Country, so there's a leader to command and put in order this team that would definitely create friction with such a diverse group of people.

And that person is...

\*\*\*\*\*

“Haine-sama! Karen-sama! It has been a while!!”

“Doraha-chan!” (Karen)

At the headquarters of the investigation team, we arrived at the tent of the leader, and the one who welcomed us was the shadow user, Doraha.

It is the girl that had been living with us in Apollon City just recently.

After four years, she has grown into a strong and beautiful figure, but for us, Doraha will always be Doraha.

“Sorry, Doraha-chan. Having you come here before us. It must have been lonely being in a place where there’s only people you don’t know, right?” (Karen) “Karen-sama had her important hero retirement ceremony after all. It can’t be helped that you had to stay in Apollon City. Also, you managed to meet with your friends you haven’t met after a long time, right?” (Doraha) “Yeah! They are all doing really well!” (Karen)

“If it is to make time for the sake of that, it is a matter of fact that I would go first to the location.” (Doraha) At first, she was intensely unsociable and made it hard for us to even send her to errands, but now, Doraha has grown greatly.

Now that I think about it, we first met Doraha at this Underworld Country.

Doraha crossed time and has returned once again to her birthplace to bring it back to life.

“Let’s not just stand here talking. Please enter the tent. The investigation team leader is waiting for the arrival of you two.” (Doraha) “Ah, right.” (Haine)

Doraha guided us and we entered the tent.

The one waiting for us there sitting was the beauty that we had seen when we left Apollon City.

“You two have finally arrived.”

“Yorishiro-sama! Light hero —I mean, Underworld Country investigation team member, Karen, has arrived!!” (Karen) “Me too.” (Haine)

Yorishiro.

She is the highest position in this investigation team.

Doraha is her assistant.

“So Yorishiro-sama really did arrive faster than us huh.” (Karen)

“You guys went around the nations while I just had to head straight here after all..... Karen-san...” (Yorishiro) “Yes?” (Karen)

“Can you stop with the -sama? I am not the Light Founder anymore after all.” (Yorishiro) Right, since she is now the investigation team leader, she can’t concurrently be the Light Founder as well.

Almost at the same time as Karen-san retired, Yorishiro had passed the Light Founder position to her successor and quitted.

Compared to the grand ceremony made for Karen-san to pass on her position, hers was done without much of an audience.

More so when she is one of the Founders that managed to fight through in the most problematic times of humanity.

“The ones who fought upfront were the heroes. It is obvious that Karen-san would be the most acclaimed since she was one of those heroes.” (Yorishiro) “But it was wrapped up by simply passing down the position, right? With the hero just recently being changed as well, would that be okay?” (Haine) “No problem. The next Light Founder is that Grades-san after all.” (Yorishiro) Light General, Grades.

Even though he was simply a vice-captain when I met him, he has climbed up quite a whole lot.

He is probably the one who has been promoted the most within my acquaintances.

“He is the most suited for the Light Founder position of this era.” (Yorishiro) The already former Founder Yorishiro said this while the wooden seat she was sitting on made a creaking sound.

“With the five Grand Churches being peaceful, the monsters and humans coexisting, we shouldn’t bring old traditions into matters. Like the pedigree doctrine that spread like a disease in the Light Church, and the pointless hereditary system.” (Yorishiro) The other churches didn’t have as much of a problem with this, but the Founder of the Light Church was always set to being hereditary.

The important posts aside from the Founder one were also mostly the same, and in the time when I first arrived at the Light Church, it was on the level where it was clear how much it was decaying.

There, Yorishiro stood up, and with Karen-san and my help, we managed to better this little by little, and the past misdeeds of the Light Church have been mostly eliminated.

And even Yorishiro herself gave up her seat as Founder to completely cut off past traditions. The new Founder is Grades-san who doesn't hold any pedigree or connections.

"There's no better person than Grades-san as Light Founder to prove the new standpoint of the Light Church." (Yorishiro) He entered the Aurora Knights without any connections, and rose all the way to vice-captain with ability alone.

After that, it may have been with the assistance of the coup, but he managed to rise to General, and showed leadership that surpassed his position at the time of the Demon Lord battles.

That's why more people than expected had accepted him as the new Founder.

"But even if that's the case, wasn't it too fast? Yorishiro, you yourself are still young as well, so you could have made several reformations and—" (Haine)  
"Haine-san, we have already had this conversation many times before I was going to quit as Founder." (Yorishiro) "Well, yeah." (Haine)

"Rather, it is exactly because I am still young that I wanted to retire. Passing down the Founder seat to Grades-san is the best and last reformation I can do." (Yorishiro) It is because I heard about it and felt like she was in the right that I couldn't stop the resignation of Yorishiro.

"By resigning in the time when she still had influential power, Yorishiro-sama wanted to be of help to Grades-san as the new Founder, right?" (Karen) Karen-san says with a face as if she is on the know.

Assigned as the Founder without any connections or pedigree; Grades is an unprecedented new Founder.

In anything that has no precedent, there will always be winds trying to push it back. There's no guarantee that Grades-san will not fall on his knees at that opposing wind.

"That's why, by using all my influence as previous Founder, I got rid of the

forces that would try to go against Grades-san.” (Yorishiro) “By doing that and then putting Grades-san in the Founder position, the custom of the Light Founder being assigned not by connections but by ability will be settled. It would wipe out the hereditary system that was corroding the church in the past...” (Haine) That’s the objective of Yorishiro, but...Grades-san, who was chosen to be that tailwind, wasn’t elated of being the new Founder.

Before leaving from Apollon City, I went to where he was with the intentions of celebrating him assuming the Founder position.

‘There’s no way I would be able to manage such an important duty~~~~!!’, is what he said while crying.

It is a mission impossible on the level that would bring a bald old man to tears.

If he had hair, by the time he finished serving his time as a Founder, he probably would have had a full head of gray.

“Also, if I am to use my youth effectively, I would like to use it in another way.” (Yorishiro) “?”

Yorishiro stood up from her seat, and...swiftly draws close to me.

“Burning in passion together with my loved one. That’s something that can only be done when still young. Throwing away my position as Founder, a new life in the Underworld Country together with Haine-san. I have to enjoy it to the fullest.” (Yorishiro) I knew your real reason to quit was that!!

“That’s not good, Yorishiro-sama! It would trouble me if you don’t let in the mix!!” (Karen) Is what Karen-san says as she joins in and worsens the mess!

“Of course, Karen-san. You and I are the same existence now, so let’s be loved by Haine-san together, and live our lives here in this Underworld Country!!” (Yorishiro) “So the Underworld Country will become the love nest of us three!! That’s way too lovely!!” (Karen) ...No.

The Underworld Country also has many researchers gathered here burning with inquisitiveness, so let’s properly do our job here as well!

“Ufufu, in time, this Underworld Country will have people coming here. I

would like to make it a great city with science and tourism in mind-desu wa ne.” (Yorishiro) “Mantle-sama has stopped the desertification, so the ‘Nameless Desert’ is slowly but surely growing more green. This land could turn into a residential area overflowing with people!” (Karen) “It really makes one look forward to the future-desu wa ne. Ufufufu.” (Yorishiro) And so, the Light Goddesses were making the future look brighter and brighter by themselves.

Because Karen-san has become one with Ates and turned into the new Light Goddess, as a result, Yorishiro and Karen-san have ended up turning into the same existence.

Thanks to this, their relationship has gotten even better lately.

The triangle relationship we had didn’t create any sparks, instead, they are teaming up and spearheading me.

Well, you could argue that was how it was from the very beginning though.

“Haine-san is the incarnation of the world’s strongest, the Dark God, so making two girls happy should be a piece of cake, right?” (Yorishiro) “Also, we are one existence, so it is a matter of course that we should be loved together, right?” (Karen) That synched offensive of theirs made me want to pass out.

And in that way, I was also included in the investigation team of the Underworld Country, and the place I would be residing till the end of times seemed to be on the verge of being decided here.

The life of Kuromiya Haine from now on.

Being in between two loving women, I will be putting my energy in this historic ruins huh.

“Well, doesn’t sound bad.” (Haine)

“Right-desu wa ne?” (Yorishiro)

“Isn’t that right?” (Karen)

The important two also seem to be having fun so, at any rate, this has become our new home.

- 420: At the center of this world’s border

“Since we have the chance, how about calling Haine-san’s parents here as well?” (Yorishiro) “Hm...but my mother and father are...” (Haine)

My mother has had a weak body since birth, so it would be tough to leave the mountains that she has already gotten used to living in.

I have been going back there three times a year, so I was thinking about continuing that habit though.

“Then, the next time you are to return, bring Karen-san and I too!” (Yorishiro)  
“We want to greet our soon to be mother and father in law!!” (Karen)

Please don’t.

My parents have been living quite the regular life, so please don’t go overturning their common sense with a shocking development at this point.

I want to slowly take my time to tell them about the outrageous conduct of their son.

Right now, let’s take care of one other problem.

“Doraha.” (Haine)

“Yes?” (Doraha)

“Have they arrived already?” (Haine)

“Yeah. Since they would pull attention if they were to come here, I had them wait at a place far from here. If it is okay with you, I can guide you there.”  
(Doraha) “Okay, let’s go.” (Haine)

I don’t care about the bunch, but making guests wait would be a lack of manners.

Before beginning my job as a member of the investigation team, I have to fulfill my duty as the Dark God.

“There’s no need for Doraha to guide him.” (Yorishiro)

Saying this, Yorishiro stands up.

“I will carry that out. Whichever the case, I will have to participate as the Light Goddess as well.” (Yorishiro) “Me too! I will go as well!!” (Karen)

Karen-san too is already a Light Goddess as well, and has her own duty as a God to fulfill.

“And so, Doraha, I will once again be leaving things in your hands while I am absent.” (Yorishiro) “Understood, Yorishiro-sama.” (Doraha)

Doraha accepts without saying a single complaint.

Yorishiro hugs her.

“I will not be making you wait as long as last time. I will return as soon as possible. And then, let’s make the Underworld Country great again, together.” (Yorishiro) \*\*\*

And in this way, we went out to the surface, and flew with our flying machines in the Nameless Desert that has the burning sunlight shining strongly.

The desertification has already been stopped, and the green is slowly returning to it, but natural change will always be a slow one.

This place will turn into an area with plentiful green with time, but it will most likely not be in the time where I can see it with the eyes of Kuromiya Haine.

“That’s why this desert still works as a place to hide things from others.” (Haine) “It is a harsh environment to begin with after all. Without our searching abilities as Gods, we would get lost and dry to death before being able to find that child in this Nameless Desert.” (Yorishiro) And so, with the searching ability of Yorishiro, we managed to find that someone.

Dark Demon Lord, Satan.

The relic that was created by the Demon Lord battle.

“It has been a while~. Have you been doing well?” (Haine)

Satan is different from the other Demon Lords in the fact that it didn’t have generations compiled within him, thus, doesn’t have a will and heart.

It is simply a monster that is especially big.

The Light Demon Lord that Ates created to destroy humanity had been changed into a Dark Demon Lord with me stealing its control rights.

Ates has already disappeared inside Karen-san, so Satan has no reason to

rampage anymore, and since it was too pitiful to kill him, we are leaving him like this.

No, Satan now has an important task, important enough that we wouldn't be able to kill him now.

“He is releasing it at an incredible pace today as well huh.” (Yorishiro)

The dark wings that spread from the back of Satan were mixing with his light wings, and the pure power that was created in the middle of those wings moved to the sky and dispersed.

That's ethereal.

“To think ethereal was created from the friction of the darkness and light.” (Haine) The light power of when he was Lucifer stayed even when he changed, and Satan is currently an incredibly abnormal existence that can use both light and darkness.

“...In the past, I created ethereal to eliminate the influence of the Gods.” (Yorishiro) The creation of shadow that formed by changing light into an artificial darkness; as a byproduct of this process, ethereal was born.

This became a great energy source for human civilization, and served as a foundation for big developments, creating an industrial revolution.

“With the fall of the Underworld Country, which was the source of ethereal, gone, if this were to be left as it is, ethereal would disappear from this world in time.” (Yorishiro) If that were to happen, the human civilization would most likely regress heavily.

That important duty is now being undertaken by Satan.

“Even without a will and heart like that of Michael and the others, Satan is currently a splendid Demon Lord.” (Haine) When I pat that scarily big body of his, Satan shook as if ticklish.

I arbitrarily thought that this was his way of expressing his happiness.

...And so...

“Satan is supposed to be the meeting point but, I don't see those guys anywhere. Are they not here yet?” (Haine) “Doraha-san said they were already

here though..." (Karen)

We moved our attention to the surroundings and then...

...Something came out.

Four different types of divine power.

(Took your sweet time to come, you idiots!)

A cow comes out from the ground as it shook off the sand on him.

It is the cow that we met at Muspelheim, Phalaris. And also the incarnation of the Fire God, Nova.

"...Why are you coming from underground?" (Haine)

Did he finally change jobs from cow to mole?

(Like hell I would wait like an idiot in this crazy hot place! I dug underground and was avoiding the light of the sun!!) (Nova) "Right now, I am a human, so I can't do something beast-like like that."

When I moved my gaze to where another voice came from, I saw Shiva.

The incarnation of the Wind God Quasar.

"I was taking a rest at the oasis that's close to here while I waited. I can just have her tell me when you guys will be coming after all." (Shiva) Shiva was holding a pot.

From within that pot, a single plant was growing from it. At the top of it, a flower bloomed, and from within that flower...

"I am sorry~" (Mantle)

The temporary body 'Fairy' that Mantle uses to appear in the surface world showed up.

"....What are you apologizing for?" (Haine)

This Mother Earth is truly unchanging.

"....With this, all six Gods of Creation are gathered."

And the last one, appearing from mist that came out of nowhere, a monster that has a similar silhouette from that of humans.

“So everyone is here now then?” (Coacervate)

The Water God, Coacervate.

Residing in the body of the Water Saint, Mephistopheles.

Earth, Water, Fire, Wind, Light, and Darkness.

The six Gods that created the world by gathering six elements.

Residing in the body of humans, the body of monsters; each of us were enjoying life in this world we created in the way we wanted.

And now, we are all gathered in one place.

Just that...

“To think you guys would be the ones calling us. Color me surprised.” (Haine)

“No no, we are comrades that helped each other out in creating the world. Isn’t it fine to gather together like this? ....Keh.” (Coacervate) Coacervate, who is probably the one who organized this, said.

He is clever in his own way after all.

“But well, today, we actually have something important to propose to you people. That’s why we asked you to come all the way here. Please lend us an ear here. It would be great if you were to consider this in a serious manner..... keh.” (Coacervate) .....

Uhm, Coacervate-san?

What’s that ‘keh’ you have been doing for a while now with your throat?

“You...has your personality grown a bit wilder?” (Haine)

“Not really. Thanks to everyone, my heart is clean like a mirror.....keh.” (Coacervate) As I thought, he is beginning to pollute.

The Water God, due to his element, easily gets polluted by the impurities of the world, and if left alone, he will end up turning into a contaminated bastard.

We distilled him by burning him with fire like crazy, and yet...

“He is beginning to get contaminated again?” (Haine)

Oi oi, he was distilled only four years ago, you know?

According to the testimonies of the other Gods, it took at least a hundred years for him to return to being contaminated after his distillation.

“The amount of impurities in the past and now are different after all.”  
(Yorishiro) Yorishiro says with a tone as if saying ‘what a pain’.

“This looks like we have to purify him again soon. It would be a pain if you were to turn back to a polluted bastard and cause problems to humanity again.”  
(Haine) “The reason why we called you guys here is also related to this.” (Shiva)

Having the polluting Coacervate step back, Shiva takes his place.

From within the Four Base Elements, this guy really is the one that’s the easiest to talk to.

“What’s with all the formality? If you wanted to talk about something, wouldn’t it have been fine to talk about it when we visited Rudras Metropolis?”  
(Haine) “Can’t do that. This is a consensus from all of us four Base Elements. We want the permission of you two as the two Poles of the Gods of Creation.”  
(Shiva) Shiva leaves a pause.

The other three Base Element Gods lineup, and after a glance at them, Shiva speaks with a grave tone.

“We plan on leaving this world.” (Shiva)

# WR-Chapter 421-422: Wonderful World

“You are going to leave this world?” (Haine)

The sudden declaration of the four Base Elements had surprised me so much, I had to say it again.

“Why so suddenly? Why are you saying that?” (Haine)

“That’s right!” (Karen)

The newbie as a God -Karen-also raised her tone with a trembling voice.

“Every one of you guys have a variety of grudges towards each other. I am also aware of this. But after overcoming the trials and tribulations until now, humans and Gods should have been able to reconcile, right?!” (Karen)

At the far past, at the beginning of the world, Gods could only see humans as slaves that should obey them.

Aside from me.

But after a long long passing of time, humans have grown, developed, and that greatness has begun to be acknowledged by even the Gods.

The Gods that had looked down on the humans all the time are now accepting the humans.

“From now on, humans and Gods can finally advance together in a normal relationship. And yet, Gods are disappearing and leaving humans?!” (Karen)

“It is the contrary, new Light Goddess.” (Quasar)

Shiva...no, the Wind God Quasar spoke.

“Humans have grown in a strong and splendid manner. That’s why humans don’t need Gods anymore.” (Quasar)

“In reality, we should have done this sooner. The role of us Gods is to create a

world, and the moment we did that, our role was over.....keh." (Coacervate)

(Slovenly living our time in a world where we have nothing to do; we Gods are simply troublemakers for the true protagonists of this world, the humans.) (Nova)

"I think so as well~" (Mantle)

The four Base Elements were all giving their own opinions.

"The humans already have enough strength to stand on their own two feet. The Demon Lord battle was the best example of it." (Quasar)

"Humans bursted right through it and managed to overcome that battle splendidly. There was no need for us Gods to protect you, or save you.....keh." (Coacervate)

As if Karen-san couldn't take it anymore, she intervened.

"But that was because you Gods provided us with the strength of a God Hero —!" (Karen)

(It doesn't change the fact that you guys were the ones who personally fought.) (Nova)

That's right. That was clearly the victory of humans.

For us Gods who created humans and believed in them, there's no better pride.

"That's why we are going to stop any extra interference, and decided on leaving the world. Before I incarnated to this body of Shiva, I have been living as a human many times, and each time I did, I was able to experience something new that I didn't experience before." (Quasar)

Quasar smiles.

"But it is time to put an end to it. I will be separating from always being in the care of a linked body and also the people of the Wind nation. They have to continue forward on their own strength. Looking at the child I had with Juo, I think about this more and more." (Quasar)

"After leaving this world..." (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro joins.

As one of the highest within the Gods, she is in a standing that allows her to decide.

“What do you plan on doing?” (Yorishiro)

(Right, that’s what it is.) (Nova)

Nova says with rough breathing from his cow body.

(How about creating a new world?) (Nova)

A new world?

“The role of us Gods is to create worlds to begin with. You could say the people here have developed and this world is a great success. With that success in mind, how about challenging for the next one? Is what we are thinking...keh.” (Coacervate)

“I also think that~.” (Mantle)

Mantle is adding agreement here and there as it goes.

“But in the end, we four Base Elements can’t create worlds with just us. The foundation of the world -time and space-can only be created by the Light and Darkness Gods.” (Quasar)

(And so, how about leaving this world together with us and creating a new world?) (Nova)

“We have a lot of past grudges between us, but how about letting it be water under the bridge?...Keh.” (Coacervate)

“I think so too~.” (Mantle)

I was bewildered by this, and so, I looked at Yorishiro and Karen-san.

Their eyes had no hesitation.

“...Right. We are not the ones who have the answer.” (Haine)

The one who has the answer is this world itself.

This world has developed and evolved. If this world has arrived to the answer of not needing the protection of us Gods anymore...

—We Gods have to accept that.

“Humans believe in Gods; but more than that, Gods believe in humans. That’s what I felt the most in the passing of 1,600 years.” (Haine)

“...But, Haine-san...” (Yorishiro)

Yorishiro pulled my sleeve.

“We are currently not only Gods, but also humans.” (Yorishiro)

“That’s right. Right now, we are Haine-san, Yorishiro-sama, and Karen. We won’t leave this world until we fulfill that role as humans, right?” (Karen)

The two beauties are looking at me with uneasiness in their eyes.

...Of course.

“I will enjoy my life as Kuromiya Haine to the fullest. For us Gods, the whole life of a human is like the blink of an eye. Let’s live it to the utmost!” (Haine)

“Well, yeah. I have no intentions of leaving this world until I watch over Hyue marrying, my child splendidly growing up, and growing old together with Juo!” (Shiva)

(I gotta look after the pro-wrestling enterprise of Mirack for a little bit more.) (Phalaris)

“After we leave, I am thinking of leaving the supervision of things to the Demon Lord-sans. I am sure they will become splendid guardians of the world... keh.” (Coacervate)

“I think so too~.” (Mantle)

Mantle, at least try to say something for yourself at the end.

“Well then, it has been decided.” (Haine)

After living through our life to the fullest, we will aim for the next world.

Just like in this world.

Let’s make another wonderful world.

Karen-san, Mirack, Celestis, Sasae-chan, Hyue; and also the many people we have met until now...

This world is...truly a wonderful world.

- 422: An endless story

After that, even more time passed on.

There's not a single one left in that world that knows about that gathering.

Some had their soul leave their dying bodies, some were given new duties from the Gods as they left the world.

Even with that, the world continues uninterrupted.

The miracle that they had made possible in the past has now turned into a legend and has been passed down by many people.

As Kuromiya Haine, Yorishiro, and Kourin Karen; we who have finished our roles and had come out from our bodies, had now returned to being Gods, and were leaving on a journey to look for a new role.

Now then, next will be...

What kind of world shall we make?

—World Reformation activities of the Dark God, The End

# WR – Afterword of author and also me

Author Afterword:

World Reformation activities of the Dark God.

With this, we have reached to the end.

Thank you very much everyone who has been accompanying me till this point. I am truly thankful for your reading this story.

This story that had begun in 2016, I have managed to finish writing it in the short period of one year.

This was my first attempt at publishing a story in 'shousetsuka ni narou' <webnovel page>. There were a lot of things I was worried about, but I think it was an important experience.

Gods incarnating as humans, Gods and humans, and also, resolving problems with monsters.

I think I was able to portray the different senses of value that occur between each other that was at times serious and at times funny.

The characters appearing there as well. The protagonist Haine, and of course, the heroines Karen, Yorishiro, Mirack, Celestis, Sasae-chan, and Hyue; many went moving about on their own, and I myself as an author was able to enjoy it as well.

The story of Haine and his group is now over, but I am thinking of putting out a new story in the future.

Well then, to the people that have read this together with me.

Thank you very much!

Let's meet at a new story!

\*\*\*\*\*

## Translator Afterword:

Hey guys, Reigokai here!

Oh boy, so we have finally managed to finish one journey. I am not really sure how to express my feelings right now, but I do have one thing I can say: it was truly fun.

First, I would like to talk about my opinions on this story. I will be blunt here, this was by no means a masterpiece. There was a definite lack of body language descriptions in this story, the political implications that could occur between the many nations, the common populace had low to almost no participation focusing heavily on the main cast, and I could go on for a good while, but you get the idea.

So I say it again, a masterpiece? No. But, an enjoyable story? Heck yeah!

It may not have the most deep political structure, but it sure in hell nailed the main cast and things that surrounded them. The nations had some really defined traits between each other which you could easily tell; the Gods, humans, and even the Demon Lords were filled with personality; how the author handled the Demon Lords was probably my favorite part of the story itself.

Now, I said my favorite part of the story was the Demon Lords. The story in itself was pretty normal to me before they appeared. The characters were quirky and fun, but I felt like the author was going to continue the formula of beat up big monsters for each nation; and then, with the Mother Monsters, he would repeat that formula. But I was pleasantly surprised that he took that and turned it around before they battled them out —they were basically a meal for the Demon Lords. Then, he went a step above and spinned it around. He sanctified the Demon Lords in ways, I am pleased to say, I actually enjoyed how they all changed. Sorry heroes, I like all Demon Lords more (except for Celestis).

Okay okay, I said my favorite part of the story itself is when the Demon Lords appeared. But that's in the narrative view. In terms of the story as a whole, what truly shone the best was definitely the characters. Their personalities were truly defined to a T. There were times where the author didn't properly

specify who it is that was speaking, but I could tell clearly who it was. That's how defined it was. I could probably line out a situation, and easily imagine how every character would react differently from that one situation.

As I said, the character I liked the most is Celestis. She is the one who takes the cake, and she would probably eat it in front of me with a wide grin. She reminds me of Aqua from Konosuba, but with a bigger brain. Her witty funny comments poking fun at tropes is what I loved the most, and also the quirkiness of the water nation she showed was simply the best.

A close second would definitely be Michael. His battle was most likely the battle that heated me up the most in this story. It was a true show of humans working together to defeat one big threat. And it ended with one of the things I like the most: a raw fist fight. And the end was the cherry on the top, when he said: 'Let there be hot-bloodedness', as he left. I have to admit, that one hit me greatly in both awesomeness and how much he had grown from that battle. At that moment, we all knew how the author would handle the Demon Lords, and I had a good smile when I learned that. ——My only gripe with Michael is that I was totally shipping him with Mirack. Come on author! This was supposed to be humans and demons coexisting! Make babies! I don't care what anyone says, I believe that in that blank space of time, they both married and lived happily ever after with their pet cow!

### *Cough*

Anyways, let me address the true driving force that pushed me to continue this story when it was clearly not popular for many who were most likely coming from a heavy political and moral conflicting story like Tsuki. The readers that actually stayed with me through the whole journey.

Just reading how you guys reacted to the story as it went on and knowing that you were all staying for reasons similar to mine truly made me happy.

Let's be honest, we all knew the faults of the story, but I am sure you all managed to overlook those flaws and say 'hell, this is a story, and I enjoy it for what it is!'. No nitpicking there.

I have to say, I am truly thankful for that.

It let me enjoy the story fully knowing there were others who enjoyed the

journey together with me.

As you guys can already tell, it was a joy to translate this story and share it.

This story may have ended already, and with Tsuki only having a few extras remaining, it is obvious what comes next.

This is an end and also a beginning, but I digress. This is a World Reformation afterword after all.

I would like to say one last thanks to everyone who stuck to this journey together with me and shared their joys and displeasures in it.

Thank you very much!

Let's meet at the next world!